

# Table of Contents

<b><u>Chapter Titles</u></b>	<b><u>Page #</u></b>
1. Notes on Revelation 13	3
2. Church and State in Revelation 13: The Background of Daniel 2	5
3. Lessons from the Jewish Harlot of Christ's Day	9
4. Notes on Revelation 12	27
5. Comments on Revelation 13:1-10	57
6. Revelation's Land Beast	85
7. The Image of and to The Beast	123
8. The Number of the Beast: 666	183
9. The Beast, His Image and His Number: The Old Testament Background	203
10. The Mark of the Beast	213
11. The Seal of the Living God	223
12. Changing the Ordinance	237
13. A Day to Remember: The Sabbath from Eden to Eden	247
14. Reflections on Daniel 11	269
15. Decoding the Mysteries of Revelation 17	281
16. The Last Link in the Prophetic Chain	301
17. Christ and Antichrist	325
18. Catholics Protestants and Worldlings	345
19. Reflections on the Pope's Agenda	359
Contact Information	385





## **“The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”**

**by Pastor Stephen Bohr**

### **LESSON #1 – NOTES ON REVELATION 13**

#### **The Literary Structure of Revelation 13**

**Past** (Revelation 13:1-3a): **Description** of the **beast** (John **sees** the beast).

**Future** (Revelation 13:3b, 4): The wound is healed and the whole world **worships** the beast.

**Past** (Revelation 13:5-7): **Actions** of the **beast** amplified (John **hears** the actions of the beast).

**Future** (Revelation 13:8): The whole world will **worship** the beast when the wound is healed.

**Past** Revelation 13:9-10: Past: The deadly **wound is given**.

**Future** (Revelation 13:11-18): The whole **world will worship** (Revelation 13:15—worship is the issue) the first beast by command of the second beast.

#### **The Old Testament Backgrounds**

There are **hints** in Revelation 13 that come from **four** Old Testament backgrounds. These hints should lead us to study the Old Testament stories in their totality. Revelation 13 is not merely making a **homiletical use** of a few details from these Old Testament stories but rather is telling us that they will be **repeated on a grander global scale** in the future. This is the law of type and antitype.

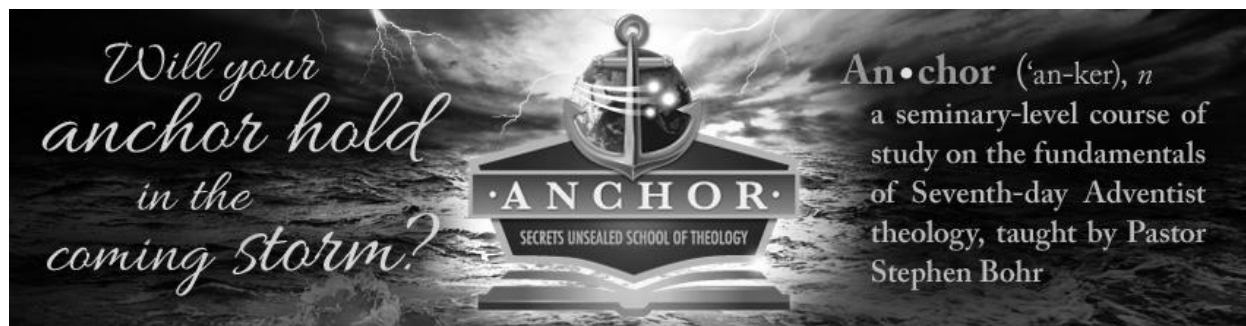
- The beasts of **Daniel 7** (Revelation 13:2).
- The story of the **exodus** of Israel from Egypt (the song of Moses and the Lamb in chapter 15:2-4).
- The **Elijah** story (fire that comes down from heaven in chapter 13:13).
- **Daniel 3** (Nebuchadnezzar and his image).

## **The Parties and Issues Involved in Revelation 13**

- The **dragon** (The Roman Empire that gave its authority to the beast, 13:2; cf. Daniel 7:25 with Revelation 12:6, 13-15)
- The **first (sea) beast** that received the deadly wound with the sword
- The **second (land) beast** that helps the deadly wound to heal
- The **image** that is erected by the land beast in honor to and in the presence of the sea beast
- The **earth dwellers** who worship the beast and his image
- The **victorious Remnant** that have the seal of God (Revelation 14:1-5; 15:2-4).
- The **mark of the beast** which is opposite of the seal of God (Revelation 13:18; 14:1).
- The **number** of the beast's name

## **Links between Revelation 13, 14 and 15**

There is a very close link between Revelation 13, 14 and 15. We know this because Revelation 13 **introduces** the beast, his image, his mark and the number of his name (Revelation 13:11-18). Revelation 14 **warns** against the beast, the image, the mark and the number of his name (Revelation 14:9-11) and Revelation 15:2-4 refers to a group that has gained the **victory** over the beast, his image, his mark and the number of his name.



## **“The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”**

by Pastor Stephen Bohr

# **LESSON #2 – CHURCH AND STATE IN REVELATION 13: THE BACKGROUND OF DANIEL 2**

### **The Feet of Iron and Clay**

#### **Daniel 2:41, 42:**

*“Whereas you saw the feet and toes, partly of potter's clay and partly of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; yet the strength of the iron shall be in it, just as you saw the iron mixed with ceramic clay. And as the toes of the feet were partly of iron and partly of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong and partly fragile.”*

- The iron of the legs existed before the iron in the feet.
- The iron of the legs then continues in the feet of the image but in an amalgamated state. This means that the civil power of the Roman Empire continues in the foot stage.
- A new element is added to the iron in the foot stage and as a result there is an unusual and illegitimate amalgamation.
- The clay is of a particular type—potter's clay.
- Iron and clay, when they are by themselves, are both useful and have a legitimate function. It is only when they are mingled that both are weakened.
- Thus the church and the state have their legitimate place and function but when they are mingled, the church becomes apostate and the state is corrupted. This is what the Bible refers to as ‘fornication’ in Revelation 17:1, 2. The church must be married only to Christ but when it ‘marries’ the state it becomes a harlot.

The clay is weak and the iron is strong. What is the meaning of the ‘strong iron’?

*"Finding herself [the papacy] destitute of the power of love, she has reached out for the **strong arm of the state** to enforce her dogmas and execute her decrees. Here is the secret of all religious laws that have ever been enacted, and the **secret of all persecution** from the days of Abel to our own time" MB, p. 126.*

According to **Daniel 7:7** it is the power of Imperial Rome that is **exceedingly strong**. So it is the state aspect that is strong.

Ellen White calls this strong aspect of Rome '**the Roman element**':

*"We shall soon see and shall feel what the purpose of the **Roman element [the other element would be the clay]** is. Whoever shall believe and obey the word of God will thereby incur reproach and persecution." GC, p. 581*

Every detail in Daniel 2 is of a **symbolic nature**. The gold, silver, bronze, iron, stone and mountain are all symbolic and therefore the potter's clay must also have a symbolic value.

### **What does the Potter's Clay Represent?**

This helpful statement from Ellen White provides an important clue:

*"**We have come to a time** when God's sacred work is represented by the feet of the image in which the iron was mixed with the miry clay. God has a people, a chosen people, whose discernment must be sanctified, who must not become unholy by laying upon the foundation wood, hay, and stubble. Every soul who is loyal to the commandments of God will see that the distinguishing feature of our faith is the seventh-day Sabbath. If the government would honor the Sabbath as God has commanded, it would stand in the strength of God and in defense of the faith once delivered to the saints. But **statesmen** will uphold the spurious sabbath, and will **mingle** their religious faith with the observance of this child of the papacy, placing it above the Sabbath which the Lord has sanctified and blessed, setting it apart for man to keep holy, as a sign between Him and His people to a thousand generations. The **iron and the clay represent the mingling of churchcraft and statecraft**. This **union** is weakening all the power of the churches. This investing the **church with the power of the state** will bring evil results. Men have almost passed the point of God's forbearance. They have invested their **strength in politics**, and have united with the papacy. But the time will come when God will punish those who have made void His law, and their evil work will recoil upon themselves" Manuscript 63, 1899. 4BC, p. 1168*

**Jeremiah 18:1-6** explains that the clay represents God's **Old Testament people**, Israel (remember that God has **only one true church** that spans both Testaments; Revelation 12:1, 6):

*"The word which came to Jeremiah from the Lord, saying: "Arise and go down to the **potter's** house, and there I will cause you to hear My words." Then I went down to the **potter's** house, and there he was, making something at the wheel. And the vessel that he made of **clay** was marred in the hand of the **potter**: so he made it again into another vessel, as it seemed good to the **potter** to make. Then the word of the Lord came to me, saying: "O house of Israel, can I not do **with you** as this **potter**?" says the Lord. "Look, as the **clay** is in the **potter's hand**, **so are you** in My hand, O **house of Israel!**"*

**Genesis 2:7** (cf. **Isaiah 64:8**): When God created the physical body of man he made it out of **potter's clay**. The body was perfect with all of its members but was lifeless. God breathed **the spirit** into the body and then all of the organs and members began to fulfill their **particular function**:

*"And the Lord God formed man of the **dust of the ground**, and breathed into his nostrils the **breath of life**; and man became a living being."*

*"But now, O Lord, You are our Father; **we are the clay**, and You our **potter**; and all we are the work of Your hand."*

**Colossians 1:18**: Symbolically speaking, the **Church is the body of Christ**. As the physical body is composed of physical clay, so Christ's spiritual body is composed of spiritual clay:

*"And He is the head of the body, **the church**, Who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead, that in all things He may have the preeminence."*

**Acts 2:1** informs us that ten days before Pentecost, the members of the body of Christ came together **as one**:

*"When the Day of Pentecost had fully come, they were all with **one accord** in one place."*

**Acts 2:2-4**: God then breathed the **Holy Spirit into the body** (see also, John 22:22, 23)

*"And suddenly there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled the whole house where they were sitting. Then there appeared to them divided tongues, as of fire, and one sat upon each of them. And they were **all filled with the Holy Spirit** and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance."*

**I Corinthians 12:7-13**: Now all the **members** of the body **began to function** in perfect harmony with the head and each fulfilled its particular function

*"But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to each one for the profit of all: for to one is given the word of wisdom through the Spirit, to another the word of knowledge through the same Spirit, to another faith by the same Spirit, to another gifts of healings by the same Spirit, to*

another the working of miracles, to another prophecy, to another discerning of spirits, to another different kinds of tongues, to another the interpretation of tongues. But one and **the same Spirit** works all these things, distributing to each one individually as He wills. For as **the body** is one and has many members, but all the members of that **one body**, being many, are **one body**, so also is Christ. For by **one Spirit** we were all baptized into **one body** — whether Jews or Greeks, whether slaves or free — and have all been made to drink into one Spirit.”

**Ezekiel 37:10, 11**: The **nation of Israel** is compared to a valley of **dry bones**. After the Babylonian Captivity God promised to bring the members of the body together, and put his Spirit within:

“So I prophesied as He commanded me, and breath came into them, and they lived, and stood upon their feet, an exceedingly great army. Then He said to me, “Son of man, **these bones are the whole house of Israel**. They indeed say: ‘Our bones are dry, our hope is lost, and we ourselves are cut off!’ [Because of the Babylonian captivity]

**Revelation 17:1, 2** describes the same **mixture of Church and state** but uses different symbolism. Instead of referring to the mixture of iron and clay it refers to a fornicating relationship between the apostate **harlot Church** and the **kings of the earth**:

“Then one of the seven angels who had the seven bowls came and talked with me, saying to me, ‘Come, I will show you the judgment of the **great harlot** who sits on many waters, with whom **the kings** of the earth **committed fornication**, and the inhabitants of the earth were made drunk with the wine of her fornication.’”

**Revelation 18:1-3**: We have the **same scenario** where the harlot church fornicates with the kings of the earth:

“After these things I saw another angel coming down from heaven, having great authority, and the earth was illuminated with his glory. And he cried mightily with a loud voice, saying: “Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and has become a dwelling place of demons, a prison for every foul spirit, and a cage for every unclean and hated bird! For all the nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, **the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her**, and the merchants of the earth have become rich through the abundance of her luxury.”





## **“The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”**

**by Pastor Stephen Bohr**

# **LESSON #3 – LESSONS FROM THE JEWISH HARLOT OF CHRIST’S DAY**

## **Introduction**

*“It was by departure from the Lord, and alliance with the heathen, that the Jewish church became a harlot; and Rome, corrupting herself in like manner by seeking the support of worldly powers, receives a like condemnation.” GC, p. 382*

*“There is a striking similarity between the Church of Rome and the Jewish Church at the time of Christ's first advent. While the Jews secretly trampled upon every principle of the law of God, they were outwardly rigorous in the observance of its precepts, loading it down with exactions and traditions that made obedience painful and burdensome. As the Jews professed to revere the law, so do Romanists claim to reverence the cross. They exalt the symbol of Christ's sufferings, while in their lives they deny Him whom it represents.” GC, p. 568*

*“Whenever the church has obtained secular power, she has employed it to punish dissent from her doctrines. Protestant churches that have followed in the steps of Rome by forming alliance with worldly powers have manifested a similar desire to restrict liberty of conscience. The Church of England gives an example of this in the long-continued persecution of dissenters. During the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, thousands of nonconformist ministers were forced to flee from their churches, and many, both of pastors and people, were subjected to fine, imprisonment, torture, and martyrdom. It was apostasy that led the early church to seek the aid of the civil government, and this prepared the way for the development of the papacy--the beast.” GC, p. 443*

## **Jesus’ View of Church and State**

**Matthew 22:15-21**: Jesus recognized the legitimate separate co-existence of two kingdoms:

*"Then the Pharisees went and plotted how they might entangle Him in His talk. And they sent to Him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, "Teacher, we know that You are true, and teach the way of God in truth; nor do You care about anyone, for You do not regard the person of men. Tell us, therefore, what do You think? Is it lawful to pay taxes to Caesar, or not?" But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, "Why do you test Me, you hypocrites? Show Me the tax money." So they brought Him a denarius. And He said to them, "Whose image and inscription is this?" They said to Him, "Caesar's." And He said to them, "Render therefore to **Caesar** the things that are **Caesar's**, and to **God** the things that are **God's**."*

## **What do we owe to Caesar and what do we owe to God?**

The Ten Commandments were written on **two tables** of stone. The first table describes our **vertical** duty toward God and the second describes **horizontal** duty toward our fellow human beings

**Deuteronomy 4:13:** The Ten Commandments were written on **two tables of stone:**

*"So He declared to you His covenant which He commanded you to perform, the Ten Commandments; and He wrote them on **two tablets** of stone."*

**Deuteronomy 6:4, 5:** Our first duty is vertical **toward God:**

*"Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God, the Lord is one! You shall **love the Lord your God** with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your strength."*

**Leviticus 19:18:** Our second duty is horizontal toward our **fellow human beings:**

*"You shall not take vengeance, nor bear any grudge against the children of your people, but you shall **love your neighbor** as yourself: I am the Lord."*

**Matthew 22:34-40:** Christ described the **two duties:**

*"But when the Pharisees heard that He had silenced the Sadducees, they gathered together. Then one of them, a lawyer, asked Him a question, testing Him, and saying, "Teacher, which is the **great commandment** in the law?" Jesus said to him, "'You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.' This is the **first and great commandment**. And the **second is like it:** 'You shall love your neighbor as yourself.' On these **two commandments** hang all the Law and the Prophets."*

## **Jesus and the Two Tables**

The **accusations** of the Jewish leaders against Jesus had **nothing to do** with the **last six** commandments. We never find them accusing Him of dishonoring his parents, killing, adultery, theft, bearing false witness against His neighbor or covetousness. All the

accusations that were leveled against Jesus had to do with the **first table of the Law**. Jesus was an **exemplary citizen** who never violated the civil laws of the Roman Empire.

**The first commandment:**

**Mark 2:7:**

*"Why does this Man speak blasphemies like this? Who can forgive sins but **God alone?**"*

**John 10:33:**

*"The Jews answered Him, saying, "For a good work we do not stone You, but for blasphemy, and because You, being a Man, **make Yourself God.**"*

**The third commandment:**

**John 8:58, 59:**

*"Jesus said to them, "Most assuredly, I say to you, before Abraham was, **I AM.**" Then **they took up stones** to throw at Him; but Jesus hid Himself and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by."*

**The fourth commandment:**

**John 9:16:**

*"Therefore some of the Pharisees said, "This Man is not from God, because He **does not keep the Sabbath.**"*

**John 5:16, 18:**

*"For this reason the Jews persecuted Jesus, and sought to kill Him, because He had done these things on the Sabbath. But Jesus answered them, "My Father has been working until now, and I have been working." Therefore the Jews sought all the more to kill Him, because He not only **broke the Sabbath,** but also said that God was His Father, making Himself **equal with God.**"*

Jesus remained **aloof from the civil power.** He did not come to establish a temporal kingdom but rather to implant the principles of God's kingdom **in the heart.**

## **The Jewish Nation Wanted Jesus to take over the Kingdom of Civil Power**

### **Matthew 4:10:**

*“Again, the devil took Him up on an exceedingly high mountain, and showed Him **all the kingdoms of the world** and their glory. And he said to Him, “All these things I will give You if You will fall down and worship me.”*

### **John 6:15:**

*“Therefore when Jesus perceived that they were about to come and take Him by force to **make Him king**, He departed again to the mountain by Himself alone.”*

### **Luke 9:55, 56:**

*“But He turned and rebuked them, and said, “You do not know **what manner of spirit you are of**. For the Son of Man did not come to destroy men's lives but to save them.” And they went to another village.”*

According to Jesus, the Kingdom of God must be implanted **within** before its principles can be **seen without**. In this sense the kingdom works **like leaven** from the inside out. Jesus represented the kingdom of God, not the kingdom of men.

## **Kingdom in the Heart**

### **Luke 17:20, 21:**

*“Now when He was asked by the Pharisees when the **kingdom of God** would come, He answered them and said, “The kingdom of God does not come with **observation [external display of power]**; nor will they say: ‘See here!’ or ‘See there!’ For indeed, the kingdom of God is **within** you.”*

Notice this powerful statement by Ellen G. White:

*“The kingdom of God comes not with **outward show**. The gospel of the grace of God, with its spirit of self-abnegation, can never be in harmony with the spirit of the world. The two principles are antagonistic. “The natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned” 1 Corinthians 2:14.*

*But today in the religious world there are multitudes who, as they believe, are working for the establishment of the kingdom of Christ as an **earthly and temporal dominion**. They desire to make our Lord the ruler of the **kingdoms of this world**, the ruler in its courts and camps, its*

legislative halls, its palaces and market places. They expect Him to rule **through legal enactments**, enforced by human authority. Since Christ is not now here in person, they themselves will undertake to act in His stead, to **execute the laws of His kingdom**. The establishment of such a kingdom is what the Jews desired in the days of Christ. They would have received Jesus, **had He been willing to establish a temporal dominion**, to enforce what they regarded as the laws of God, and to make them the expositors of His will and the agents of His authority. But He said, "My kingdom is not of this world" John 18:36. He would not accept the earthly throne.

The government under which Jesus lived was corrupt and oppressive; on every hand were crying abuse—extortion, intolerance, and grinding cruelty. Yet the Savior attempted **no civil reforms**. He attacked no national abuses, nor condemned the national enemies. He **did not interfere** with the authority or administration of those in power. He who was our example kept **aloof from earthly governments**. Not because He was indifferent to the woes of men, but because the remedy did not lie in merely **human and external** measures. To be efficient, the cure must reach men individually, and must **regenerate the heart**.

Not by the decisions of courts or councils or legislative assemblies, not by the patronage of worldly great men, is the **kingdom of Christ established**, but by the **implanting** of Christ's nature in humanity through the work of the Holy Spirit. "As many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His name: which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God" John 1:12, 13. Here is the only power that can work the uplifting of mankind. And the human agency for the accomplishment of this work is the **teaching and practicing of the word of God.**" DA 509, 510

## **A Matter of National Security**

After Jesus resurrected Lazarus, the **multitudes** began to follow Him as never before. The Jewish leaders were **losing their popularity and members** and they were **jealous** of Jesus. They feared that their **nation would become irrelevant** because everyone would follow Jesus and the Romans would then take away their nation. In the minds of the Jewish religious leadership solving this problem was a matter of **national security**! The spiritual leaders believed that by killing Jesus they would **save their nation** from ruin when in reality, when they killed Jesus they **caused what they wished to prevent** and brought doom upon their nation. The Romans, which they used to destroy Jesus, later came and destroyed their nation and city!

Shortly after Jesus resurrected Lazarus, the Jewish leadership called a **special meeting of the Sanhedrin** (composed of the great religious scholars, priests and nobility of Judaism) to deal with the growing menace of Jesus:

### **John 11:47-49:**

*"Then the chief priests and the Pharisees gathered a council and said: "What shall we do? For this Man works many signs. If we let Him alone like this, everyone will believe in Him, and the **Romans will come** and take away both our **place and nation**." And one of them, Caiaphas, being high priest that year, said to them, "You know nothing at all, nor do you consider that it is expedient for us that **one man should die** for the people, and not that the **whole nation should perish**."*

The **identical argument** will be used in the name of national security **in the future**:

*"It will be urged that the few who stand in opposition to an institution of the church and a law of the state ought not to be tolerated; that it is better for them to suffer than for **whole nations** to be thrown into confusion and lawlessness. The 'rulers of the people' brought **the same argument** many centuries ago against Christ. 'It is expedient for us,' said the wily Caiaphas, 'that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not' John 11:50. This argument will appear conclusive; and a decree will finally be issued against those who hallow the Sabbath of the fourth commandment, denouncing them as deserving of the severest punishment and giving the people liberty, after a certain time, to put them to death. **Romanism in the Old World** and **apostate Protestantism in the New** will pursue a similar course toward those who honor all the divine precepts." GC 614, 615*

In **verse 53** we are told that the decision of the Sanhedrin was that Jesus should die in order to save the nation.

### **Peter in the Garden**

When the **temple guard** came to arrest Jesus, **Peter** took out the **literal sword** to defend his Master. It is significant that Peter, the spokesman for the disciples of Christ, believed that it was necessary to defend the kingdom of Jesus **with the sword**. Jesus firmly rebuked Peter with words that are very reminiscent of **Revelation 13:10**:

### **Matthew 26:50-52:**

*"And suddenly, one of those who were with Jesus stretched out his hand and **drew his sword**, struck the servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear. But Jesus said to him, "Put your sword in its place, for all who **take the sword will perish by the sword**."*

### **The Religious Inquisition**

From the Garden of Gethsemane Jesus was taken to the **house of Caiaphas** for a **religious inquisition**.

### **Matthew 26:57:**

*“And those who had laid hold of Jesus led Him away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the **scribes and the elders** were assembled.”*

It is noteworthy that Jesus was first brought before a **religious court** for a religious trial. At this point the Roman state has not yet come into play. It is a sobering fact that the **apostate church** of that day and age (not the civil power), a church that **claimed to be God’s true church**, sentenced Jesus to death. A short while later, the civil power of Rome merely became **the sword in the hand** of the apostate church.

### **Matthew 26:59-64:**

*“Now the **chief priests, the elders**, and all the council sought false testimony against Jesus to put Him to death, but found none. Even though many false witnesses came forward, they found none. But at last two false witnesses came forward and said, “This fellow said: ‘I am able to destroy the temple of God and to build it in three days.’” And the high priest arose and said to Him, “Do You answer nothing? What is it these men testify against You?” But Jesus kept silent. And the high priest answered and said to Him: “I put You under oath by the living God: Tell us if You are the Christ, the Son of God!” Jesus said to him, “It is as you said. Nevertheless, I say to you, hereafter you will see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of the Power, and coming on the clouds of heaven.”*

- The **religious trial** of Jesus violated almost every statute of Jewish jurisprudence. This was **no impartial court**. The religious court had already **made up its mind** before the inquisition that it was going to **convict Him**. His due process rights were trampled underfoot:
- The Sanhedrin retained the services of **false witnesses** against Jesus.
- He was **slapped** by the high priest and scourged before he was found guilty.
- He was tried **at night** in **private**.
- He was accused of crimes that did not violate any of the **civil laws of Rome**.
- Ultimately He was condemned by the testimony of **one witness** and was **pressured into incriminating himself**.
- He was given no right to **counsel**.
- Contrary to Jewish law, He was tried on **Friday**. Jewish law forbade a trial to take place on **Fridays, Sabbaths or feast days**.
- Further, Jewish law required at least **three days to pass** between the time when the death sentence was pronounced and when it could be executed.

## Denominational Ecumenism

At the time of Christ Judaism was composed of **several sects**. All these sects **were Jewish** but they had **conflicting doctrines** and disliked one another. For example, the Pharisees believed in life after death and the resurrection. The Sadducees, on the other hand believed in neither. Even though they all represented **different denominations** with variant beliefs, they all **came together** on one point: to destroy public enemy number one who in their mind was a **threat to the security** of the nation. They felt that they had to **come together** to save their nation from ruin but instead, by crucifying Christ, they were guilty of national apostasy that led to national ruin.

It is important to remember that Jesus was found worthy of death by a **religious tribunal**. Those who claimed to be the **people** of God condemned an innocent man to death.

### **Matthew 26:66:**

*"Then the high priest tore his clothes, saying, "He has spoken blasphemy! What further need do we have of witnesses? Look, now you have heard His blasphemy! 66 What do you think?" They answered and said: "**He is deserving of death.**"*

## Jesus taken to Civil Court

But the apostate religious leaders had a serious problem on their hands. The **church could not** execute the death penalty that it had pronounced without the **authorization of the state**. Therefore, after His religious inquisition, the church leaders took Jesus **before Pilate**, the **civil ruler**.

**Matthew 27:1, 2:** The church appeals to the state:

*"When morning came, all the chief priests and elders of the people plotted against Jesus to put Him to death. And when they had bound Him, they led Him away and **delivered Him to Pontius Pilate** the governor."*

**John 18:30:** When the religious leaders brought Jesus before Pilate, he asked them a very **penetrating question**:

*"Pilate then went out to them and said, "**What accusation** do you bring against this Man?"*

The leaders could sense by the **tone of Pilate's voice** that he was not buying the idea that Jesus was a criminal so they said:

*"**If** He were not an evildoer, we would not have delivered Him up to you."*



## Two Kingdoms and Two Laws

The evidence shows that Pilate recognized the existence of **two kingdoms** with **two separate laws** in his realm. He knew that Jesus had not violated **any law of his kingdom** so he told them to judge Jesus according to **their law**:

**John 18:31**: Judge Him according to your law:

*"Then Pilate said to them, "You take Him and judge Him according to **your law**."*

**John 18:31**: It was not lawful for the church to execute the death penalty

The leaders then explained that **as a church** they were not authorized to execute the death penalty without the **approval of the civil power** of Rome. They were requesting the **imprimatur** of Rome to execute the death penalty and thus they used the **civil power** or **sword** of **Rome to slay Jesus**.

*"Therefore the Jews said to him, "It is **not lawful for us** to put anyone to death."*

**Luke 23:2**: The leaders recognized that they could not persuade Pilate to condemn Jesus for His religious convictions unless they could **find some crime** that Jesus had committed **against Rome**. In order to accomplish this purpose, they resorted to open and **boldfaced prevarication**. They leveled **three accusations** against Jesus:

*"And they began to accuse Him, saying, "We found this fellow [1] **perverting** the nation and [2] **forbidding to pay taxes** to Caesar, saying that He [3] **Himself is Christ, a King**."*

Pilate knew that Jesus was **not perverting** the nation and perhaps he knew that Jesus was **not a tax evader**. But when Pilate heard that Jesus claimed to be a king he called Jesus into his **private chambers** to question him about this accusation. If Jesus claimed to be a king He would be guilty of the crime of **sedition against the Roman Empire**.

Pilate asked Jesus if He was really a king. In His answer, Jesus clearly revealed that He believed in the existence of **two separable kingdoms** within the Roman Empire. But Jesus laid Pilate's concern to rest by stating that His kingdom was **not of this world**. In fact, He affirmed that if His kingdom were of this world His disciples would **use their swords** to establish and defend it:

**John 18:36**:

*"Jesus answered, "My kingdom is **not of this world**. If My kingdom were of this world, My servants would fight, so that I should not be delivered to the Jews; but now My kingdom is **not from here**."*

When Pilate had interviewed Jesus his concerns were **laid to rest**. He realized that Jesus was some **other kind** of king and that Jesus did not represent any danger to Rome. If Pilate had thought that Jesus aspired to the political throne he would have **instantly condemned** Jesus for sedition against the Roman government:

**John 18:37:**

*"Pilate therefore said to Him, "Are You a king then?" Jesus answered, "**You say rightly** that I am a king. For this cause I was born and for this cause I have come into the world, that I should **bear witness to the truth**. Everyone who is of the truth hears My voice."*

**Pilate's Verdict: Not Guilty**

**Three times** Pilate went before the infuriated crowd to publicly announce that he could **find no fault** in Jesus:

**John 18:38:**

*"Pilate said to Him, "What is truth?" And when he had said this, he went out again to the Jews, and said to them: "**I find no fault in Him at all**."*

**John 19:4:**

*"Pilate then went out again, and said to them, "Behold, I am bringing Him out to you, that you may know that I **find no fault in Him**."*

**John 19:6:**

*"Therefore, when the chief priests and officers saw Him, they cried out, saying, "Crucify Him, crucify Him!" Pilate said to them, "You take Him and crucify Him, for **I find no fault in Him**."*

In the mind of the religious leaders Jesus had **violated the first table of the Law** but Pilate wanted **nothing to do** with this table. Even the **Jewish leaders** admitted that Pilate had his law and they had theirs:

**John 19:7:**

*"The Jews answered him: "**We have a law**, and according to **our law** He ought to die, because He made Himself the Son of God."*

The **same argument** will be used against God's people at the end of time:

*"Those who live during the last days of this earth's history will know what it means to be persecuted **for the truth's sake**. In the courts injustice will prevail. The judges will refuse to listen to the reasons of those who are loyal to the commandments of God because they know*

*the arguments in favor of the fourth commandment are unanswerable. They will say, "**We have a law**, and by our law he ought to die." God's law is nothing to them. "Our law" with them is supreme. Those who respect this human law will be favored, but those who will not bow to the **idol sabbath** have no favors shown them." ST May 26, 1898, par. 10*

**John 19:11:** Jesus recognized that Pilate occupied a **legitimate place** as a civil ruler of Rome but He also made it clear that this position had been given to him **from above**:

*"Jesus answered, "You could have no power at all against Me unless it had been given you **from above**, therefore the one who delivered Me to you has the greater sin."*

### **Political Expediency**

We have noticed that Pilate publicly announced three times that he could find no fault in Jesus. Why, then, did he condemn an innocent man to death? There were **two reasons**:

**Matthew 27:24:** First, there was **a tumult brewing** and Pilate did not want to have a riot on his hands:

*"When Pilate saw that he could not prevail at all, but rather that **a tumult was rising**, he took water and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, "I am innocent of the blood of this just Person. You see to it."*

But second, and more significantly, Pilate condemned Jesus because **the religious leaders put political pressure on him** and he was afraid of being removed from his political position. They intimidated him with the thought that if he released Jesus who claimed to be a King, Caesar would remove him from being governor:

**John 19:12:** Fear of losing his **political position**

*"From then on Pilate sought to release Him, but the Jews cried out, saying, "If you let this Man go, you are **not Caesar's friend**. Whoever makes himself a king speaks against Caesar."*

**At the end of time** political leaders will also condemn God's faithful people to secure public favor:

*"The dignitaries of church and state will unite to bribe, persuade, or compel all classes to honor the Sunday. The lack of divine authority will be supplied by oppressive enactments. Political corruption is destroying love of justice and regard for truth; and even in free America, rulers and legislators, **in order to secure public favor**, will **yield** to the popular demand for a law enforcing Sunday observance. Liberty of conscience, which has cost so great a sacrifice, will no longer be respected." GC, p. 592*

## Leaders Influence Members

It was **not primarily the members** who wanted the death of Jesus. Scripture makes it clear that they asked for the blood of Jesus because they were influenced by **their religious leaders**:

### **Matthew 27:20:**

*“But the **chief priests and elders** persuaded the multitudes that they should ask for Barabbas and destroy Jesus.”*

**Ellen White** makes this perceptive remark:

*“Legions of evil angels controlled the **priests and rulers**, and gave voice to the suggestions of Satan in persuading and tempting **the people** by falsehoods and bribes to reject the Son of God, and to choose a robber and murderer in his stead.” Review and Herald, April 14, 1896*

## High Treason and Fornication

The climax of the trial of Jesus was when Pilate brought out **Jesus and Barabbas** and put them side-by-side before the mob and then asked which of them should be released. The Jewish leaders by their answer committed **high treason** against God:

### **John 19:13-15:**

*“When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Jesus out and sat down in the judgment seat in a place that is called The Pavement, but in Hebrew, Gabbatha. 14 Now it was the Preparation Day of the Passover, and about the sixth hour. And he said to the Jews, “**Behold your King!**” 15 But they cried out, “Away with Him, away with Him! Crucify Him!” Pilate said to them, “Shall I crucify your King?” The chief priests answered: “**We have no king but Caesar!**”*

Thus when Israel claimed **Caesar as their king** they rejected Jesus, the King of kings! By **fornicating** with the Roman state they rejected their husband and played the harlot.

It is clear in the Gospels that Jesus wanted to be Israel’s **only husband**. All sorts of **marriage metaphors** are used in the **Gospels** to describe the relationship that **Jesus wanted to have** with His people.

- **John the Baptist**, who came to prepare the way for the marriage of Jesus with His people, is called the friend of the bridegroom (**John 3:29**).
- Jesus asked how the children could fast while the **bridegroom was in their midst** (**Mark 2:19, 20**).

- Jesus told the parable of the **ten virgins** (**Matthew 25:1-10**) which in its first instance applied to the Jews.
- And Jesus narrated the parable of the **wedding feast** where the Jews slighted the invitation to the wedding (**Matthew 22:1-14**).

Clearly, Jesus was the bridegroom who was **wooing His people** to fall in love with Him and marry Him but they chose to marry the civil power instead.

By choosing Caesar over Christ, the Jewish nation was spiritually **fornicating with the civil power**. They forsook their husband and chose Caesar instead. This is exactly what Old Testament Israel had done repeatedly. But this time there was a **certain finality** to their spiritual adultery as can be seen in the parable of the **vineyard workers** (Matthew 21:33-43) and the **fig tree** (Matthew 21:19).

### **Apostasy and National Ruin**

The religious leaders thought that by destroying Christ they would **save their nation** but by crucifying Christ, they caused what they wished to prevent. The **very Romans** that they had used to crucify Christ came and destroyed their city and took away their nation. In other words, national apostasy led to national ruin.

Something similar will occur when the kings of the earth who have fornicated with the Roman Catholic papacy will hate her and rise to destroy her (Revelation 17:16):

#### **Luke 19:41-44:**

*"Now as He drew near, He saw the city and wept over it, saying, "If you had known, even you, especially in this your day, the things that make for your peace! But now they are hidden from your eyes. For days will come upon you when **your enemies** will build an embankment around you, surround you and close you in on every side, and **level you**, and your children within you, **to the ground**; and they will not leave in you one stone upon another, because **you did not know the time of your visitation.**"*

The same will occur at the end of time. Protestant churches will think that by joining the state they will save the nation but the contrary will occur. National apostasy will lead to national ruin:

*"With rapid steps we are approaching this period. When Protestant churches shall **unite with the secular power** to sustain a false religion, for opposing which their ancestors endured the fiercest persecution, then will the papal sabbath be enforced by the combined authority of **church and state**. There will be a **national apostasy**, which will end only in **national ruin**"*  
 Manuscript 51, 1899. *Evangelism*, p. 235

## The Church after Pentecost

The **book of Acts** indicates that Jesus sent the disciples to preach the gospel and to baptize those who repented of their sins (Mark 17:17; Matthew 24:14; Acts 1:6-8). In order to accomplish their work, Jesus gave his disciples the **Holy Spirit** so that they **could preach** the Word of God with convicting power. The weapon that Jesus gave His church was the **sword of the Spirit**:

### **Ephesians 6:17:**

*“And take the helmet of salvation, and the **sword of the Spirit**, which is the **word of God**.”*

**Acts 1:8:** The way in which the church uses this sword is by **preaching** the Word of God. Jesus gave no other sword to the church:

*“But you shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you; and you **shall be witnesses** to Me in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the end of the earth.”*

**Matthew 10:34-39:** Notably, Jesus did not give His disciples permission to use the punitive sword of the state to punish those who rejected their message. In fact, Jesus instructed that the punitive sword would not be used **by** the disciples but rather **against them**:

*“Do not think that I came to bring peace on earth. I did not come to bring peace **but a sword**. 35 For I have come to 'set a man against his father, a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law'; 36 and 'a man's enemies will be those of his own household.' 37 He who loves father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me. And he who loves son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me. 38 And he who does not take his cross and follow after Me is not worthy of Me. 39 He who finds his life will lose it, and he who loses his life for My sake will find it.”*

In the book of **Acts** there is not a shred of evidence that the apostles ever used the **civil power of Rome** to **advance** the cause of Christ's kingdom or **punish** those who were not in harmony with it. In fact, the disciples were constantly persecuted by the **rulers of Rome** by **instigation of the Jews** (see Acts 9:23; 13:45, 50; 14:2; 16:20, 21; 17:6, 7, 13; 18:12-15; 20:3, 19; Acts 21:27; Acts 23:12; Acts 24:1-10; Acts 25:2, 3, 9, 10, 15, 16; Acts 26: 2, 3; 26:21; Acts 28:18, 19)

Let's notice just **one example** from the long list of references above:

### **Acts 12:1-3:**

*“Now about that time **Herod the king** stretched out his hand to **harass some from the church**. Then he killed James the brother of John **with the sword** and because he saw that it*

**pleased the Jews**, he proceeded further to seize Peter also. Now it was during the Days of Unleavened Bread.”

According to the unanimous testimony of the book of Acts, the **apostate Jewish church** constantly used the **Roman magistrates to jail, whip and kill** the followers of Jesus. **Never** in any book of the New Testament do we find any hint of the followers of Jesus using the civil power to fulfill the mission of Jesus. The church used only the sword that Jesus had given her, the **Sword of the Spirit**

### **The Civil Sword of the State**

There is **another sword** that is mentioned in the New Testament. This sword does not belong to the church but rather **to the state**. God established the **civil order** and gave it a sword to punish violators of civil law. This sword can legitimately be used by the civil power to punish violations of the second table of the law. In other words, the **state uses this sword** (by imprisonment, confiscation of goods, fines and the death penalty) to protect and preserve the civil order of society. The apostle Paul referred to this sword in **Romans 13:1-10**:

*“Let every soul be subject to the **governing authorities**. For there is no authority except from God, and God appoints the authorities that exist. Therefore whoever resists the **authority** resists the ordinance of God, and those who resist will bring judgment on themselves for **rulers** are not a terror to good works, but to evil. Do you want to be unafraid of the **authority**? Do what is good, and you will have praise from the same. For he is God's minister to you for good. But if you do evil, be afraid; for he does not bear **the sword** in vain; for he is God's minister, an avenger to execute wrath on him who **practices evil**, therefore you must be subject, not only because of wrath but also for conscience' sake. For because of this you also **pay taxes**, for they are God's ministers attending continually to this very thing. **Render** therefore to all their due: **taxes** to whom taxes are due, **customs** to whom customs, fear to whom fear, honor to whom honor.” Owe no one anything except to love one another, for he who loves another has fulfilled the law. For the commandments, “You shall not commit adultery,” “You shall not murder,” “You shall not steal,” “You shall not bear false witness,” “You shall not covet,” and if there is any other commandment, are all summed up in this saying, namely, “You shall love your neighbor as yourself.” Love does no harm to a neighbor therefore love is the fulfillment of the law.”*

### **Apostasy Enters the Church**

When the church lost the simplicity of the gospel and the power of the Holy Spirit, **apostasy came in** and as a result the **church merged with the state**. As a result, the **same scenes of the trial and crucifixion** of Jesus were repeated once again in the person of His

saints. This time the apostate papal church persecuted the **followers of Jesus** as the Jews had persecuted Jesus. By persecuting the church they were persecuting Jesus.

### **Lessons from Pilate's Wife**

When Pilate (the civil ruler) was deliberating on whether to deliver Jesus unto death, his wife sent him a message, warning him to have nothing to do with this just man. But Pilate, instead of heeding his wife, because of the **pressure of the people** who in turn were **pressured by the religious leaders** and to save his political position washed his hands and delivered an innocent man to death:

#### **Matthew 27:19:**

*"While he was sitting on the judgment seat, **his wife sent to him**, saying, "Have nothing to do with that just Man, for I have suffered many things today in a dream because of Him."*

#### **Matthew 27:24:**

*"When Pilate saw that he could not prevail at all, but rather that **a tumult was rising**, he took water and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, "I am innocent of the blood of this just Person. You see to it."*

Pilate was **not innocent** of the blood of this man. God had given him a message and he rejected it. The **same call** goes out to the political rulers of the world today. Will they give in to the pressure of the church and condemn God's faithful people to death or will they pay heed to the counsel of Pilate's wife? The decision will be in their hands.

Both Scripture and the Spirit of Prophecy clearly affirm that the history of Jesus will be **repeated again with His body, the church:**

#### **John 16:1-3:**

*"These things I have spoken to you that you should not be made to stumble. They will put you out of the synagogues; yes, the time is coming that whoever kills you will think that **he offers God service**. And these things they will do to you because they have not known the Father nor Me."*

*"The forces of the powers of darkness will unite with human agents who have given themselves unto the control of Satan, and **the same scenes that were exhibited at the trial, rejection and crucifixion of Christ will be revived**. Through yielding to satanic influences men will be merged into fiends, and those who were created in the image of God, who were formed to honor and glorify their Creator, will become the habitation of dragons, and Satan*



will see in an apostate race his **masterpiece of evil**-men who reflect his own image (Manuscript S 39, 1894). 5BC, p. 1136

“He [Satan] will work in as subtle a manner as we near the end of earth's history. All his deceiving power will be brought to bear upon human subjects, to complete the work of deluding the human family. So deceptive will be his working that **men will do as they did in the days of Christ**; and when asked: Whom shall I release unto you, Christ or Barabbas? The **almost universal cry** will be, Barabbas, Barabbas! And when the question is asked, “What will ye then that I shall do unto him whom ye call the King of the Jews?” the cry again will be, “Crucify him!” **Christ will be represented in the person of those who accept the truth**, and who identify their interest with that of their Lord. The world will be enraged at them **in the same way that they were enraged at Christ**, and the Disciples of Christ will know that they are to be treated **no better than was their Lord**. But Christ will surely identify his interest with that of those who accept him as their personal Savior. Every insult, every reproach, every false accusation made against them by those who have turned their ears away from the truth and are turned unto fables, will be charged upon the guilty ones as done to **Christ in the person of his saints**.” RH April 14, 1896

“The agencies of Satan are having their last chance to develop before the world, before angels and men, the true principles of their attributes. The people of God are now to stand **as representatives** of the attributes of the Father and the Son.” RH April 14, 1896





## **“The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”**

**by Pastor Stephen Bohr**

# **LESSON #4 – NOTES ON REVELATION 12**

### **Three Centers of Focus**

- Revelation 12:1-5 amplified in 12:7-12: The **Child**
- Revelation 12:6 amplified in 12:13-16: The **Woman**
- Revelation 12:17 amplified in chapter 13: The **Remnant**

In **Daniel 7 and Revelation 13:1-10** the center of focus is on the **earthly powers** that Satan used to persecute God’s people. But in this chapter we see that the real enemy of God’s people is **Satan**.

There are **three Old Testament contexts** that form the background of this chapter:

- The Gospel promise of **Genesis 3:15**
- The **exodus** of Israel from Egypt
- The story of **Elijah**

### **The Genesis 3:15 Backdrop**

*“And I will put [1] **enmity** between [2] **you [the serpent]** and the [3] **woman** and between your **seed** and her [4] **Seed**; **He** shall bruise your head and you shall bruise **His** heel.”*

Notice the **four elements** of Genesis 3:15:

- Enmity
- Serpent
- Woman
- Two seeds

The primary enmity is between the serpent and the woman's Seed. Then the enmity extends against the woman and finally against the remnant of the woman's Seed.

- Enmity against the woman's Seed
- Enmity against the woman
- Enmity against the remnant of the woman's Seed

## **The Exodus Backdrop**

**Prophecy:** God's Old Testament bride is compared to a **beautiful woman** (Jeremiah 6:2; Jeremiah 31:32). **God married** Israel in the Old Testament. The woman is God's bride and the Father implanted Jesus in the womb of Mary.

**Fulfillment:** Revelation 12:1: God's bride **is the Church**. Jesus was the **Seed of Abraham and David**. Jesus once said that "salvation is of the Jews" (John 4:22, 25). In other words, Jesus was born from the **lineage of the Jewish nation**, that is, from the Old Testament Church.

**Prophecy:** God's people were **crying out in travail** because of the bitter bondage to cruel taskmasters (Exodus 1:13-14; 2:7, 12-14. Israel was **longing for** the birth of a **deliverer** (Exodus 2:23-25). God's people were in bondage in a **strange land**. If they were not delivered, the promise of the Seed **could not be fulfilled**.

**Fulfillment:** When Jesus was about to be born into this world, the whole of humanity was in **bondage to sin** (John 8:32-34; Hebrews 2:14-15). Revelation 12:2 depicts the woman in travail, **longing for a deliverer**.

**Prophecy:** Israel was enslaved by **Pharaoh**, the **great dragon** (Ezekiel 29:3).

**Fulfillment:** God's people were enslaved by the accuser of the brethren, the **great dragon**, the ancient serpent, the **devil and Satan** (Revelation 12:3, 4, 9).

**Prophecy:** A deliverer was born of a woman whose name was **Moses** (Exodus 2:1-2).

**Fulfillment:** A man child was born of the woman (Revelation 12:5; Matthew 2). The woman at this stage represents the **Jewish Church**. Jesus was the seed of Abraham and of David. This means that Jesus was born from the Old Testament Church. For this reason, Jesus said to the Samaritan woman that **salvation is of the Jews** (John 4:22, 25; see also Romans 9:4, 5).

**Prophecy:** Pharaoh fears to **lose his throne** to the deliverer (Exodus 1:22).

**Fulfillment:** **Herod** fears to lose his throne (Matthew 2:13).

**Prophecy:** Pharaoh **kills the infants** in order to get rid of the deliverer but Moses is protected in Egypt (Exodus 1:22).

**Fulfillment:** All the **infants killed** by Herod to get rid of the deliverer (Matthew 2:16).

**Prophecy:** God **called Moses** and Israel out of Egypt (Hosea 11:1).

**Fulfillment:** Jesus was protected in Egypt from where he **was called out** (Matthew 2:15).

**Prophecy:** The **death of the lamb** marks the deliverance (Exodus 12:21-23).

**Fulfillment:** Jesus is presented by John as the **Lamb of God** before his baptism and Paul tells us that Jesus is our Passover (John 1:29; I Corinthians 5:7, 8).

**Prophecy:** Israel was **baptized** in the Red Sea (I Corinthians 10:1-4).

**Fulfillment:** Jesus baptized in the **Jordan River** (Matthew 3:16-17).

**Prophecy:** Moses fasted for **40 days** on the mountain in the wilderness (Exodus 34:28).

**Fulfillment:** Jesus goes into the wilderness and fasts for **forty days** and is taken up on a high mountain (Matthew 4:2).

**Prophecy:** God gave Israel a **law from a mountain** through Moses (Exodus 34:32).

**Fulfillment:** Jesus explains the **law of the kingdom** of His Father in the Sermon on the Mount (Matthew 5:1, 17, 21-22, 28).

**Prophecy:** The **face of Moses** shone on the mountain as he spoke with God (Exodus 34:29-34).

**Fulfillment:** The **face of Jesus** shone upon the Mount of Transfiguration as he heard the voice of God (John 1:14; Matthew 17:1-3). Interestingly, **Moses was present** on the Mount.

**Prophecy:** **Moses intercedes** for his people offering his own life (Exodus 32:30-32).

**Fulfillment:** Jesus is the **great intercessor** in favor of his sinful people (I Timothy 2:5; I John 2:1).

**Prophecy:** Moses brings water **from a rock** (Exodus 17:1-6), brings manna from heaven (Exodus 16), and raises up a serpent that saves Israel from death (Numbers 21:9).

**Fulfillment:** **Jesus is the rock** from whom water springs (John 4:13-14; 7:37-39; Matthew 21:42-44). He is also the manna from heaven (John 6:41), and the serpent raised in the wilderness (John 3:14).

**Prophecy:** Moses organized the **12 tribes** (Exodus 24:4) and **established 70** (Exodus 24:1) to carry on the work of Israel.

**Fulfillment:** Jesus **chose 12** and **sent out 70** to carry out His work (Revelation 12:1; Matthew 10:1; Luke 10:1, 17).

**Prophecy:** Moses **was tested** by the constant opposition of the Jewish leaders and the people.

**Fulfillment:** Jesus was **opposed constantly** by the leaders and His people.

**Prophecy:** Moses **died, was buried** by God, was resurrected by Christ and ascended to heaven (Deuteronomy 34:5, 6; Jude 9; Matthew 17:3).

**Fulfillment:** Jesus **died, was buried**, was resurrected and ascended to heaven (Revelation 12: 5).

**Prophecy:** **Deuteronomy 18:15-18** promised one greater than Moses.

**Fulfillment:** Jesus is the prophecy **greater than Moses** (Acts 3:22-26).

**Summary:** Literal Moses brings literal deliverance to literal Israel from literal bondage in literal Egypt, by offering a literal lamb, took them across a literal desert. Brings literal water from the literal rock and literal manna from heaven and raises up a literal serpent to prevent literal death, and leads literal Israel to the borders of literal Canaan. It is clear that the story of Moses was fulfilled on a larger scale in Jesus. It is obvious that what was literal and local with Old Testament Israel is to be understood in a spiritual and worldwide sense today.

## **Four Elements**

### **Element #1: The Woman (12:1)**

*“Now a great sign appeared in heaven: a woman clothed with the sun, with the moon under her feet, and on her head a garland of twelve stars.”*

**What stage** of the Church are we talking about here? Is it the Old Testament Church or the New Testament Church? It must be the **Old Testament Church** because when John saw the woman the child had **not yet been born** and the child is Jesus.

It would be good to remember that in the Old Testament we have **many women** and **many ‘preliminary’ seeds** who prefigure **THE** woman and **THE** Seed of Genesis 3:15.

What is represented by the **sun** that clothes the woman and the moon that she stands on? The answer is determined by the meaning of the **greater light** and the **lesser light**.

- The **sun is the greater light** and the **moon is the lesser light** (Genesis 1:16)
- **The sun**: Represents Jesus Christ, the greater light (Psalm 84:11; Matthew 17:3; Revelation 1:16; Malachi 4:1)
- **The moon**: The lesser light is the Bible which gives witness to Jesus (John 5:35, 39, 46, 47)

**Only one woman**: There is **only one woman** before Jesus was born, when Jesus was born, when the Church was persecuted for 1260 years and when the final remnant is persecuted. God has **only one true Church in all ages**. Dispensationalists are totally wrong when they say that God has two mutually separable peoples. There is only **one Messiah** and only **one people** of the Messiah. The **same dragon** is also active in all of the stages.

The twelve stars:

In the **Old Testament** period the twelve stars represent the **twelve sons of Jacob**. They are the **founders** which later form the **twelve tribes** of Israel (Genesis 37:9, 10; Genesis 49:28)

In the **New Testament** stage the twelve stars also represent the **twelve apostles** who are the founders of the **New Testament Church**: (Mark 3:14). Notice the number of times that the apostles are addressed as 'the twelve' (Matthew 10:1, 2, 5, 11:1; 20:17; 26:20). Ellen White concurred:

*“As in the Old Testament the **twelve patriarchs** stood as representatives of Israel, so the **twelve apostles** stood as representatives of the gospel church.” AA 19*

There is **only one city** with the twelve tribes and the twelve apostles: Revelation 21:12; Revelation 21:14

### **Element #2: The Woman’s Seed (12:2)**

*“Then being **with child**, she cried out in labor and in pain to give birth.”*

The Seed is Jesus as can be seen clearly in Revelation 12:5

### **Element #3: The dragon: (12:3)**

*“And another sign appeared in heaven: behold, a great, **fiery red dragon** having seven heads and ten horns, and seven diadems on his heads.”*

*“The line of prophecy in which these symbols are found begins with Revelation 12, with the dragon that sought to destroy Christ at His birth. **The dragon is said to be Satan** (Revelation 12:9); he it was that moved upon Herod to put the Saviour to death. But the chief agent of Satan in making war upon Christ and His people during the first centuries of the Christian Era was the Roman Empire, in which paganism was the prevailing religion. Thus while the*

dragon, primarily, represents Satan, it is, in a secondary sense, a symbol of pagan Rome."  
GC, p. 438

#### **Element #4: Enmity against the woman's Seed (12:4)**

"His tail drew a third of the stars of heaven and threw them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman who was ready to give birth, to devour her Child as soon as it was born."

#### **Revelation 12:3, 4 and 7-12**

It is common in the book of Revelation to present the broad sweep of events and group them together. Notice as examples

- **Revelation 8:3-5:** The intercession with the censer and its throwing down presents the entire period of intercession between Christ's intercessory ministry and the close of probation.
- **Revelation 13:11:** There is a time interval between the horns like a lamb and the speaking like a dragon although both are presented as happening simultaneously.
- **Revelation 13:3:** The deadly wound and its healing are spoken of as happening one right after the other without any time interval.

**Revelation 11:19:** Two events spoken of as happening without any time interval. We should not be surprised that John jumps from the original event to the cross thus giving us the broad sweep.

Revelation 12:4 presents the entire sweep of the controversy between Christ and Satan from the origin of sin in heaven till Jesus died on the cross. **Verse four** first gives a flashback into what happened in heaven and then goes right on to describe the birth of Jesus. In **verse seven** once again he gives a flashback to heaven and then deals with events after the ascension of Jesus. So verses 7-10 take us a little further forward than verse 3 and verse 5.

The structure of Revelation 12:3, 4 and 12:7-12 is to be understood in the following manner:

Focus on **Christ's birth** (Revelation 12:3, 4):

- **Flashback:** Before creation in heaven the dragon by his lies (tail) swept away one third of Christ's angels
- **Historical Event:** Satan stood before the woman when Jesus was about to be born



Focus on **Christ's victory at the cross** (Revelation 12:7-12):

- **Flashback:** Satan was originally cast out of heaven with his angels (which were originally Michael's angels). The tenses of verses 7-9 clearly indicate that this is a past event that is being looked at from the perspective of the present.

*"And war **broke** [aorist] out in heaven: Michael and his angels **fought** [aorist] with the dragon; and the dragon and his angels **fought** [aorist], 8 but they **did** [aorist] not prevail, nor was a place found for them in heaven any longer. 9 So the great dragon **was** [aorist] cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who **deceives** [present participle] the whole world; he **was** [aorist] cast to the earth, and his angels **were** [aorist] cast out with him."*

- **Historical Event:** Verses 10-12 will now describe the consequences of the past event. Christ's victory is celebrated in Revelation 12:10-12. There we are told that the heavenly host sang: because Christ had defeated Satan at the cross (see also John 12:31-33; Luke 10:18, 19)

### **Reaction in heaven:**

*"Then I heard a loud voice saying in heaven: "**Now** salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ **have come** [aorist], for the **accuser** of our brethren, who accused [aorist] them before our God day and night, has been cast down. 11 And they overcame [aorist] him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony, and they did not [aorist] love their lives to the death."*

*"When Christ cried, "It is finished," God's unseen hand rent the strong fabric composing the veil of the temple from top to bottom. The way into the holiest of all was made manifest. God bowed His head satisfied. Now His justice and mercy could blend. He could be just, and yet the justifier of all who should believe on Christ. He looked upon the victim expiring on the cross, and said, "It is finished. The human race shall have another trial." The redemption price was paid, and **Satan fell like lightning from heaven** (MS 111, 1897) 5BC, p. 1150*

*"Christ did not yield up His life till He had accomplished the work which He came to do, and with His parting breath He exclaimed, "It is finished." John 19:30. The battle had been won. His right hand and His holy arm had gotten Him the victory. As a Conqueror He planted His banner on the eternal heights. Was there not joy among the angels? All heaven triumphed in the Savior's victory. Satan was defeated, and knew that his kingdom was lost. To the angels and the unfallen worlds, the cry, "It is finished," had a deep significance. It was for them as well as for us that the great work of redemption **had been accomplished**. They with us share the fruits of Christ's victory." DA, p. 758*

## **Reaction in heaven and on earth:**

*“Therefore rejoice, O heavens, and you who dwell in them! Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and the sea! For the devil has come down to you, **having great wrath**, because he knows that he has a short time.”*

## **Satan’s Rage: Revelation 12:6, 13-15**

### **This rage is described in verse 6 and verses 13-15.**

Revelation 12:6 amplified in 12:13-15

- The devil first wanted to get rid of **the child** (12:1-5, 7-12).
- When the child escaped, then he **goes after the mother** (12:6, 13-15). How do you think the child feels about someone mistreating his mother? Is there anything we love more than our mother? He who touches mother, touches the child or son.
- When God provides refuge for the woman to escape the ire of the serpent, the serpent **goes after the remnant** of her Seed (12:17).

**Three Old Testament contexts** form the backdrop of Revelation 12:6, 13-15:

- **Genesis 3:15** (which we have already studied).
- **Daniel 7** (the little horn; the time period and persecution of the saints is the same).
- The **Elijah story** (the most important backdrop).

*“Now when the dragon saw that he had been cast to the earth, he **persecuted the woman** who gave birth to the male Child. 14 But the woman was given two **wings of a great eagle**, that she might **fly into the wilderness** to her **place**, where she is **nourished** for a **time and times and half a time**, from the presence of the serpent. 15 So the serpent spewed water out of his **mouth** like a flood after the woman, that he might cause her **[the woman]** to be carried away by the flood.”*

**Revelation 12:6** introduces several elements that are repeated and amplified in verses 13-15:

- ‘Woman’
- ‘Serpent’
- ‘Wilderness’
- ‘Place’
- ‘Nourished’
- ‘time, times and half a time’

**Commentary:** Revelation 12:6 merely **introduces the next** stage in the drama but **does not tell us** why the dragon is enraged with the woman. In order to know the reason, we must go to the amplification in **verses 13-15**.

A comparison of Daniel 7:25 and Revelation 12:6, 14 reveals three things:

- The woman **represents the saints** of the Most High.
- The **power behind the little horn** is the dragon, the ancient serpent, the devil and Satan.
- The **3.5 times** is the same as the **1260 days**.

*“The forty and two months are the same as the “time and times and the dividing of time,” three years and a half, or 1260 days, of Daniel 7—the time during which the papal power was to oppress God’s people. This period, as stated in preceding chapters, began with the establishment of the papacy, A. D. 538, and terminated in 1798.” GC, p. 439*

### **Revelation 12:13-15:**

**Verse 13:** We now discover **the reason** why the dragon is enraged with the woman and went to make war with her. The dragon was angry because **he had been cast down** to the earth at the cross.

*“Satan again counseled with his angels, and with **bitter hatred** against God’s government told them that while he retained his power and authority upon earth their efforts must be tenfold stronger against the **followers of Jesus**. They had **prevailed nothing against Christ** but must **overthrow His followers**, if possible. In every generation they must seek to ensnare those who would believe in Jesus. He related to his angels that Jesus had given His disciples power to rebuke them and cast them out, and to heal those whom they should afflict. Then Satan’s angels **went forth like roaring lions**, seeking to **destroy the followers of Jesus**.” EW, pp. 191, 192*

**Verse 14:** The **eagles’ wings** bring to mind the exodus of Israel from Egypt. In Exodus 32:10-14 we find the imagery of the eagle rescuing Israel in the wilderness. The eagle is a swift, powerful fowl that flies high and protects its young like the apple of its eye. This is the same way that Jesus feels about His persecuted people. He feeds them, he places them upon His wings and protects them from the enemy. In **Exodus 19:4** (see also Isaiah 40:31). God says that he took Israel upon eagles’ wings when He **delivered them** from bondage to pharaoh, the great dragon.

**Verse 15:** Even though the dragon/serpent had seven heads, **only one head** is spewing water out. This indicates clearly that **only one of the seven heads** rules at a given time. At this time, we do not know which head is spewing out the water but the matter will be explained in **Revelation 17:15**.

The meaning of the waters: Isaiah 8:7, 8; Psalm 69:1, 2, 14, 15; Daniel 9:26; Isaiah 57:20; Psalm 68:21, 22; Psalm 89:9, 10; Jeremiah 51:36 (river=sea), Habakkuk 3:8, 15.

The waters are not just any old waters—they are the **river Euphrates** at flood stage.

In **Joshua 24:2, 3, 14, 15** the Euphrates River is described under the **euphemism** of “the Flood.”

**Genesis 15:18** depicts the Euphrates as “the great River” (see also Isaiah 8:7, 8; 17:12, 13; 59:19). Thus in Revelation 12 we are to understand **the** River (with the definite article in the Greek) or Flood that the dragon spews out his mouth as the river Euphrates.

Even though the Greek word translated “flood” and “river” in the New Testament are the same, many contemporary Bible versions have seen the relationship between “the flood” and “the river” and thus use them interchangeably. Notice only one example of many, the **English Standard Version** (ESV):

*“The serpent poured water like a **river** out of his mouth after the woman, to sweep her away with a **flood**. 16 But the earth came to the help of the woman, and the earth opened its mouth and swallowed **the river** that the dragon had poured from his mouth.”*

## **The Elijah Backdrop**

In order to fully comprehend Revelation 12:6, 13-15 we must go to the Elijah story in the Old Testament.

### **Foundational Principle:**

The Seven churches, seven seals and seven trumpets cover the same basic historical events from **different perspectives**. The churches actually form the **skeletal foundation** of the chronological sequence of the rest of the book of Revelation.

- The first church, seal and trumpet describe the **apostolic church**.
- The second church, seal and trumpet describe the period of **imperial Rome**.
- The third church, seal and trumpet describe the period when **paganism penetrated** the Christian church.
- The fourth church, seal and trumpet describe the **period of papal supremacy** when the Bible and the work of Christ were eclipsed.

## **The Meaning of the Seven Churches**

*“The **names** of the seven churches are **symbolic** of the church in **different periods of the Christian Era**. The number 7 indicates completeness, and is symbolic of the fact that the*

messages extend to the end of time, while the symbols used reveal the condition of the church at different periods in the history of the word.” AA, p. 585

- **Ephesus** – The apostolic church
- **Smyrna**: The persecuted church under the Roman emperors
- **Pergamum**: The compromising church under Constantine
- **Thyatira**: The apostate church of the middle Ages

Notable futurists **Hal Lindsey** and **Dave Hunt** agree that the seven churches represent consecutive periods of Christian Church history. They also agree that the fourth church represents the period of papal supremacy. Jezebel in the church of Thyatira must therefore not be literal but symbolic because during this period literal Jezebel was already dead and because Jezebel did not live 1260 years.

## **Analysis of the Church of Thyatira**

### **Revelation 2:20-23:**

*“Nevertheless I have a few things against you, because you [the church of Thyatira] allow that woman Jezebel [the beast of Revelation 13 and harlot of Revelation 17], who calls herself a prophetess, to teach and seduce My servants to commit **sexual immorality [fornication, union of Church and state]** and eat things sacrificed to **idols [idolatry]**. And I gave her **time [1260 years]** to repent of her sexual immorality [fornication], and she **did not repent**. Indeed I will cast her into a **sickbed [the deadly wound]**, and those who commit adultery with her into **great tribulation [the French Revolution]**, unless they repent of their deeds. I will **kill her children [the Protestant churches]** with death, and all the churches [all seven of them] shall know that I am He who **searches** the minds and hearts [the **investigative judgment]**. And I will give to each one of you **according to your Works [the moment when the reward is given to the harlot and her lovers]**.”*

## **The Elijah Story**

In the Old Testament story, **Jezebel**, the pagan priestess introduced the apostasy into Israel. In Revelation Thyatira is a period of history when the Christian church blended paganism and Christianity and acted like Jezebel:

*“Now Ahab the son of Omri did evil in the sight of the LORD more than all who were before him. And it came to pass, as though it had been a trivial thing for him to walk in the sins of Jeroboam the son of Nebat, that he took as wife **Jezebel** the daughter of Ethbaal, king of the Sidonians and he went and served Baal and worshiped him.” (I Kings 16:30, 31)*

## **Revelation 2:20**

*“Nevertheless I have a few things against you, because you allow **that woman Jezebel**, who calls herself a prophetess, to teach and **seduce** My servants to commit sexual immorality and eat things sacrificed to idols.” (Revelation 2:20)*

Jezebel was an adulteress mother who had an illicit relationship [fornication] with the king and she was involved in the occult:

*“Now Ahab the son of Omri did evil in the sight of the LORD, more than all who were before him. And it came to pass, as though it had been a trivial thing for him to walk in the sins of Jeroboam the son of Nebat, that he took as wife Jezebel the daughter of Ethbaal, king of the Sidonians; and he went and served Baal and worshiped him.” (1 Kings 16:30, 31)*

*“Now it happened, when Joram saw Jehu, that he said, “Is it peace, Jehu?” So he answered, “What peace, as long as the **harlotries** of your **mother** Jezebel and her **witchcraft** are so many?” (2 Kings 9:22)*

*“Then one of the seven angels who had the seven bowls came and talked with me, saying to me, “Come, I will show you the judgment of the **great harlot** who sits on many waters, with whom the kings of the earth **committed fornication**, and the inhabitants of the earth were made drunk with the wine of her fornication. . . And on her forehead a name was written: MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, **THE MOTHER** OF HARLOTS AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.” (Revelation 17:1, 2, 5)*

*“For your merchants were the great men of the earth, for by your **sorcery** all the nations were deceived.” (Revelation 18:23)*

The issues in the conflict involved the law of God, worship and the Gospel:

### **Worship:**

*“Now Ahab the son of Omri did evil in the sight of the LORD more than all who were before him. And it came to pass, as though it had been a trivial thing for him to walk in the sins of Jeroboam the son of Nebat, that he took as wife **Jezebel** the daughter of Ethbaal, king of the Sidonians; and he went and served Baal and **worshiped** him.” (1 Kings 16:30, 31)*

*“So they **worshiped** the dragon who gave authority to the beast; and they **worshiped** the beast, saying, “Who is like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?” (Revelation 13:4; also Revelation 14:9-12)*

## **The First Table of the Law:**

*“Then it happened, when Ahab saw Elijah that Ahab said to him: “Is that you, O troubler of Israel?” And he answered, “I have not troubled Israel, but you and your father’s house have, in that you have forsaken the **commandments** of the LORD and you have followed the Baals.” (I Kings 18:18, 18)*

*“He shall speak pompous words against the Most High, shall persecute the saints of the Most High, and shall intend to change times and **law**. Then the saints shall be given into his hand for a time and times and half a time.” (Daniel 7:25)*

*II Thessalonians 2 refers to the man of sin and the mystery of lawlessness*

## **Tearing Down the Gospel Sanctuary Truth:**

*Then Elijah said to all the people, “Come near to me.” So all the people came near to him. And he **repaired the altar** of the LORD that was **broken down**. And Elijah took twelve stones, according to the number of the tribes of the sons of Jacob, to whom the word of the LORD had come, saying, “Israel shall be your name”. . . And it came to pass, at the time of the offering of the **evening sacrifice**, that Elijah the prophet came near and said, “LORD God of **Abraham, Isaac, and Israel**, let it be known this day that You are God in Israel and I am Your servant, and that I have done all these things at Your word. Hear me, O LORD, hear me, that this people may know that You are the LORD God, and that You have **turned their hearts back to You again**.” (I Kings 18:30, 31, 36, 37)*

*“He even exalted himself as high as the Prince of the host; and by him the **daily** sacrifices were **taken away**, and the place of His sanctuary was **cast down**.” (Daniel 8:11)*

*“Then he [**the beast**] opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His name, **His tabernacle**, and those who dwell in heaven.” (Revelation 13:6)*

**No rain** during the period of apostasy:

*“And Elijah the Tishbite, of the inhabitants of Gilead, said to Ahab, “As the LORD God of Israel lives, before whom I stand, there shall not be dew nor rain these years, except at my word.” (I Kings 17:1)*

*“These have power to shut heaven, so that no rain falls in the days of their prophecy.” (Revelation 11:6)*

Notice **the reason** for the scarcity of rain:

*“When I shut up heaven and there is no rain, or command the locusts to devour the land, or send pestilence among My people, 14 if My people who are called by My name will humble*

*themselves, and pray and seek My face, and turn from their wicked ways, then I will hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin and heal their land.”(II Chronicles 7:13, 14)*

Where there is no rain there is famine for the word of God:

*“Behold, the days are coming,” says the Lord GOD, “That I will send a **famine** on the land, not a famine of bread, nor a thirst for water, but of **hearing the words of the LORD**. They shall wander from sea to sea, and from north to east; they shall run to and fro, seeking the **word of the LORD**, but shall not find it.” (Amos 8:11, 12)*

The **length of the famine** was three years and six months:

*“Elijah was a man with a nature like ours and he prayed earnestly that it would not rain; and it did not rain on the land for **three years and six months**.” (James 5:17)*

The Jezebel of the middle Ages was given **time to repent** of her fornication. How much time was given to her? *“Time, times and the dividing of time”*, a period that reached from **538 to 1798**:

*“And I gave her **time [chronos]** to repent of her **sexual immorality**, and she did not repent.” (Revelation 2:21)*

**Revelation 11:3**: The **1260 days** are years (if the 1260 days are really years then Elijah **cannot be a literal person** but a **group** of people who **live like Elijah** and **proclaim the message** of Elijah

*“And I will give power to my two witnesses, and they will prophesy **one thousand two hundred and sixty days**, clothed in sackcloth.”*

**Daniel 7:25**: **The 1260 days** are equal to **three and a half times**

*“He shall speak pompous words against the Most High, shall persecute the saints of the Most High, and shall intend to change times and law. Then the saints shall be given into his hand for **a time and times and half a time**.”*

There was a **faithful remnant** within the apostate church:

*“Yet I have reserved **seven thousand** in Israel, all whose knees have not bowed to Baal, and every mouth that has not kissed him.” (I Kings 19:18)*

*“Now to you I say, and to **the rest** [*loipos*, the remnant] in Thyatira, as many as do not have this doctrine, who have not known the depths of Satan, as they say, I will put on you no other burden. But hold fast what you have till I come.” (Revelation 2:24, 25)*



**Elijah was blamed** for the calamities and he was **sought out** everywhere:

*“As the LORD your God lives, there is no nation or kingdom where my master has not sent someone **to hunt for you**; and when they said, 'He is not here,' he took **an oath** from the kingdom or nation that they could not find you.” (I Kings 18:10, 17)*

*“Then it happened, when Ahab saw Elijah that Ahab said to him: “Is that you, O **troubler of Israel?**”*

Elijah fled from **the wrath of Jezebel** to the **wilderness** where God had a **place prepared** for him:

*“Get away from here and turn eastward, and **hide** by the Brook Cherith, which flows into the Jordan.” (I Kings 17:3)*

*“Then the woman **fled into the wilderness**, where she has a place prepared by God that they should feed her there one thousand two hundred and sixty days.” (Revelation 12:6)*

*“Then the woman **fled into the wilderness**, where she has a place prepared by God, that they should feed her there one thousand two hundred and sixty days. . . But the woman was given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the **wilderness** to her place, where she is nourished for a time and times and half a time, from the presence of the serpent.” (Revelation 12:6, 14)*

The faithful were nourished by God:

*“And it will be that you shall drink from the brook, and **I have commanded** the ravens to **feed you** there.” (I Kings 17:4)*

*“The ravens **brought him bread** and meat in the morning, and bread and meat in the evening; and he drank from the brook.” (I Kings 17:6)*

*“Then the woman fled into the wilderness, where she has a place prepared by God that they should **feed her there** one thousand two hundred and sixty days. . . But the woman was given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness to her place, where **she is nourished** for a time and times and half a time, from the presence of the serpent.” (Revelation 12:6, 14)*

Jezebel was a murderer of God’s prophets:

*“For so it was, while Jezebel **massacred the prophets** of the LORD, that Obadiah had taken one hundred prophets and hidden them, fifty to a cave, and had fed them with bread and water.” (I Kings 18:4)*

*"Then Jezebel sent a messenger to Elijah, saying, "So let the gods do to me, and more also, if I do not make your life as the life of one of them by tomorrow about this time." And when he saw that, he arose and **ran for his life**, and went to Beersheba, which belongs to Judah, and left his servant there." (1 Kings 19:1, 2)*

*"I saw the woman, **drunk with the blood** of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus. And when I saw her, I marveled with great amazement." (Revelation 17:6)*

The false prophets of Baal were fed at **Jezebel's table** and she is called **the mother** because she had **daughters**:

*"Now therefore, send and gather all Israel to me on Mount Carmel, the four hundred and fifty **prophets of Baal**, and the four hundred prophets of Asherah, who **eat at Jezebel's table.**"*

*"Now it happened, when Joram saw Jehu, that he said, "Is it peace, Jehu?" So he answered, "What peace, as long as the **harlotries** of your **mother** Jezebel and her **witchcraft** are so many?" (2 Kings 9:22)*

**Revelation 16:13:** The beast has the **false prophet** who does its bidding:

*"And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs coming out of the mouth of the dragon, out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the **false prophet.**"*

The harlot has **daughters**:

*"And on her forehead a name was written: MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, **THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.**" (Revelation 17:5)*

Jezebel had **children** who were born from her toward the end of the 1260 years who will do her bidding.

*"I will kill her children with death, and all the churches shall know that I am He who searches the minds and hearts. And I will give to each one of you according to your works." (Revelation 2:23)*

### **A continuation of Elijah at the end of time**

**Malachi 4:1-3:** The Elijah of the middle Ages was **not the final Elijah**. The **conclusion** of the story has **not been written**. Jezebel **was not slain**, the **false prophets were not slain**, the **great and terrible day** of the Lord did not come and the **church was not translated**.

We are to expect the **final Elijah** to **complete** the story.

*"For behold, the day is coming, **burning like an oven**, and all the proud, yes, all who do wickedly will be **stubble**. And the day which is coming shall **burn them up**," Says the LORD of*

hosts, "That will leave them **neither root nor branch**. But to you who fear My name the Sun of Righteousness shall arise with healing in His wings; and you shall go out and grow fat like stall-fed calves. You shall trample the wicked, for **they shall be ashes** under the soles of your feet on the day that I do this," says the LORD of hosts."

The post apostolic church has **two stages** of existence because the **harlot has two stages** of existence.

"When He opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who **had been slain** for the word of God and for the testimony which they held. 10 And they cried with a loud voice, saying, "**How long, O Lord**, holy and true, until You **judge** and **avenge** our blood on those who dwell on the earth?" 11 Then a white robe was given to each of them; and it was said to them that they should **rest a little while longer**, until both the number of their fellow servants and their brethren, who would be killed as they were, **was completed**." (Revelation 6:9-11)

The harlot has **two stages** of existence and so **Elijah**, the **children** (false prophets of the harlot and **Ahab** must also have **two stages** of existence.

"And I saw one of his heads as if it had been mortally wounded, and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world marveled and followed the beast." Revelation 13:3

Jezebel was cast into her **sickbed** along with those who committed **fornication** with her into the **great tribulation** of the **French Revolution**.

"Indeed I will cast her into a sickbed, and those who commit adultery with her into great tribulation, unless they repent of their deeds." (Revelation 2:22)

**Elijah broadens** from Israel to **Western Europe** to the **world** at the end of time.

**Revelation 12:17**: **After** the three and a half times God will raise up a people who will **keep the commandments** of God, have the **gift of prophecy**, preach **true worship** to the creator, **restore the everlasting gospel**, **denounce Babylon**, lead the **world to take a stand** for the **seal** of God or the **mark** of the beast. This will be the **end time Elijah** with the power from heaven which will **enlighten the world** with its glory (**Revelation 18:1**) and will suffer persecution just as Elijah.

**Revelation 12:15, 16**:

"So the serpent [**dragon**] spewed water out of his **mouth** like a flood after the **woman**, that he might cause her to be carried away by the **flood**. 16 But the **earth helped** the woman, and the earth **opened its mouth** and swallowed up the flood which the **dragon** had spewed out of his **mouth**."

## Review of the literary structure of Revelation 12

- **Flashbacks** to heaven
- Israel in the **Old Testament** period denoted by the 12 stars
- The **birth** of the child
- The **ascension** of the child
- The **victory celebration** in heaven
- The wrath of the dragon **against the woman**
- Persecution for **1260 years**
- The **earth helps** the woman by swallowing up the waters
- The **final war** against the remnant

This is **the historical method at its best!** It gives us a broad sweep of history from the **rebellion of Lucifer** in heaven till the **final war** against God's people.

### Identity of the dragon

The dragon is one of the **main antagonistic** protagonists of Revelation 12.

Though not directly called a dragon in Daniel 7, the **fourth beast** is nevertheless a dragon which represents the **Roman empire**. But Revelation 12 **amplifies** the meaning of Daniel 7 by explaining that the **power behind** the nondescript beast of Daniel 7 was **Satan**. Thus we see that the fourth beast is the **visible kingdom** (the Roman empire) through which Satan **works in the background** to attempt to kill the child.

In Daniel 7 the nondescript beast then sprouts a **little horn** that persecutes the **saints** for 1260 years. We know for a fact that the **little horn is Roman** because it rises **from the head** of the fourth beast among its ten horns. But Revelation 12 takes us **behind the scenes** to show us that the **real power** behind the little horn's work during the 1260 years (papal Rome) was **the dragon**. Thus Satan persecuted the woman through the instrumentality of Rome. This is the reason we are told in **Revelation 13:2** that the dragon gave his **seat, authority and power** to the beast.

But we are also told that after a period of respite the dragon will persecute the remnant at the **end of time** (Revelation 12:17). It is the **same dragon** that persecuted the child and the woman and therefore it must represent **Satan working through Rome**. In fact, Revelation 13 will show that the beast from the earth **does everything to impress the first beast**, commanding all to **worship it**, to make **an image** of and to it and **imposing its mark**. Thus the beast from the earth continues the legacy of Rome because it **speaks like a dragon** (Revelation 13:11).

In all stages it is **Satan working through Rome**. Dragon persecutes **the child** then hands off the baton **to the beast** (Revelation 12), then, after a period of respite, the **beast from the earth** speaks like a dragon.

Ellen White explains how the United States will speak not only **like Satan but also like Rome**:

*“God's word has given warning of the impending danger; let this be unheeded, and the Protestant world will learn what the purposes of Rome really are, only when it is too late to escape the snare. She is silently growing into power. Her doctrines are exerting their influence in legislative halls, in the churches, and in the hearts of men. She is piling up her lofty and massive structures in the secret recesses of which her **former persecutions will be repeated. Stealthily and unsuspectedly** she is strengthening her forces to further her own ends when the time shall come for her to strike. All that she desires is vantage ground, and this is already being given her. We shall soon see and shall feel what the purpose of the **Roman element** is. Whoever shall believe and obey the word of God will thereby incur reproach and persecution.”*  
GC, p. 581

*“By this first beast is represented the **Roman Church**, an ecclesiastical body **clothed with civil power**, having authority to punish all dissenters. The image to the beast represents another religious body **clothed with similar powers**. The formation of this image is the work of that beast whose peaceful rise and mild professions render it so striking a symbol of the United States. Here is to be found **an image of the Papacy**.”* *Last Day Events*, p. 381

What came to the rescue of the woman who was being persecuted in Europe? The earth. The earth must refer to a **different place** because all of the beasts of Daniel 7 came **from the sea** including the **fourth beast**. What is represented by the earth? It represents the **territory of the United States**. At this point the nation had **not yet come forth** from the earth. The **territory** provided refuge for the woman beginning in **1620** and the nation later arose from this territory **around 1798**.

In **Revelation 12:13-15** we find a description of the persecution of the woman by the dragon for 1260 years. Then in **verse 16** you have the earth helping the woman. The earth helps the woman **before the 1260 years come to an end**. How do we know this? The answer is, by the sequence of events in *The Great Controversy*. In the *The Great Controversy*, p. 265 Ellen White begins the chapter on the **French Revolution** which comes at the very end of the 1260-year period. But in the very **next chapter** Ellen White **goes back** in time to describe how the **territory** of the United States provided refuge for those who were persecuted in Europe. This is very similar to the order of Revelation 12 where in **verse 14** the woman is persecuted for 1260 years and then in **verse 16** we have the earth helping the woman.

Ellen White describes the fulfillment of the 1260 years:

*"The periods here mentioned--"forty and two months," and "a thousand two hundred and threescore days"--are the same, alike representing the time in which the church of Christ was to suffer oppression from Rome. The 1260 years of papal supremacy began in A.D. 538, and would therefore terminate in 1798. At that time a French army entered Rome and made the pope a prisoner, and he died in exile. Though a new pope was soon afterward elected, the papal hierarchy **has never since** been able to wield **the power which it before possessed.**"* *GC*, p. 266

Ellen White then goes back in history and expounds upon the pilgrims who came to the territory of the United States in the early 1600's:

*"It was the desire for **liberty of conscience** that inspired the Pilgrims to brave the perils of the long journey across the sea, to endure the hardships and dangers of the wilderness, and with God's blessing to lay, on the **shores of America**, the foundation of a mighty nation."* *GC*, p. 292

It was from persecution by the dragon that the woman escaped. This does not mean that during the Colonial period religious liberty was always respected. There was religious persecution in the colonial period but it was **not the dragon** who was doing the persecuting. In fact, the colonists were very suspicious of the papacy.

*"What **nation** of the New World was in 1798 rising into power, giving promise of strength and greatness, and attracting the attention of the world? The application of the symbol admits of no question. One nation, and only one, meets the specifications of this prophecy; it points unmistakably to the United States of America. Again and again the thought, almost the exact words, of the sacred writer has been unconsciously employed by the orator and the historian in describing the rise and growth of this nation. The beast was seen "coming up out of the earth;" and, according to the translators, the word here rendered "coming up" literally signifies "to grow or spring up as a plant." And, as we have seen, the nation must arise in **territory previously unoccupied**. A prominent writer, describing the rise of the United States, speaks of "the mystery of her coming forth **from vacancy**," and says: "Like a silent seed we grew into empire."--G. A. Townsend, *The New World Compared With the Old*, page 462. A European journal in 1850 spoke of the United States as a wonderful empire, which was "emerging," and "amid the **silence of the earth** daily adding to its power and pride." --*The Dublin Nation*." *GC*, p. 440*

Who is the **remnant of the woman's Seed** in Revelation 12? The woman's seed has already been identified as Christ in the **first five verses** of the chapter so the remnant of her Seed must be the **remnant of Jesus**. In other words, this would be the Seed's seed. Both

Jesus (John 12:24) and the apostle Paul developed this idea (Galatians 3:16, 28, 29). This last remnant is not the remnant of the woman but rather the remnant of the woman's Seed!

## **The Dragon's Rage**

Earlier in the chapter we noticed that the dragon was enraged against the woman because the child was caught up to God's throne. But at the end of the chapter the rage is due to the fact that the remnant **keeps the commandments** of God and have the testimony of Jesus Christ. Let's talk a little about the commandments of God.

## **References to the Commandments of God in Revelation**

The expression "**keep the commandments of God**" is used in **three places** in the book of Revelation: 12:17; 14:12 and 22:14

### **Reference #1:**

#### **Revelation 14:12:**

*"[in contrast to those who worship the beast and his image and receive the mark]: "Here is the patience of the saints; here are those who keep [tereoo] the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus."*

### **Reference #2:**

**Revelation 22:14** [we will deal with the **disputed translation** of this verse later]:

*"Blessed are those who do [poieoo] His commandments that they may have the right to the tree of life, and may enter through the gates into the city."*

The text does not say that they **believe** in the commandments or **have** the commandments or **teach** the commandments or **preach** them but they **keep them**. So I guess if you teach that **no one can keep** them you are making **God a liar!**

What does the word 'keep' mean? The Word "keep" means 'to guard', 'to observe.' It is used in with **Revelation 16:15** to describe those who guard their robes. It is also used in **John 9:16** where Jesus is accused of not 'keeping' the Sabbath. It is further used in **James 2:10** and **Matthew 19:17** to describe the keeping of the Ten Commandments.

### **Reference #3:**

#### **Revelation 12:17:**

*"And the dragon was enraged with the woman, and he went to make war with the rest of her offspring, who keep the commandments of God and have the testimony of Jesus Christ."*

## **Satan, the Law and the Origin of Sin**

Why does Satan hate the commandments of God and those who keep them? In order to answer this question, we must **pay a visit to heaven** as it was before this world was created.

Satan **sinned in heaven**:

### **Ezekiel 28:16:**

*"By the abundance of your trading you became filled with violence within, and **you sinned**; therefore, I cast you as a profane thing out of the mountain of God; and I destroyed you, O covering cherub, from the midst of the fiery stones."*

Satan has **sinned from the beginning**:

### **John 3:8:**

*"He who sins is of the devil, for the devil has sinned from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil."*

**Note:** Sin is transgression of the law and therefore Satan must have **broken the law**:

### **I John 3:4:**

*"Whoever commits sin also commits lawlessness, and sin is lawlessness [or: 'transgression of the law']."*

Satan attempted to sell his lies in heaven. Notably, even today we use commercial terms to metaphorically refer to lying. For example, we say, "I **don't buy it**"; you "**can't sell me** that one"):)

### **Ezekiel 28:16:**

*"By the abundance of your trading you became filled with violence within, and you sinned. Therefore, I cast you as a profane thing out of the mountain of God; and I destroyed you, O covering cherub, from the midst of the fiery stones."*

### **Ezekiel 22:9:**

*"In you are men who **slander** to cause bloodshed; in you are those who eat on the mountains; in your midst they commit lewdness."*



**Leviticus 19:16:**

*“You shall not go about as a **talebearer** among your people; nor shall you take a stand against the life of your neighbor: I am the Lord.”*

**John 8:44:**

*“You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you want to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does **not stand in the truth**, because there is **no truth in him**. When he speaks a **lie**, he speaks from his own resources, for he is a **liar** and the father of it.”*

**Revelation 12:3:**

*“His **tail** drew a third of the stars of heaven and threw them to the earth.”*

**Isaiah 9:15, 16:**

*“The elder and honorable, he is the head; the prophet who teaches lies, he is the **tail**. For the leaders of this people cause them to err and those who are led by them are destroyed.”*

Satan deceived a third of the angels to rebel against God with him:

**Revelation 12:9:**

*“So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was cast to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.”*

Ellen White provides a **profound glimpse** into the issue involved when Satan began his attack against the law of God:

*“Leaving his place in the immediate presence of the Father, Lucifer went forth to diffuse the spirit of **discontent among the angels**. He worked with **mysterious secrecy**, and for a time concealed his real purpose under an **appearance of reverence** for God. He began to insinuate doubts concerning **the laws** that governed heavenly beings, intimating that though laws might be necessary for the inhabitants of the worlds, angels, being **more exalted**, needed **no such restraint**, for their **own wisdom** was a sufficient guide.” *PP*, p.37*

*“He reiterated his claim that angels **needed no control**, but should be left to follow their **own will**, which would ever guide them right. He denounced the divine statutes as a **restriction of their liberty** and declared that it was his purpose to secure the **abolition of law**; that, **freed from this restraint**, the hosts of heaven might enter upon a **more exalted, more glorious** state of existence.” *GC*, p. 499*

## **Sin Enters Planet Earth**

All the principles of the Ten Commandments were contained in the command of Genesis 2:15-17. Satan led Eve to disobey God's commands. When Eve disobeyed the one she was actually **disobeying them all**. James wrote that whoever keeps the whole law but stumbles in one point is guilty of all. Even more notably, Satan used the **first post-modern argument** in human history. He convinced Eve that she could be her **own source of ethical and moral decisions** that she could rely on her own definition of right and wrong without depending on God's **objective definition**. Let's take a closer look at Genesis 3:1-5.

### **Genesis 3:1-5:**

*"Now the serpent was more cunning than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And **he said** to the woman, "**Has God indeed said**, 'You shall not eat of every tree of the garden?'" <sup>2</sup> And the woman said to the serpent, "We may eat the fruit of the trees of the garden; <sup>3</sup> but of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, **God has said**, 'You shall not eat it, nor shall you touch it, lest you die.'" <sup>4</sup> Then the serpent said to the woman, "**You will not surely die**. <sup>5</sup> For **God knows** that in the day you eat of it your **eyes will be opened** and you will be like God, **knowing good and evil**."*

The question is: Who defines good and evil? Does each individual human being provide his/her own definition from inside or does God provide an **objective definition** from outside? The answer is that God, in His law provides the absolute definition of good and evil. God is the absolute definer of good and evil.

## **Which Commandments?**

Can we be sure that the expression "keep the commandments" in Revelation refers specifically to the **Ten Commandments**?

After instructing the rich young ruler to **keep the Commandments** Jesus then quoted the last six of the ten:

### **Matthew 19:17-22:**

*"So He said to him: "Why do you call Me good? No one is good but One, that is, God. But if you want to enter into life, **keep the commandments**." He said to Him, "**Which ones?**" Jesus said, "'You shall not murder,' 'You shall not commit adultery,' 'You shall not steal,' 'You shall not bear false witness,' 'Honor your father and your mother,' and: 'You shall love your neighbor as yourself.'" The young man said to Him, "All these things **I have kept from my youth**. What do I still lack?" Jesus said to him, "If you want to be perfect, go, sell what you have and*

*give to the poor and you will have treasure in heaven; and come, follow Me." But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful, for he had great possessions."*

The women who came to the tomb rested on the Sabbath (the fourth) according to **the commandment**:

**Luke 23:56**:

*"Then they returned and prepared spices and fragrant oils. And they rested on the Sabbath **according to the commandment**."*

The expression "**commandment of God**" is used to refer to the **fifth commandment**:

**Mark 7:9, 10**:

*"He said to them, "All too well you reject the **commandment of God**, that you may **keep** your tradition. <sup>10</sup> For Moses said, 'Honor your father and your mother'; and, 'He who curses father or mother, let him be put to death.'"*

The word 'commandment' is a reference to the **tenth commandment**

**Romans 7:7-12**:

*"What shall we say then? Is the **law** sin? Certainly not! On the contrary, I would not have known **sin** except through the **law**. For I would not have known covetousness unless the **law** had said, "You shall not covet." <sup>8</sup> But sin, taking opportunity by the **commandment**, produced in me all manner of evil desire. For apart from the **law sin** was dead. <sup>9</sup> I was alive once without the **law**, but when the **commandment** came, **sin** revived and I died. <sup>10</sup> And the **commandment**, which was to bring life, I found to bring death. <sup>11</sup> For **sin**, taking occasion by the **commandment**, deceived me, and by it killed me. <sup>12</sup> Therefore the **law** is holy, and the **commandment** holy and just and good."*

**Paul** wrote that we must keep the commandments of God:

**I Corinthians 7:19**:

*"Circumcision is nothing and uncircumcision is nothing, but **keeping the commandments of God** is what matters."*

**Are the words "law" and "commandments" used interchangeably in Scripture?**

### **Exodus 16:28:**

*"And the Lord said to Moses, "How long do you refuse to keep My **commandments** and My **laws?**"*

### **Exodus 24:12:**

*"Then the Lord said to Moses: "Come up to Me on the mountain and be there; and I will give you tablets of stone, and the **law** and **commandments** which I have written, that you may teach them."*

God wrote the **Ten Commandments** but in Deuteronomy we are told that God gave them a **fiery law** so commandments and law are interchangeable:

### **Deuteronomy 4:13:**

*"So He declared to you His covenant which He commanded you to perform, the **Ten Commandments**; and **He wrote them** on two tablets of stone."*

### **Deuteronomy 33:2:**

*"The Lord came from Sinai and dawned on them from Seir; He shone forth from Mount Paran and He came with ten thousands of saints; from **His right hand** came a **fiery law** for them."*

### **Romans 7:7-12:**

*"What shall we say then? Is the **law** sin? Certainly not! On the contrary, I would not have known sin except through the **law**. For I would not have known covetousness unless the **law** had said, "You shall not covet." But sin, taking opportunity by the **commandment**, produced in me all manner of evil desire. For apart from the **law** sin was dead. I was alive once without the **law**, but when the **commandment** came, sin revived and I died. And the **commandment**, which was to bring life, I found to bring death. For sin, taking occasion by the **commandment**, deceived me, and by it killed me. Therefore the **law** is holy, and the **commandment** holy and just and good."*

### **Romans 13:8-10:**

*"Owe no one anything except to love one another, for he who loves another has fulfilled the **law**. For the **commandments**, "You shall not commit adultery," "You shall not murder," "You shall not steal," "You shall not bear false witness," "You shall not covet," and if there is any other **commandment**, are all summed up in this saying, namely, "You shall love your neighbor as yourself." Love does no harm to a neighbor; therefore love is the fulfillment of the **law**."*

*"For whoever shall keep the whole **law**, and yet stumble in **one point**, he is guilty of **all**. For He who said, "Do not commit adultery," also said, "Do not murder." Now if you do not commit adultery, but you do murder, you have become a **transgressor of the law**. So speak and so do as those who will be judged by the **law** of liberty."*

### **How did Jesus feel about the commandments?**

#### **John 14:15, 16:**

*"**If you love Me keep My commandments**. And I will pray the Father, and He will give you another Helper, that He may abide with you forever."*

#### **John 15:10:**

*"If you **keep My commandments**, you will abide in My love, just as I have kept My Father's commandments and abide in His love."*

#### **1 John 2:3-5:**

*"Now by this we know that we know Him, if we **keep His commandments**. 4 He who says, "I know Him," and does not **keep His commandments**, is a liar, and the truth is not in him."*

#### **John 5:3:**

*"For this is the love of God, that we **keep His commandments**. And **His commandments** are not burdensome."*

### **Antichrist Meddles with the Law**

One thing stands clear in the Bible. Satan hates the Ten Commandments and he has led the Christian world to attempt to change them. The **little horn** thought he could change the law of God (Daniel 7:25). This system is also called the **man of sin** and the lawless one (II Thessalonians 2:4, 9). This change can be seen in the changes that are made in Roman **Catholic Catechisms**. Notably, the little horn who ruled for 1260 years thought he could change the law but at the very end of this period God raised a remnant who would keep them (Revelation 12:14-17).

#### **2 Thessalonians 2:3-8:**

*"Let no one deceive you by any means; for that Day will not come unless the falling away comes first, and the **man of sin** is revealed, the son of perdition, who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God or that is worshiped, so that he sits as God in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God. Do you not remember that when I was still with you I told you these things? And now you know what is restraining, that he may be revealed in his own*

time. For the **mystery of lawlessness** is already at work; only He who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of the way. And then the **lawless one** will be revealed whom the Lord will consume with the breath of His mouth and destroy with the brightness of His coming.”

#### **Daniel 7:25:**

“He shall speak pompous words against the Most High, shall persecute the saints of the Most High and shall **intend to change times and law**. Then the saints shall be given into his hand for a **time and times and half a time**.”

#### **Revelation 12:13-16:**

“Now when the dragon saw that he had been cast to the earth, he persecuted the woman who gave birth to the male Child. 14 But the woman was given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness to her place, where she is nourished for a time and times and half a time, from the presence of the serpent. . . And the **dragon** was enraged with the **woman**, and he went to make war with the **rest of her offspring**, who **keep the commandments** of God and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.”

Keeping the commandments is in **antithesis** with the third angel’s message so keeping the commandments must be the **opposite of receiving the mark of the beast**.

#### **Revelation 14:11-12:**

“And the smoke of their torment ascends forever and ever; and they have no rest day or night, who worship the beast and his image, and whoever receives the mark of his name.” 12 Here is the patience of the saints; here are those who **keep the commandments of God** and the faith of Jesus.”

The book of Revelation describes in vivid detail who will be **in the city** and who will be **outside**. Inside are the commandments keepers and outside are the commandment breakers:

#### **Revelation 22:14, 15:**

“Blessed are those who **do His commandments**, that they may have **the right** to the tree of life, and may enter through the gates into the city. 15 **But** outside are dogs and sorcerers and sexually immoral and murderers and idolaters, and whoever loves and practices a lie.”

The translation of this verse has been disputed. The King James translates: “keep the commandments” and most modern versions translate “wash their robes.” Which is the correct translation? The book of Revelation elsewhere uses both expressions. Notice the following texts:

Revelation 7:9, 13, 14; Revelation 19:6-8; Revelation 3:5; 3:18

### **Revelation 21:7-8:**

*"He who **overcomes** shall **inherit all things**, and I will be his God and he shall be My son. **But** the cowardly, unbelieving, abominable, murderers, sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death."*

It is as clear as the noon day sun that those inside the city overcame sin while those outside led sinful lives.

### **How do the saints keep the commandments?**

**Revelation 14:1** says that God's end time people have the **name of the Father in the forehead**. The name represents the **character** and the character of God is revealed in **His law**. They **follow** the lamb wherever He goes, **no lie** in our mouths, **without spot** before the throne of God. This is **not legalistic keeping** of the commandments. Writing **His law** means that he **writes his character** and we **love righteousness** and **hate iniquity** and the law is in our hearts (Psalm 40:6-8).

### **Revelation 14:1:**

*"Then I looked, and behold, a Lamb standing on Mount Zion, and with Him one hundred and forty-four thousand, having His Father's name written on their foreheads."*

*"In biblical thought a name is not a mere label of identification; it is an expression of the essential nature of its bearer. A man's name reveals his character. Adam was able to give names to the beasts and birds (Gen. 2:20) because, as Milton says, he understood their nature." Interpreter's Dictionary of the Bible, volume 3, p. 500-501*

### **Genesis 27:36:**

*"And Esau said: "Is he not **rightly named Jacob**? For he has supplanted me these two times. He took away my birthright, and now look, he has taken away my blessing!"*

### **I Samuel 25:25:**

*"Please, let not my lord regard this scoundrel Nabal. For as his name is, so is he: Nabal is his name, and folly is with him!"*

### **Genesis 27:36**

*"And Esau said: "Is he not **rightly named Jacob**? For he has supplanted me these two times. He took away my birthright, and now look, he has taken away my blessing!"*

### **1 Samuel 25:25**

*"Please, let not my lord regard this scoundrel Nabal. For **as his name is, so is he**: Nabal is his name, and folly is with him!"*

### **Exodus 33:18-19**

*"And he said, "Please, show me Your glory." 19 Then He said, "I will make all **My goodness** pass before you, and I will **proclaim the name** of the Lord before you. I will be **gracious** to whom I will be gracious, and I will have **compassion** on whom I will have compassion."*

### **Ezekiel 36:26-28:**

*"I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit **within you**; I will take **the heart** of stone out of your flesh and give you **a heart** of flesh. 27 I will put My Spirit **within** you and **cause you** to walk in My statutes, and you will keep My judgments and do them."*

### **Psalms 40:6-8:**

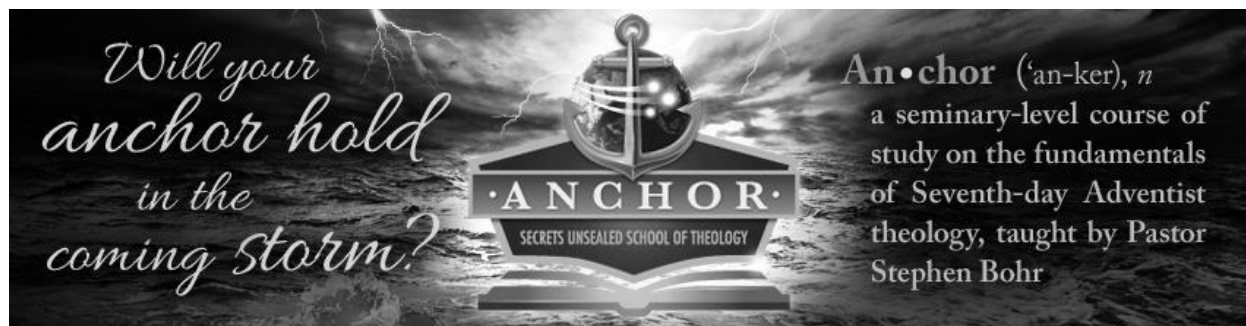
*"Sacrifice and offering You did not desire; My ears You have opened. Burnt offering and sin offering You did not require. 7 Then I said, "Behold, I come; in the scroll of the book it is written of me. 8 I delight to do Your will, O my God, and Your **law is within my heart.**"*

### **Jeremiah 31:31-34:**

*"Behold, the days are coming, says the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah—not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, My covenant which they broke, though I was a husband to them, says the Lord. But this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the Lord: I will put **My law in their minds**, and **write it on their hearts**; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people."*

It does no good to have them **posted** in courtrooms if they are not engraved **on the heart**. Righteousness comes from **inside out** and not from **outside in**. Force creates **martyrs or hypocrites**. Big debate as to whether this is a **Christian nation**. It sure doesn't look like it.





## **“The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”**

**by Pastor Stephen Bohr**

### **LESSON #5 – COMMENTS ON REVELATION 13:1-10**

#### **An Apostate System**

Today we are going to discuss a system that is portrayed in the **Bible** as the **antichrist**. This system is called the little horn, the beast, the abomination of desolation, the king of the north, the harlot and the man of sin. We are not going to talk about the **individuals** that are in the system but rather the corporate, organizational system itself. There are many **sincere persons** in this system. They no doubt **love the Lord** and serve Him to the best of their knowledge and ability. But the system is **corrupt and irreversible**.

You might say: “How can we make a distinction between the individuals that are in the system and the system itself if the individuals belong to the system?”

Perhaps the best explanation is found in the similar case of the **Jewish nation** in the days of Christ. At that time, the **corporate church** composed of **ministers and theologians** had become corrupt. The governing **Sanhedrin** on several occasions pronounced the death sentence against Jesus. The **priesthood of the nation** was also corrupt. Jesus said that the nation was caught up in a rigid ritualism while its heart was far away from the Lord. In the midst of this apostasy Jesus was intent on bringing revival and reformation. Initially Jesus came to lost sheep of the house of Israel in the hopes that they would receive Him. He had no intention of calling people out of Judaism. But as His ministry reached its climax, the Jewish nation turned against His message and mission with an infidel hardihood.

Finally, Jesus, in a **scathing but loving** rebuke to these leaders, pronounced **woes** upon them (see Matthew 23). He referred to them **hypocrites, murderers, a generation of vipers, serpents** and asked how they could escape the **condemnation of hell**. Thus the Jewish church became **irreversibly apostate** and Jesus told the leadership that the kingdom would be **taken from them** and given to the Gentiles (Matthew 23:43).

But not all who belonged to the system were apostate. There were many sincere individuals who were **faithful children of God** within the system. We think of people like eleven of the **twelve apostles, Nicodemus, Joseph of Arimatea**, the wise **Gamaliel** and later on **Saul of Tarsus**. In **Acts 6:7** we are informed that large numbers of the **priests** became followers of Jesus after the outpouring of the Holy Spirit. In fact, on the day of Pentecost, **three thousand** individuals were baptized into the faith and became members of the Christian Church, all of them Jews.

You see, the **system** and those that are **within the system** is not the same thing. Many of the people who belong to the system are as corrupt as the system but there are also many who are in the system, both leaders and lay people, who have not bowed the knee to Baal. With this in mind let us begin our study of Revelation 13:1-10.

### **Revelation 13:1:**

*“Then I stood on the sand of the **sea**. And I saw a **beast** rising up out of the sea, having **seven heads** and **ten horns**, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads a **blasphemous name**.”*

### **The Symbols**

- Sand of the **sea** (the beasts of Daniel 7:1, 2 also came up from the sea. The turbulent wind-tossed sea represents warring nations—Isaiah 17:12, 13).
- **Seven heads** (the seven heads on the single beast represent stages of the **total career** of the nation’s beginning with **Babylon** and ending with the **resurrected papacy**. For example, while the leopard with four heads in Daniel 7 presents the **total career** of Greece without any time distinctions, **Daniel 8:3-5, 20 expands** upon Daniel 7 by explaining that Greece would be ruled first by a notable horn and then, after the notable horn was broken, by four horns. A careful study of Revelation 12, 13, 17 clearly indicates that the heads rule **one at a time** in historical succession.
- **Ten horns**: The horns are not disbursed among the seven heads but rather are all on the same head. Our study will reveal that the ten horns are on heads # 5, 6, 7.
- **Blasphemous name** (this blasphemous name has a mysterious number whose total is 666).

### **The Backdrop of Daniel 7**

#### **Revelation 13:2:**

*“Now the beast which I saw was like a **leopard**, his feet were like the feet of a **bear**, and his mouth like the mouth of a **lion**. The **dragon** gave him his power, his throne, and great authority.”*

One is struck by the fact that the **identical beasts** of Daniel 7 are mentioned but in **reverse order**. The reason for the reversal of order is that Daniel is living in the period of the lion (Babylon) and is looking **forward** while John is living in the period of the dragon (the Roman Empire) and is looking **backwards**.

It has long been recognized by students of Bible prophecy that the four beasts of Daniel 7 represent **four consecutive kingdoms** that arose in the course of history beginning in the days of king Nebuchadnezzar (see the parallel prophecy in Daniel 2 that proves this beyond any doubt). History reveals that the lion represents the kingdom of **Babylon** (605-539 BC), the bear symbolizes the kingdom of the **Medes and Persians** (539-331 BC), the leopard denotes **Greece** (331-168 BC) and the dragon beast represents **Rome** (168 BC - 476 AD).

The book of Daniel itself identifies the **first three kingdoms** (Daniel 5; Daniel 8:20, 21)

### **Four Stages of Rome**

What has not received sufficient attention is the fact that the **fourth beast** (the Roman Empire) is described as having **four consecutive** periods of dominion.

#### **Stage #1: The United Roman Empire (168 BC-476 AD)**

##### **Daniel 7:23-24:**

*"Thus he said: 'The **fourth beast** shall be a **fourth kingdom** on earth, which shall be different from all other kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, trample it and break it in pieces.'*

#### **Stage #2: The Divided Roman Empire (476 AD-538 AD)**

##### **Daniel 7:24:**

*"The ten horns are ten kings who **shall arise from** this kingdom."*

The text is clear. In order for the ten horns to arise **from** this kingdom, the kingdom must have **already existed** before they arose. History proves that the Roman Empire was **carved up** and divided among the barbarian tribes who invaded from the **north** (more on this in a few moments).

#### **Stage #3: Papal Rome during the 1260 Years (538 AD-1798 AD)**

##### **Daniel 7:24, 25:**

*"And another shall rise **after them**; he shall be different from the first ones, and shall subdue three kings. He shall speak **pompous words** against the Most High, shall **persecute** the saints*

of the Most High, and shall intend to change times and law. Then the saints **shall be given** into his hand for a **time and times and half a time.**”

**Ten Characteristics** help us identify this power:

1. It arose to power **after** the ten had come up (Daniel 7:23, 24)
2. It arose **among** the ten (Daniel 7:8)
3. It arose **from the head of the dragon** (7:23, 24)

“Within three centuries, the Roman Church had **transformed** the administrative organization of the Roman Empire into an ecclesiastical system of bishoprics, dioceses, monasteries, colonies, garrisons, schools, libraries, administrative centers, envoys, representatives, courts of justice, and a criminal system of intricate laws all under the **direct control of the pope**. His Roman Palace, the Lateran, became the **new Senate**. The new senators were the **cardinals**. The bishops who lived in Rome and the priests and deacons helped the pope to administer this **new imperium**.” (Malachi Martin, The Decline and Fall of the Roman Church, p. 105)

“The Roman Church in this way privily pushed itself into the place of the Roman World-Empire, of which it is the actual **continuation**; the empire **has not perished**, but has only undergone a **transformation**. . . That is no mere ‘clever remark,’ but the recognition of the true state of the matter historically, and the most appropriate and fruitful way of describing the character of this Church. It still governs the nations. It is a **political creation**, and as imposing as a World-Empire, because [it is] the **continuation of the Roman Empire**. The Pope, who calls himself ‘King’ and ‘Pontifex Maximus,’ is **Caesar’s successor**.” (Adolph Harnack, What is Christianity? pp. 269-270)

“The Empire was falling into **decay**. The Barbarians knew that its life was failing, that the old organism was worn out, and they hastened to take possession of the remains. From every direction they came for the spoils. The **Saxons and the Angles** settled in Great Britain; the **Franks** invaded Northern Gaul; the **Visigoths** made Spain and the region south of the Loire their own; the **Burgundians** took possession of the upper valley of the Rhone; the **Vandals** made conquests in Africa. The **Ostrogoths** and **Lombards** were waiting for their turn to come. Among these new invaders, some were heretics and others were pagans. What is to become of the Church? Are its days numbered, and is the Empire to bring it down as its companion into an open tomb? No, the Church will not descend into the tomb. It will survive the Empire. It will have to pass through days of distress. It will witness calamity after calamity, ruins heaped upon ruins. But in the midst of the greatest sadness, it will receive precious consolations. One after another, these barbarian peoples will **submit to its laws**, and will count it a glory to be the Church’s children. The frontiers of the Church will be extended;

its institutions, for a moment shaken by the Barbarians, will be consolidated, developed, and will adapt themselves to their surroundings. The papacy, most sorely tried of all, will make a new advance. At length a **second empire** will arise, and of this empire the Pope will be the master--more than this, he will be the **master of Europe**. He will dictate his orders to **kings who will obey them**.” (Joseph Turmel, The Latin Church in the Middle Ages, p. v, vi

“The **all-conquering barbarians** were storming the gates of Augustine’s city when the saint died in 430. The North African town of Hippo was one of the last imperial outposts to be attacked. **Rome had already gone under**. Only four years before, St. Augustine’s City of God had laid the theological groundwork for the church to **step into the void** left by the collapsing Roman Empire.” (Douglas Auchincloss, City of God and Man, Time, 76 (December 12, 1960), p. 64

“The removal of the capital of the Empire from **Rome to Constantinople** in 330 left the Western Church, practically **free from imperial power**, to develop its own form of organization. The Bishop of Rome, **in the seat of the Caesars**, was now the greatest man in the West, and was soon **forced** to become the **political** as well as the **spiritual** head. To the Western world **Rome was still the political capital**--hence the whole habit of mind, all ambition, pride, and sense of glory, and every social prejudice favored the **evolution** of the great city into the ecclesiastical capital. **Civil** as well as **religious** disputes were referred to the successor of Peter for settlement. Again and again, when barbarians attacked Rome, he was compelled to actually **assume military leadership**. Eastern Emperors frequently recognized the high claims of the Popes in order to gain their assistance. It is not difficult to understand, how, under these responsibilities, the primacy of the Bishop of Rome, established in the pre-Constantine period, was emphasized and magnified after 313 [Edict of Milan]. The importance of this fact must not be overlooked. The organization of the Church was thus put on the same divine basis as the revelation of Christianity. This idea once accepted led inevitably to the **medieval Papacy**.” (Alexander Clarence Flick, The Rise of the Mediaeval Church), pp. 168, 169)

“During the whole medieval period there was **in Rome a single spiritual and temporal authority [the papacy]** exercising powers which in the end exceeded those that had ever lain within the grasp of the Roman emperor.” (R. W. Southern, Western Society and the Church in the Middle Ages, volume 2), pp. 24-25

“The papacy is no other than **the ghost of the deceased Roman Empire**, sitting crowned upon the grave thereof.” (Thomas Hobbes, as quoted in, Dave Hunt, A Woman Rides the Beast, p. 95)

“Christian Rome was the **legitimate successor of pagan Rome** . . . Christ had triumphed [and] Rome was ready to extend its sway to the heavens themselves.” (W. H. C. Frend, The Rise of Christianity, p. 773)

“The **Roman** Christian Church was a church of world-wide importance and power, and her bishop the most influential. Out of the ruins of **political Rome** arose the great **moral empire** in the ‘giant form’ of the **Roman** Church. In the marvelous rise of the Roman Church is seen in strong relief the majestic office of the Bishop of Rome.” (Alexander Clarence Flick, The Rise of the Mediaeval Church, p. 150)

“When the Western empire fell into the hands of the barbarians, the **Roman** bishop was the only surviving **heir of this imperial past**, or, in the well-known dictum of Hobbes, ‘the ghost of the deceased Roman empire, sitting crowned upon the grave thereof.’” (Philip Schaff, History of the Christian Church, vol. 3, p. 287)

“Long **before the fall of Rome**, there had begun to grow up within the Roman Empire an **ecclesiastical state**, which was **shaping itself upon the imperial model**. This **spiritual empire**, like the secular empire, possessed a hierarchy of officers, of which deacons, priests or presbyters, and bishops were the most important . . . Another consequence of the **fall of the Roman power** in the west was the **development of the Papacy**. In the **absence of an Emperor** [2 Thessalonians 2] in the west, the popes rapidly gained influence and power and soon built up an **ecclesiastical empire** that in some respects **took the place** of the old empire.” (Myers, General History for Colleges, pp. 348, 316)

“St. Thomas . . . says that **the Roman Empire has not ceased**, but is **changed** from the temporal into the spiritual . . . It was, then, the Apostolic Church, which, spreading throughout the nations, already combined together by the power of the heathen empire of Rome, quickened them with a new life . . . the temporal power in the old heathen empire of Rome, and the spiritual power in the supernatural kingdom of God **met together** . . . these two powers were **blended and fused together** [Daniel 2:41]; they became **one authority**, the emperor ruling from his throne within the sphere of his earthly jurisdiction, and the Supreme Pontiff ruling likewise from a throne of a **higher sovereignty** over the nations. . . the material power which once reigned in Rome [was] consecrated and sanctified by the investiture of the Vicar of Jesus Christ with **temporal sovereignty** over the city where he dwelt. And now for these **twelve hundred years** the peace, the perpetuity and faithfulness of the Christian civilization of Europe, has been owing solely in its principle to this consecration of the power and authority of **the great empire of Rome**, taken up of old, **perpetuated, preserved**, as I have said, by the salt which had been sprinkled from heaven, and continued in the person of the Supreme Pontiff, and in that order of Christian civilization of which he has been the

creator.” (Cardinal Manning, *The Temporal Power of the Vicar of Jesus Christ*, pp. 123-128)  
**Bold is mine**

“If we extend our view over the **ruins of the Western Empire**, such is the spectacle that meets us on every side . . . the Pax Romana has ceased; it is **universal confusion**. But wherever a bishop holds his court, **religion protects all that is left of the ancient order**. A **new Rome** ascends slowly above the horizon. It is **the heir** of the religion which it has overthrown; it assumes the outward splendors of the Caesars . . . The **emperor is no more** . . . But the Pontifex Maximus abides; he is now the Vicar of Christ, offering the old civilization to the tribes of the north. He converts them to his creed, and they serve him as their Father and Judge supreme. This is the Papal Monarchy, which in its power and its decline **overshadows the history of Europe** for a thousand years.” (W. F. Barry, *The Papal Monarchy*, pp. 45, 46)

“As Rome’s role in **pagan history** came to an end, she was destined to play another, a **sacred one**, in Christian history . . . Rome’s part in ecclesiastical history had begun. . . Thus a **Christian Rome**, destined, like its pagan predecessor on the Palatine, to conquer a large part of the earth, **gradually arose** on Vatican Hill . . . While today the Palatine [the hill of the Roman Emperors’ palaces] is in ruins, St. Peter’s still draws worshipers from all parts of the world.” (Walter Woodburn Hyde, *Paganism to Christianity in the Roman Empire*, pp. 6-7)

4. The little horn would **uproot** three horns (7:8)
5. The horn would speak **great words** against Almighty God (7:8, 25)
6. The horn would **persecute** the saints of God(7:21, 25)
7. The horn would rule for **3.5 times** (7:25)
8. The horn would think that it could change **God’s law** (7:25)
9. The horn would think that he could change **God’s times** (7:25)
10. The horn would lose its power and then **recover it** before the end (7:26, 27)

These characteristic clearly prove that **Stage #3** was the period of dominion of ecclesiastical or papal Rome.

**Stage #4: Papal Rome restored to power sometime after the three and a half times and before the second coming of Jesus**

**Daniel 7:26, 27:**

“But the court shall be seated, and they shall **take away his** [the little horn’s] **dominion**, to **consume and destroy it** forever. Then the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the

*kingdoms under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people, the saints of the Most High. His kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey Him.”*

The fourth stage of the fourth beast is **implicit in Daniel 7**. If the little horn’s dominion will be taken away and **destroyed when Jesus comes**, then it must be ruling the world again at that time. This means that the papacy’s career did not end when it lost its dominion at the end of the three and one half prophetic times. It will be **alive, well and ruling the world** again when Jesus comes and will be destroyed by the **brightness of His coming** (**2 Thessalonians 2:8, 9**)

Summarizing the **four stages** of the fourth beast we have:

- The fourth **beast alone**: Imperial Rome (168 BC-476 AD)
- The fourth beast with **ten horns**: Divided Rome (476-538 AD)
- The fourth beast with the **little horn** ruling for three and one half prophetic years: Papal Rome’s first stage (538-1798 AD)
- The fourth beast when the little horn is **restored to power**: Papal Rome’s second stage (still future)

### **Revelation 13:1-10 Parallels Daniel 7**

Revelation 13:1, 2 is clearly **linked** with Daniel 7. The **same sequence of powers** appears in both passages:

#### **Revelation 13:1, 2:**

*“Now the beast which I saw was like a **leopard**, his feet were like the feet of a **bear**, and his mouth like the mouth of a **lion**. The **dragon** gave him his power, his throne, and great authority.”*

Like the dragon beast of Daniel 7, the dragon beast (**fourth beast**) of Revelation 12-13 has **four consecutive stages** of dominion:

- **Imperial Rome**: The dragon which sought to kill Jesus (12:1-3)
- **Divided Rome**: The dragon had ten horns (12:3)
- **Papal Rome**: The beast which received its power, throne and great authority from the dragon and then ruled for 42 months (13:5)
- **Papal Rome Revived**: The beast which will rule the world once again after the deadly wound is healed (13:3)

It will be noticed that the beast that received its power, its throne and great authority from the dragon, is in the **same place** in the order and performed the **same actions** for the



**same time** period as the little horn. Thus the little horn and the beast represent the very same power:

### **Revelation 13:5, 7:**

*“And he was given a **mouth speaking great things** and blasphemies, and he was given authority to continue for **forty-two months**. It was granted to him to make **war with the saints** and to **overcome** them. And authority was given him over every tribe, tongue, and nation.”*

### **The Fourth Stage of the Dragon Beast**

It is important to underline that while the deadly wound and the **fourth stage** of the dragon beast was **only implied** in Daniel 7, it is made **explicit in Revelation 13**. According to Revelation 13, after the beast ruled for 42 months (Revelation 13:5) it received a **deadly wound** (Revelation 13:10) but the deadly wound will be healed (Revelation 13:3) and it will **rule again** as it did in the past. In between the deadly wound and its healing, the beast is **convalescing with a deadly wound**.

“The influence of Rome in the countries that once acknowledged her dominion is still far from being destroyed. And prophecy foretells a **restoration of her power**. “I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast” Verse 3. GC, p. 579

“When our nation [the United States] shall so abjure the principles of its government as to enact a Sunday law, Protestantism will in this act join hands with popery; it will be nothing else that **giving life [which means that it must have had a deadly wound]** to the tyranny which has long been eagerly watching its opportunity to **spring again [which means that the active despotism that existed before died only to live again]** into **active [which means that for a period the tyranny was inactive]** despotism.” Testimonies for the Church, volume 5, p. 712

### **Revelation 13:3:**

*“And I saw one of his heads as if it had been **mortally wounded**, and his **deadly wound was healed** and all the world marveled and followed the beast.”*

- Only **one head** of the beast is wounded, the head that ruled during the **42 months**
- The beast has **seven heads** but they rule **consecutively** one at a time. When we study Revelation 17 we will find that at this point in the prophecy, **five of the heads**

**had already been wounded and killed**. At the moment when John saw this beast, the head had been freshly wounded. Whereas the other heads all died to never live again, this head **will live again**.

- What is the meaning of the expression “*as if it had been mortally wounded*”? It is the same expression that is used to describe Jesus as the lamb “*as though it had been slain*.”
- Ellen White on repeated occasions stated that the **entire world** would follow and worship the beast:

*“History will be repeated. False religion will be exalted. The first day of the week, a common working day, possessing no sanctity whatever, will be set up as was the image of Babylon. **All nations and tongues and peoples** will be commanded to worship this spurious sabbath . . . The decree enforcing the worship of this day is to go forth to **all the world**.”* 7BC 976 (1897) Last Day Events, pp. 134, 135

*“As America, the land of religious liberty, shall unite with the papacy in forcing the conscience and compelling men to honor the false sabbath, the people of **every country on the globe** will be led to follow her example.”* Testimonies for the Church, volume 6, p. 18

*“The Sabbath question is to be the issue in the great final conflict in which **all the world** will act a part.”* Testimonies for the Church, volume 6, p. 352

*“**Foreign nations** will follow the example of the United States. Though she leads out, yet the same crisis will come upon our people in **all parts of the world**.”* Testimonies for the Church, volume 6, p. 395

*“The substitution of the false for the true is the last act in the drama. When this substitution becomes **universal** God will reveal Himself. When the laws of men are exalted above the laws of God, when the **powers of this earth** try to force men to keep the first day of the week, know that the time has come for God to work.”* Last Day Events, p. 135

*“The substitution of the laws of men for the law of God, the exaltation, by merely human authority, of Sunday in place of the Bible Sabbath, is the last act in the drama. When this substitution becomes **universal** God will reveal Himself. He will arise in His majesty to shake terribly the earth.”* Testimonies for the Church, volume 7, p. 141

*“The wicked . . . declared that they had the truth, that miracles were among them, that angels from heaven talked with them and walked with them, that great power and signs and wonders were performed among them, and that this was the temporal*

millennium that they had been expecting so long. The **whole world** was converted and in harmony with the Sunday law." Last Day Events, p. 136

"The **whole world** is to be stirred with enmity against Seventh-day Adventists because they will not yield homage to the papacy by honoring Sunday, the institution of this antichristian power." Testimonies to Ministers p. 37

"Those who trample upon God's law make human laws which they will force the people to accept. Men will devise and counsel and plan what they will do. The **whole world** keeps Sunday, they say, and why should not this people, who are so few in number, do according to the laws of the land?" Last Day Events, p. 136

"The so-called **Christian world** is to be the theater of great and decisive actions. Men in authority [**in the Christian world**] will enact laws controlling the conscience, after the example of the papacy. Babylon will make **all nations** drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. **Every nation** will be involved. Of this time John the Revelator declares: [Revelation 18:3-7; 17:13, 14, quoted]. "These have one mind." There will be a **universal bond of union**, one great harmony, a **confederacy** of Satan's forces. 'And shall give their power and strength unto the beast.' Thus is manifested the same arbitrary, oppressive power against religious liberty—freedom to worship God according to the dictates of conscience—as was manifested by the papacy, when in the past it persecuted those who dared to refuse to conform with the religious rites and ceremonies of Romanism." Last Day Events, pp. 136, 137

"In the great conflict between faith and unbelief the **whole Christian world** will be involved." Review and Herald February 7, 1893. Last Day Events, p. 137

"As the Sabbath has become the special point of controversy throughout Christendom and religious and secular authorities have combined to enforce the observance of the Sunday, the persistent refusal of a small minority to yield to the popular demand will make them objects of **universal execration**." GC, p. 615

## **Crucial Questions**

- **Which weapon** did the beast use to slay the saints?
- Which **weapon** gave the beast its mortal wound?
- What does the **sword** symbolize?
- **How** and **when** did the beast **acquire** the sword that it used to kill?
- What is meant by the **deadly wound**?
- Was the deadly wound healed in **1801** or **1929**?
- What presently **keeps** the deadly wound **from healing**?
- **When**, **how** and **by whom** will the wound be healed?

## The Weapon that Wounded the Beast

**Revelation 13:10** explains that the deadly wound that ended the dragon's third stage of rule was given with the **sword**. When the sword wounded the beast it was led into **captivity**. While the beast is wounded it is in **captivity** and when its wound is healed it is **freed from captivity**. While it was wounded it was **not free** to wreak havoc like it did during the period of its dominion.

**Revelation 13:10:** A description of the deadly wound and the captivity of the beast:

*"He who leads into **captivity** shall go into **captivity**; he who kills **with the sword** must be killed **with the sword**."*

**Note:** Someone **might object:** *"The text does not say that **the beast** killed with the sword and must be killed with the sword; the text uses the indefinite: **he who**."*

But a comparison with **Revelation 13:14** leaves no doubt that it was the beast that killed with the sword and was mortally wounded by it:

*"And he deceives those who dwell on the earth by those signs which he was granted to do in the sight of the beast, telling those who dwell on the earth to make an image to **the beast who was wounded by the sword** and lived."*

## What does the Sword Represent?

**Ephesians 6:17:** Does the sword represent the Bible?

*"And take the helmet of salvation, and the **sword of the Spirit**, which is the **word of God**."*

Whenever I ask people what the sword of Revelation 13 represents they generally answer: "It represents the Word of God." It is true that the sword can represent the Bible. However, the sword that wounded the beast in Revelation 13:10 was **not the Bible**. It is quite obvious that the **papacy did not use the Bible to slay the saints!!**

## The Sword that Wounded the Beast

It is important to remember that in the Bible, **symbols are flexible**. That is to say, they do not always **mean the same thing**—the context must dictate their meaning. For example, a **lion** in Scripture can represent Christ, Satan, Babylon or Judah. **Leaven** can represent sin but it can also represent the implantation of the Holy Spirit who brings about phenomenal growth in the church. The expression '**sons of God**' can represent angels (Job 1:8) but also

God's faithful followers (Genesis 6:1, 2; Romans 8:13). Thus the sword can represent the **Bible** but it can also symbolize the **punitive power of the state** to punish civil and criminal transgressions.

The crucial question then is this: **Which sword** did the papacy use to persecute God's saints during its period of supremacy? The answer is found in **Romans 13:1-4**:

*"Let every soul be subject to the **governing authorities** for there is no authority except from God, and the **authorities** that exist are appointed by God. Therefore whoever resists the **authority** resists the ordinance of God and those who resist will bring judgment on themselves for **rulers** are not a terror to good works but to evil. Do you want to be unafraid of the **authority**? Do what is good, and you will have praise from the same for he is God's minister to you for good. But if you do evil, be afraid; for he does not bear **the sword** in vain; for he is God's minister, an **avenger to execute wrath** on him who practices evil."*

The sword that is mentioned in Romans 13 threatens **civil penalties** (incarceration, confiscation of goods, fines, death) against transgressors. This passage makes it clear that in the time of the apostle Paul this particular sword did not belong to the **church** but rather to the **Roman state**. This sword is **punitive**, not **persuasive**.

It is clear that **the sword** that wounded the beast at the end of the 1260 years cannot be the Bible because the text explicitly affirms that the **very sword** that the beast used **to kill** the saints during the 1260 years would be **used to kill** to give it the deadly wound at the end of this period. It would be ludicrous to say that the papacy **used the Bible** during the 1260 years as a weapon to kill dissenters (rather it forbade the Bible and kept it in an unknown tongue) so the symbol of the sword in the context of Revelation 13 must **represent something different** than it does in Ephesians 6:17.

### **God Established Both**

It is important to underline that **God** has established the legitimacy of **both church and state**. In God's order they both have their legitimate function and place.

Jesus announced that He would **build His church** upon **Himself** when He said to Peter: "upon **this rock** I will build My church." The church is Christ's **spiritual kingdom**.

But Romans 13 also makes it very clear that God established the state—the apostle Paul even refers to the Roman state as **God's minister**. But the state is God's minister to punish **violations of civil and criminal law**, not **religious law**. Romans 13:1-10 explicitly affirms that God established the state to preserve the **civil order of society**. When Pilate claimed that he had the power to free Jesus, He told him 'you would have no power over me if it had not been given to you from above'.

## Jesus and the Sword

The evidence shows that Jesus **refused to allow** His followers (the incipient church of that age) to use the **sword of force to defend** His kingdom.

When the **temple guard** came to arrest Jesus in the Garden of Gethsemane, **Peter** drew his sword and cut off the high priest servant's ear. Peter, who was purportedly the **first Pope**, was using the **temporal** sword of force to defend His Master's **spiritual** kingdom. During the 1260 years, the papacy acted in a similar way by burning heretics and by organizing **the crusades** to defend and recover the holy sites that had been lost to the Muslims.

Did Jesus **encourage Peter's behavior**? Did he **commend Peter** for using the **literal sword to defend** His spiritual kingdom? Did He **rebuke** His other disciples for not following Peter's 'laudable' example? Absolutely not! Jesus soundly rebuked Peter in words strikingly similar to those of **Revelation 13:10**:

*"But Jesus said to him, 'Put your sword in its place, for all who **take the sword** will **perish by the sword**.'" (Matthew 26:52)*

A **few hours later** when Pilate asked Jesus if He was a king, Jesus promptly replied:

*"My kingdom is **not of this world**. If My kingdom were of this world, My **servants would fight**, so that I should not be delivered to the Jews; but now My kingdom is **not from here**." (John 18:36)*

Thus Jesus recognized the legitimate existence of two kingdoms each with its own sword and **refused to allow** His followers to employ the **temporal sword** to establish or to defend His spiritual kingdom.

## How did the Papacy Obtain the Sword?

Between the year **300 AD** and the year **476 AD** hordes of **barbarian tribes** from the north invaded and carved up the Roman Empire. **Romulus Augustulus**, the last emperor of the Western Roman Empire was deposed in the year **476 AD**. Without an emperor, the Empire was thrown into turmoil and confusion. These barbarian incursions into the Roman Empire turned it **upside down** and left it **without a civil ruler** who could preserve law and order. In the midst of this **chaotic situation**, the **Bishop of Rome** was **enticed** to take the reins of civil power and bring about civil order in the empire. As a result, the bishop of Rome assumed a new role—he was not only the **spiritual leader** of the church but also became the **temporal ruler** of the state.

## Cardinal Manning

Cardinal **Henry Edward Manning** described the manner in which the Roman Pontiff originally gained civil power in the Roman Empire. When the barbarians invaded the Roman Empire and tore it apart Manning explains:

*“Now the **abandonment of Rome** was the **liberation** of the pontiffs. Whatsoever claims to obedience the emperors may have made, and whatsoever compliance the Pontiff may have yielded, the whole previous relation, anomalous, and annulled again and again by the vices and outrages of the emperors, was finally dissolved by a **higher power**. The providence of God permitted a succession of **irruptions**, Gothic, Lombard, and Hungarian, to desolate Italy, and to **efface from it every remnant of the empire**. The pontiffs found themselves **alone**, the **sole fountains of order, peace, law, and safety**. And from the hour of this providential **liberation**, when, by a divine intervention, the **chains fell off** from the hands of the successor of St. Peter, as once before from his own, no sovereign has ever reigned in Rome except the Vicar of Jesus Christ.”* (Henry Edward Manning, The Temporal Power of the Vicar of Jesus Christ, Preface, pp. xxviii, xxix. London: Burns and Lambert, 1862)

**Manning** further explains:

*“It [the papacy] waited until such a time as God should break its **bonds** asunder, and **should liberate it from subjection to civil powers**, and **enthroned it** in the possession of a **temporal sovereignty** of its own.”* Henry Edward Manning, The Temporal Power of the Vicar of Jesus Christ (London: Burns & Lambert, second edition, 1862), pp. 11-13.

What Manning is saying is that when the civil power of Rome was removed by the barbarians, the **bishop of Rome filled the vacuum** and became the arbiter in **civil affairs** as well as in **religious**. Remarkably, Manning describes this assumption of civil power by the bishop of Rome with expressions such as “**breaking bonds asunder**”, and “**chains falling off**”, terminology that is reminiscent of 2 Thessalonians 2 to which we must now turn. When the Empire fell apart and Constantine moved the see of the empire to Constantinople, the dragon had given the beast ‘*his power, his throne and great authority*’ (Revelation 13:2)

## Paul’s Mysterious ‘Restrainer’

In cryptic language, the **apostle Paul** had already referred to the moment when the civil power of the Roman Empire would be given over to papal Rome. In 2 Thessalonians 2:6, 7 the apostle referred to the removal of the mysterious **restrainer** of 2 Thessalonians 2:6, 7:

*“And now you know **what** [**neuter: the civil power of the Roman Empire**] is **restraining**, that he [**the papacy**] may be revealed in his own time. For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only **He** [**masculine: the emperor**] who **now restrains** will do so until He is **taken out of the way.**”*

The early church Fathers were practically unanimous in the opinion that the ‘restrainer’ was a reference to the **Roman Empire** in general and the **emperors** in particular. In verse 5 the apostle refers to **what** was restraining (using the neuter article **to** *katechon*) but in verse 7 he refers to **who** was restraining (using the masculine article **ho** *katechon*). By his use of language, Paul indicates that the church at Thessalonica knew **who** the restrainer was and **what** was restraining. And yet Paul wrote in **veiled, cryptic** language. Why didn’t Paul just come out and write openly that the Roman Empire was the restrainer that would be taken out of the way?

The answer is obvious. If Paul had said this openly the Roman Empire would have had grounds to accuse Paul of **sedition**. So Paul had to be cautious about the way he referred to this matter. Dispensationalists and some Seventh-day Adventists (including the Andrews University Study Bible) describe the restrainer as the **Holy Spirit**. But if this were true, then why would there be any need for Paul to be so cautious? It is clear that Paul could not define the ‘restrainer’ openly. It was not necessary to do so because the Thessalonians knew what he was talking about.

It will be noticed that in Cardinal Manning’s remark, the fall of the Roman Empire led to the ‘liberation’ of the Roman Pontiff. That is to say, before taking over the reins of civil power the Pontiff was **restrained** or ‘in captivity’, so to speak. Thus the fall of the Roman Empire and the removal of the emperor which allowed the papacy to take the reins of civil power is described by Manning as **chains falling off** the hands of the successor of St. Peter. The inevitable conclusion we reach from Manning’s words is that the fall of the empire removed the **restraint** of the secular power from the Bishop of Rome so that he could ascend to civil power.

## **The Ante-Nicene Fathers**

Now let us turn to the writings of the early church Fathers to see how they understood the ‘restrainer’. Let us begin with **Tertullian** (160-240 AD):

*“For the mystery of iniquity doth already work; only he who **now hinders** must hinder, until he be taken out of the way.’ What **obstacle** is there but the **Roman state**, the falling away of which, by being scattered into **ten kingdoms**, shall introduce **Antichrist** upon (its own ruins)? ‘And then shall be revealed the wicked one.’” ‘On the Resurrection of the Flesh,’ chapter 24; **Ante-Nicene Fathers**, vol. 3, p. 563 [New York: Charles Scribner’s Sons, 1908]*



**Tertullian** also wrote:

*“The very end of all things threatening dreadful woes is only **retarded** by the continued existence of the Roman Empire.”* (*‘Apology,’* chapter 32; Ante-Nicene Fathers, Vol. 3, p. 43)

Now notice the words of **Lactantius** (early fourth century):

*“The subject itself declares that the fall and ruin of the world will shortly take place; except that **while the city of Rome remains**, it appears that nothing of this kind is to be feared. But when that capital of the world **shall have fallen**, and shall have begun to be a street, which the Sibyls say shall come to pass, who can doubt that the end has now arrived to the affairs of men and the whole world? It is that city, that only, which **still sustains all things**.”* (*‘The Divine Institutes,’* book 7, chapter 25; Ante-Nicene Fathers, vol. 7, p. 220)

**Cyril of Jerusalem** agrees (318-386 AD):

*“But this aforesaid Antichrist is to come when the **times of the Roman Empire shall have been fulfilled**, and the end of the world is drawing near. There shall rise up together **ten kings of the Romans**, reigning in different parts perhaps, but all **about the same time**; and after those an eleventh, the Antichrist, who by his magical craft shall **seize upon the Roman power**; and of the kings who reigned before him, ‘three he shall humble,’ and the remaining seven he shall keep in subjection to himself.”* (*‘Catechetical Lectures’* Section 15, on II Thessalonians 2:4; Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, vol. 7, p. 108 [New York: The Christian Literature Company, 1895])

Next we present the testimony of **Ambrose** (died in 398 AD):

*“**After the falling or decay** of the Roman Empire, Antichrist shall appear.”* (Quoted in, Bishop Thomas Newton, Dissertations on the Prophecies, p. 463 [London: B. Blake, 1840])

Next in line is **Chrysostom** (died in 407 AD):

*“When the **Roman Empire is taken out of the way**, then he [**the Antichrist**] shall come. And naturally. For as long as the fear of this empire lasts, no one will willingly exalt himself, but **when that is dissolved**, he will attack the anarchy, and endeavor to seize upon the government **both** of man and of God.”* (*‘Homily IV on 2 Thessalonians 2:6-9,’* Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers’, vol. XIII, p. 389 [New York: Charles Scribner’s and Sons, 1905])

Finally we will quote from **Jerome** (died 420 AD):

*“He that letteth **is taken** out of the way, and yet we do not realize that Antichrist is near.”* (Letter to Ageruchia, written about 409 A. D. Letter 123, section 16; Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, vol. VI, p. 236 [New York: Charles Scribner’s Sons, 1912]).

## **Other Roman Catholic Theologians**

Scores of **church historians** have confirmed the assessment of the church fathers:

*“Long ages ago, when Rome through the **neglect of the Western emperors** was left to the mercy of the **barbarous hordes**, the Romans **turned to one figure** for aid and protection, and **asked him to rule them**; and thus, in this simple manner, the best title of all to kingly right, commenced the **temporal sovereignty of the popes**. And meekly stepping to the **throne of Caesar**, the Vicar of Christ **took up the scepter** to which the emperors and kings of Europe were to **bow in reverence** through so many ages.”* James P. Conroy, American Catholic Quarterly Review, April, 1911.

*“Under the **Roman Empire [Stage #1]** the popes had **no temporal powers**. But when the Roman Empire had **disintegrated** and its place had been taken by a number of rude, barbarous kingdoms **[Stage #2]**, the **Roman Catholic Church** not only became independent of the states in religious affairs but **dominated secular affairs** as well **[Stage #3]**.”* Carl Conrad Eckhardt, The Papacy and World Affairs (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1937), p. 1

Church historian, **R. W. Southern** further explains the relationship between the papacy and the state during the Middle Ages:

*“During the **whole medieval period** there was **in Rome a single spiritual and temporal authority [the papacy]** exercising powers which in the end exceeded those that had ever lain within the grasp of the Roman emperor.”* (R. W. Southern, Western Society and the Church in the Middle Ages, volume 2), pp. 24-25

Church historian **John N. Figgis** adds his testimony:

*“[In] the Middle Ages the church was not a State, **it was the State**; or rather, the civil authority (for a separate society was not recognized), was merely **the police department of the Church**.”* John N. Figgis, From Gerson to Grotius, p. 4

This idea of the church ruling in **temporal** as well as in **spiritual** affairs was fleshed out in **1302** when Pope **Boniface VIII** wrote a significant bull (personal letter) titled **Unam Sanctam**.

*“We are informed by the texts of the gospels that in this **[Roman Catholic] Church** and in its power are **two swords**; namely, the **spiritual** and the **temporal**. **Both, therefore, are in the***

**power of the Church**, that is to say, the spiritual and the material sword, but the former [**the spiritual**] is to be administered for the Church but the latter [**the temporal**] by the Church; the former in the hands of the **priest**; the latter by the hands of **kings and soldiers**, but at the **will and sufferance of the priest**.”

**Ellen G. White** has some interesting statements regarding the restrainer both in history and in prophecy:

“The spirit of compromise and conformity [of the early Christian church] was **restrained** for a time by the fierce persecutions which the church endured under **paganism** [**in the times of Ellen White ‘paganism’ meant the Roman Empire**]. But as **persecution ceased**, and Christianity **entered the courts and palaces of kings**, she laid aside the humble simplicity of Christ and His apostles for the pomp and pride of pagan priests and rulers; and in place of the requirements of God, she substituted human theories and traditions.” GC, p. 49. Bold is mine.

With regards to the future, Ellen White predicted that the restraint that was placed on the papacy by the secular powers in 1798 will be removed and the papacy will regain her power:

“Let the **restraints** now **imposed** by **secular governments** be **removed** and Rome be **reinstated** in her former power, and there would speedily be a **revival** of her tyranny and persecution.” GC, p. 564. Bold is mine.

“The vast empire of Rome **crumbled to pieces**, and **from its ruins** rose that mighty power, the Roman Catholic Church. This church boasts of her infallibility and her hereditary religion.” (Ellen G. White, Manuscript Releases, volume 1, p. 50)

## **The Deadly Wound and the Captivity**

**Revelation 20** helps us understand what it means for the man of sin to be **bound/unbound** or **restrained/unrestrained**. When Satan was able to influence the **kings of the earth** to accomplish his purposes he was free and unbound. But when the kings are all dead, he is bound or in captivity. This is the chain with which Satan is bound during the 1,000 years. After the millennium when the kings resurrect, Satan’s wound will be healed and he will be released from his prison for a short time.

Thus we are to understand the captivity of the beast in Revelation 13:10. When the beast could use the **sword of kings** to accomplish its purposes it was free but when the kings **removed the sword**, it was in captivity. Thus, the captivity mentioned in Revelation 13:10 does not refer **merely** to Pope Pius VI being taken captive in 1798 but rather the **entire system** that he represented.

Now that we know that the sword of Revelation 13:10 represents the attempt of the church to use the **punitive power** of the state to enforce **religious laws**, we must seek to discover what is meant by the **deadly wound**.

Revelation 13:10 states explicitly that the **very sword** that the papacy used to kill God's people (Daniel 7:25; Revelation 13:5) would be used by the state to give the papacy its deadly wound. This means that in 1798 the secular power would use its sword to give the papacy a deadly wound. Stated another way, the state would remove the power of the sword from the papacy!

A careful study of Revelation 13:10 reveals that the deadly wound does not refer primarily to the **confiscation of the territories** of the Roman Catholic Church. Neither is it the **elimination of the Roman Catholic Church** as a church, because that has never happened. Even after Pope Pius VI was taken prisoner, the Roman Catholic churches continued functioning as churches.

The deadly wound was given to the papacy when the sword of the state that the papacy had used to persecute God's people **turned against it**. The deadly wound, then, was the **removal of the sword of the state** from the hand of the papacy. This led to papacy **into captivity** because it could no longer use the power of the state to enforce its practices and dogmas. It was **forced into inactivity** by the very power that had brought it into activity.

The year **1798** marked the **climax of the French Revolution** that began in **1789**. The Revolution was an uprising against both **kingly power** and **priestly intolerance**. On **February 12, 1798** **General Berthier** entered Vatican City, deposed Pope Pius VI, removed his triple crown, informed him that his power was at an end, and took him prisoner to France where he **died in exile** in 1799. The emperor, **Napoleon Bonaparte**, had already given orders that could not be elected.

### **Historians Describe the Deadly Wound**

The way in which **historians describe** the deadly wound of 1798 is very telling. Some of them employ **language very similar** to that of Revelation 13. Let's take a few examples.

*"The papacy was **extinct; not a vestige of its existence remained**; and among all the Roman Catholic powers **not a finger was stirred** in its defense [because it no longer had the support of the state]. The Eternal City had no longer prince or pontiff; its bishop was a **dying captive** in foreign lands; and the decree was already announced that **no successor** would be allowed in its place." George Trevor, Rome: From the Fall of the Western Empire pp. 439, 440*

*“No wonder that half of Europe thought Napoleon’s veto would be obeyed, and that with the Pope **the Papacy was dead.**” (Joseph Rickaby, Lectures on the History of Religion, ‘The Modern Papacy,’ volume 3, p. 1*

*“Multitudes imagined that **the papacy** was **at the point of death** and asked, would Pius VI be the last pontiff, and if the close of the eighteenth century would be signaled by the **fall of the papal dynasty.**” T. H. Gill, The Papal Drama, book 10*

*“. . . the Papacy had suffered its deepest humiliation . . . [and] **appeared to be annihilated** . . . The Revolution also dealt it the **wound** which, it seemed **did not want to heal** until **far into the twentieth century.**” (M. Weitlauff, quoted in, Frank B. Holbrook, Symposium on Revelation, volume 2 (Hagerstown, Maryland: Review and Herald, 1992), p. 337*

## **The Eldest Daughter**

One can’t help but sense the **irony** of what took place in 1798. **France is known as the eldest daughter** of the papacy because **Clovis, king of the Franks,** was the first to officially give temporal power to the papacy in the year **508** AD. Strikingly, the very nation that had first given the papacy the sword, now **turned against her mother** giving her the deadly wound.

In the chapter on the French Revolution, Ellen White quoted the church historian **Wylie** concerning the meaning of the ‘sword’:

*“Thus Rome succeeded in **arraying France against** the Reformation. It was to uphold the throne, preserve the nobles, and maintain the laws, that the **sword of persecution** was **first unsheathed in France.**” GC, p. 277*

**Luther** certainly understood the **meaning of the sword.** When he was about to depart from the Wartburg back to Wittenberg he spoke the following words to the **Elector of Saxony:**

*“No **secular sword** can advance this cause; God must do all, without the aid or co-operation of man. He who has most faith is the most availing defense.” GC, p. 188*

And **Ellen White** also understood that the ‘sword’ referred to the secular power:

*“Then he [**Saul of Tarsus**] was entrusted with the **sword of secular power,** he was the agent of the Sanhedrim, the **Jewish inquisitor,** the **exterminator of heretics,** seeking victims to imprison, to scourge, or to stone.”*

## **A Catastrophic Event**

The French Revolution was a **catastrophic event** for the papacy. In the aftermath of the Revolution **country after country in the western world** followed the example of France, and the United States establishing **democratic governments** that proclaimed their **emancipation** from the papacy's dominion.

The helplessness of the papacy is revealed in a book written by Cardinal **Edward Manning** and published in **1862** where he rebukes the nations of Europe for forsaking the papacy:

*"See this Catholic Church, this Church of God, feeble and weak, rejected even by the **very nations called Catholic**. There is Catholic **France**, and Catholic **Germany**, and Catholic **Italy** **giving up** this exploded figment of the **temporal power** of the Vicar of Jesus Christ.' And so, because the Church **seems weak**, and the Vicar of the Son of God is renewing the Passion of his Master upon earth, therefore we are scandalized, therefore we **turn our faces from him**." (The Temporal Power of the Vicar of Jesus Christ, pp. 140, 141, emphasis mine)*

Remarks **Ranko Stefanovic** regarding the deadly wound:

*"The events of the **French Revolution** (including the demise of the papacy under Napoleon) that impacted politics and religious liberty are probably the most apparent manifestation of the 'mortal wound.' But for all practical purposes, it was this long process of political, social, and religious transformation that caused the 'mortal wound' and brought the sea beast to the **'is not'** period (cf. Rev. 17:11)." Ranko Stefanovic, Revelation of Jesus Christ, pp. 412, 413*

## **The Healing of the Wound**

But while the Revolution dealt the papacy a devastating deathblow, prophecy foretells that she will arise from her **deathbed** far **more powerful** and despotic than in the past.

Revelation 13:3 describes the **healing** of the deadly wound:

*"And I saw one of his heads as if it had been **mortally wounded**, and his deadly wound was **healed** and all the world marveled and followed the beast."*

What is the **healing** of the papacy's deadly wound? Is it primarily the restoration of her **confiscated territory** by the Italian government? Is it the recovery of her **ecclesiastical power**? Not really. Only by knowing what is meant by the deadly wound can we understand what is meant by its healing.

We must understand that 'papacy' is a **code word** for a **religious-political system that employs the power of the state** to compel people to obey its dictates. Expressed another way, the papacy is not merely a church but an amalgamation of church and state. It is a political power that presents before the world a religious face. With its **religious face** it

deceives the multitudes and with its **political seat** it enters the great political power centers of the world.

If the **deadly wound** means that in 1798 the state turned against the papacy and took away the sword, then the **healing of the wound** must mean that the state will once more support her and give the **sword back**.

### **Was the Deadly Wound Healed in 1801?**

It is a little known fact in Adventist circles that a new Pope was elected just three and a half years after the deadly wound was given. Not only was a **new Pope elected**, but he was also allowed to **retain possession** of his Italian principality. Says historian Arthur Robert Pennington:

*“He [Napoleon] felt that, as the large majority of the inhabitants of France knew no other form of faith than Romanism, it must become the **established religion of the country**. Accordingly we find that he now began negotiations with the Pope, which issued in a Concordat in July 1801, whereby the Roman Catholic religion was once more **established in France**. He also left Pius in **possession of his Italian principality**.” Arthur Robert Pennington, *Epochs of the Papacy*, pp. 450, 452.*

So, if a new Pope was elected and allowed to retain his principality, was the deadly wound healed in 1801? There are strong reasons to believe that it was not. What are they?

**First**, as we shall see in our next study, prophecy clearly indicates that the **United States** will be the power that will restore the sword to the papacy, **not France**.

**Secondly**, even though the papacy retained its territory and principality, the nations of **Europe** that had supported her in the past **wanted nothing to do** with her.

**Third**, the concordat of 1801, did not lead the nations of Europe to command all nations to worship the beast, or to erect an **image** to it or to impose its **mark**.

Finally, the power of the papacy was **severely restricted** by the French government. The state **elected the bishops** and **paid the clergy** and the clergy were required to **swear an oath** of allegiance to the state.

This leads us to conclude that the recovery of **spiritual dominion** and geographical **territory** does not necessarily mean that the deadly wound was healed.

### **The Wound of 1870**

Another little known fact in Adventist circles is that the papacy received a **further wound** on **September 20, 1870** when King **Victor Emmanuel II** confiscated the **Papal States** and united Italy. As a result the papacy **lost most of its territory** (except for a handful of buildings in Vatican City). In protest, **Pope Pius IX** and his successors declared themselves prisoners of the Vatican and as a result no Pope left Vatican City for the **next 59 years**.

During his pontificate of **46 years Pope Pius IX** further alienated and angered the governments of western Europe and the United States by proclaiming the ***Dogma of the Immaculate Conception*** [1854] by publishing his ***Syllabus of Errors*** where he railed against democratic governments and civil and religious liberty [1864] and by calling **Vatican Council I** where the *Dogma of Papal Infallibility* [1870] was proclaimed. This takes us to the year 1929.

### **Was the Deadly Wound Healed in 1929?**

Adventist writers and evangelists have made much of the year **1929** when the government of Italy signed a concordat with the Vatican thus healing the wound that had been inflicted by the Italian government in **1870**. But was the deadly wound of **1798** healed in that year? There are several **convincing reasons** why we cannot say that the wound was healed in 1929. Let's examine them.

**First**, the concordat that was signed between the papacy and the Italian government in 1929 had to do with the wound the papacy received in **1870** and not the one it received in **1798**.

**Second**, the prophecy of Revelation 13:11-18 is clear that the **United States, not Italy**, would be the nation to bring about the healing of the wound.

Even **more significantly**, in the aftermath of 1929 the **whole world did not wonder** after the papacy, an **image** was not made of and to it, and its **mark** was not enforced on pain of death.

Where, then, did Adventists get the idea that the wound was healed in 1929? The answer is found in an article that appeared in the **San Francisco Chronicle** the very day that the 1929 Concordat was signed.

The headline on the front-page of the newspaper read:

***"VATICAN AGAIN AT PEACE WITH ITALY AFTER LONG QUARREL"***

*In smaller lettering appeared the words: "**Heal Wound** of Many Years."*

The part of the article that was most significant to Adventists was this:



*“The Roman question tonight was a thing of the past and the Vatican was at peace with Italy. The formal accomplishment of this today was the exchange of signatures in the historic Palace of St. John Lateran by two noteworthy plenipotentiaries, Cardinal Gasparri for Pope Pius XI and Premier Mussolini for King Victor Emmanuel III.”*

*“In affixing the autographs to the memorable document, **healing the wound** which has festered **since 1870 [not since 1798]**, extreme cordiality was displayed on both sides. ”The San Francisco Chronicle, February 11, 1929, p. 1*

The *New York Times* reported on this important event:

*“The Pope is again an **independent sovereign ruler**, as he was throughout the middle Ages, though his temporal realm, established today, is the most microscopic independent State in the world, and probably the smallest in all history.” The New York Times, Tuesday, February 12, 1929*

The article in the *San Francisco Chronicle* makes it abundantly clear that the wound that was healed in 1929 was the one given to the papacy in 1870 and **not the one** she received in 1798.

Don't get me wrong. What happened in 1929 was very significant. The recovery of **temporal sovereignty** by the papacy was an important occurrence. We might go so far as to say that the wounds of the papacy **began** to heal in that year. But the wound was **not healed** in that year.

### **Why Hasn't the Mortal Wound Healed Yet?**

The late **Malachi Martin** the Jesuit exorcist of the Roman Catholic Church and author of the best-selling book, *The Keys of this Blood*, said in **1986**:

*“[For] **fifteen hundred years** and more, Rome had kept as strong a hand as possible in each local community around the wide world . . . By and large, and admitting some exceptions, that had been the Roman view until **two hundred years of inactivity** had been **imposed** upon the papacy **by the major secular powers of the world.**” Quoted in Christianity Today (November 21, 1986), p. 26.*

**Ellen White** concurred with Martin and predicted that when the restraints of the secular powers would be removed the papacy's tyranny and persecution would be **revived**:

*“Let the **restraints** now imposed by **secular governments** be removed and Rome be **reinstated** in her former power, and there would speedily be a **revival** of her tyranny and persecution.” GC, p. 564*

The reason why the mortal wound has **not yet healed** is because the secular governments of the world have **not allowed the papacy to ride on them once again**. So to speak, the **chains that fell off the hands** of the papacy when the civil power of the Roman Empire fell in the **third and fourth centuries** were slapped back on her hands in 1798.

In a remarkable statement **John W. Robbins**, a Reformed theologian, quotes Ayn Rand:

*“The Catholic Church has never given up the hope to **re-establish** [you cannot reestablish something that did not exist before] the medieval **union of church and state**, with a **global state** and a **global theocracy** as its ultimate goal.’ The **Roman Church-State** is a **hybrid—a monster** of **ecclesiastical and political** power. Its political thought is totalitarian, and whenever it has had the opportunity to apply its principles, the result has been **bloody repression**. If, during the last 30 years, it has softened its assertions of full, supreme, and irresponsible power, and has murdered fewer people than before, such changes in behavior are not due to a change in its ideas, but to **a change in its circumstances** [the secular governments keep her at arms’ length] . . . The **Roman Church-State** in the twentieth century, however, is an institution **recovering from a mortal wound**. If and when it **regains** [so it must have lost it] its full power and authority, it will impose a regime more sinister than any the planet has yet seen [the deadly wound will be healed].” John W. Robbins, Ecclesiastical Megalomania, p. 195.*

Evangelical writer **Dave Hunt** adds:

*“Why do world leaders want to **get into bed** with the Vatican? [Notice the fornication metaphor] The heads of state in today’s world all recognize that the Pope wields a power that in many ways is **even greater than their own**. It is not only Catholicism’s 900 million subjects and enormous wealth that cause the world’s most powerful governments to cultivate friendly relations with the Roman Catholic Church; it is because Vatican City’s citizens are **found in great numbers in nearly every country**. They constitute an **international network** that reaches into the inside circles of the world’s **power centers**.” (Dave Hunt, Global Peace, p. 116)*

In his book **The Keys of this Blood**, Malachi Martin described the competition for global control among **three systems**: capitalism, communism and Roman Catholicism:

*“There is one great similarity shared by all three of these globalist competitors. Each one has in mind a particular grand design for **one world governance** . . . Their **geopolitical** competition is about which of the three will **form, dominate and run** the **world system** that will **replace** the decaying nation system.” (Malachi Martin, The Keys of this Blood, p. 18)*

Martin harbors **no doubts** about who will win in this tooth and nail competition—the Roman Catholic papacy. And Martin describes in **chilling words** what will happen when the papacy resurrects from its deadly wound:

*“No holds barred because, once the competition has been decided, the world and all that’s in it—our way of life as **individuals** and as **citizens** of the nations; our **families** and our jobs; our trade and commerce and money; our **educational systems** and our **religions** and our **cultures**; even the **badges of our national identity**, which most of us have always taken for granted—all will have been **powerfully and radically altered forever**. No one can be exempted from its effects. No sector of our lives will remain untouched . . . Nobody who is acquainted with the plans of these three rivals has any doubt but that **only one of them can win**.”* Malachi Martin, *The Keys of This Blood*, p. 16

And what is the **time frame** for this geopolitical New World Order under the leadership of the Roman Catholic papacy?

*“As to the time factor involved, those of us who are **under seventy** will see at least the basic structures of the **new world government** installed. Those of us **under forty** will surely live under its **legislative, executive and judiciary authority and control**.”* Malachi Martin, *The Keys of this Blood*, pp. 15-16.

The **crucial question** is this: **How** will the papacy **regain the power of the sword** that it lost over two hundred years ago? Which nation in its right mind will **loosen the chains** that have restrained this system for the **last two centuries**? Even more pointedly, **what nation** in the world would be **foolish enough** to place the sword once again in the hand of such a despotic power? Prophecy reveals that the sword of civil power will be restored to the papacy with the aid of the **most unlikely of nations**.





## “The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”

by Pastor Stephen Bohr

# LESSON #6 – REVELATION’S LAND BEAST

### Revelation 13:11-18

*“Then [when the first beast received its deadly wound] I saw another beast coming up [used in Matthew 13:7 of a plant just sprouting] out of the earth [in a different place than the first beasts], and he had two horns like a lamb [used as a symbol of Christ 28 times in Revelation] and spoke like a dragon [symbol of Satan working through Rome]. 12 And he exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence [at the first beast’s commissioning], and causes [by the use of compulsion] the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast whose deadly wound was healed. 13 He [the land beast] performs great signs, so that he even makes fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men [reminiscent of the stories of Elijah and Pentecost]. 14 And he deceives those who dwell on the earth by those signs which he was granted to do in the sight of [at the commissioning of] the beast, telling those [NIV: ‘he ordered them’] who dwell on the earth to make an image to [‘in honor of’ in the NIV: dative case] the beast who was wounded by the sword and lived. 15 He [the first beast in the light of Ellen White’s comment in Spaulding-Magan, pp. 1, 2] was granted power to give breath to the image of [a replica: genitive case] the beast, that the image of [a replica: genitive case] the beast should both speak [through its legislative and judicial authority] and cause [uses compulsion] as many as would not worship the image of [a replica: genitive case] the beast to be killed. 16 He causes [NIV: ‘forced everyone] all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark [to be studied in a later lecture] on their right hand [out of convenience] or on their foreheads [out of conviction] 17 and that no one may buy or sell except one who has the mark or the name [Vicarius Filii Dei] of the beast, or the number of his name [666].” 18 Here is wisdom. Let him who has understanding calculate [psephizo: see Luke 14:28] the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man: His number is 666.”*

## The Chronology of Revelation 12 and 13

The chronological sequence of Revelation 12:13-17 concludes with three distinct stages:

- The first is the period is when the dragon persecuted the woman during the 1260 year period (verses 13-15)
- The second stage is the period when the earth helped the woman by swallowing up the waters of persecution (verse 16)
- The third stage is when the dragon will be enraged against the woman and will go out to war against the final remnant of her seed (verse 17)

The historical sequence in Revelation 13 is identical:

- The first stage is the period of 42 months during which the beast persecuted the saints (Revelation 13:1-10)
- The second stage is when the beast rises from the earth [the territory of 12:16] with the two horns like a lamb (Revelation 13:11)
- The third stage is when the beast with the lamblike horns ends up speaking like a dragon (Revelation 13:12-18)

### Exegetical Remarks

The word 'earth' in Revelation 13:11-18 has a restricted meaning. In context, it applies primarily to the geographical territory of the United States as seen by the historical sequence of Revelation 12:13-17.

The expression 'coming up' is used in Matthew 13:7 to describe weeds that sprout up from the earth.

As we shall see later on in this study, the dragon is a symbol of Satan working through the instrumentality of Rome. The dragon in the book of Revelation is always identified with the different stages of Rome. Rome tried to kill Jesus, Papal Rome attempted to destroy the saints during the 1260 years and the United States acting as the agent of a resurrected Papal Rome will attempt to destroy the final remnant.

The word 'lamb' is used 29 times in the book of Revelation and in 28 of those 29 times it refers indisputably to Jesus Christ. As we shall see, it is also related to Jesus Christ in Revelation 13:11.

The expression '*and spoke like a dragon*' can legitimately be translated in two different yet complementary ways. It can be translated 'and it spoke like a dragon' or 'but it spoke like a dragon.' The first translation would indicate that the land beast has two horns like a lamb

while at the **same time** it speaks like a dragon. The second translation indicates **a contrast** between the two horns and the voice of the dragon: The land beast had two horns like a lamb **but** it contradicted what the horns represent by speaking like a dragon.

It bears noting that the land beast does everything to honor and **impress the first beast**.

- We are told that the land beast '*exercises **all the authority** of the first beast in its presence,*' (verse 12)
- The land beast with lamblike horns '*causes the earth and those who dwell in it to **worship the first beast***' (verse 12)
- The land beast performs signs '***in the sight of the beast***' (verse 14).
- The land beast makes an image **of** the first beast (3 times in verse 15) **in its honor** (verse 14).
- The land beast enforces the **mark** of the first beast (verses 16, 17)
- The land beast gives a **death decree** against those who refuse to worship the **image** of the first beast (verse 15).

According to the best lexicons, the expression '*in the sight of the beast*' means '*at the commissioning of*' the first beast. Thus, this second beast is the first beast's agent or puppet.

The word '**cause**' that is used throughout the passage indicates that this land beast will **use force to compel** those who dwell on the earth to render honor to the first beast. That is to say, this beast will **not persuade** people to worship the beast but rather will **compel them** to do so. Though the word *poieo* generally means simply '*to make*', in this context it carries the nuance of force. The word is used in a similar way in **Revelation 3:9** where we are told that God will **make** (compel) the Synagogue of Satan to worship before the feet of the saints.

The sign of the land beast **bringing fire down** from heaven is reminiscent of the experience of **Elijah** when he brought fire down from heaven on Mt. Carmel. In other words, the story of Elijah must be studied carefully as one of the backgrounds to this prophecy. The fire from heaven also brings to mind the tongues of fire that fell on the Day of Pentecost.

Another clear backdrop behind the story of the beast, his image, his mark and the number 666 is found in the story of **Daniel 3**.

The word '**image**' [*eikon*] in the passage refers to a **likeness** or a **reflection** of someone or something. It is used in **Matthew 22:20** to describe the image of Caesar on the Roman denarius. It is also used to describe idolatrous images of the gods made by the pagans and the word also describes Jesus as the image or reflection of the invisible God.

## The Beast from the Earth

In Revelation 13:11 we find a description of a two-horned beast that rises from the earth that will **compel** the entire world to **worship** the beast that was **wounded with the sword**:

In **Revelation 13:11** we find a description of this land beast:

*“Then I saw another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had **two horns** like a **lamb** and spoke like a **dragon**.”*

The text clearly indicates that it is the destiny of this second beast to help the first beast recover its power. Whereas the previous beasts conquered the beasts that preceded them, this beast will release the first beast from its captivity and restore to it the power of the sword. The land beast will exercise **the authority** of the first beast on **its behalf**, compel all to **worship** it, set up an **image** in its honor and impose its **mark**. Everything this land beast does is in the **presence of the first beast**. This expression is translated ‘*on its behalf*’ in the NIV and *The Message* paraphrase has it that this beast ‘*was a puppet of the first Beast.*’ This two-horned beast will be the **sword in the hand** of the papacy and we are told that it will threaten to kill with that sword **anyone who dissents**:

### **Revelation 13:15:**

*“He was granted power to give breath to the **image of the beast**, that the image of the beast should both speak and **cause** as many as would not worship the image of the beast **to be killed**.”* (Revelation 13:15)

What’s remarkable about this beast is its **split personality**. While it has two horns like a lamb **it simultaneously** speaks like a dragon. Notably, the two horns are **not broken off** before it begins to speak like a dragon. It speaks like a dragon **while it still continues** to have the two lamblike horns on its head. The character of this beast is reminiscent of the split personality manifested by Dr. Jekyll (good) and Mr. Hyde (evil).

## Introductory Statements in Revelation

It is important to realize that Revelation 13:11 is the **summary statement** of the **entire career** of the earth beast. It is customary in Revelation for the beginning and ending points of a prophetic sequence to be summarized at the very inception of the prophecy (Rev. 3:21, Rev. 8:1-5; 11:19; Rev. 15:1). This prophecy does not mean that the land beast acts simultaneously like a lamb and a dragon at the **very beginning** of its career!! When this beast rises from the earth it has two horns like a lamb and only later on, while it still has the horns like the lamb, it will speak like a dragon.



What is meant by the **two lamblike horns** and the voice of the dragon? Let's begin by identifying the meaning of the dragon symbolism in the book of Revelation.

### **Three Stages of the Dragon in Revelation 12 and 13**

Even a cursory study of Revelation 12 and 13 indicates the dragon is the **stealth protagonist** of these chapters. The dragon stands in the **background** of the different historical stages that are described in these chapters.

In the book of Revelation the dragon primarily represents **Satan** (Revelation 12:7-9) but it also represents Satan working through the instrumentality of **Rome** in its various stages. Thus it is that the beast that rises from the earth and speaks like a dragon is not only a spokesman for **Satan** but also for **Rome**.

This can be seen clearly by a comparison of Daniel 7:25 and Revelation 12:14. In Daniel 7:25 we are told that the **little horn** persecuted the **saints** for **1260 years**. The little horn is clearly a symbol of **papal Rome**. But in Revelation 12:14 we are informed that the **dragon** persecuted the **woman** for **1260 years**. A comparison of these two verses leads us to the inevitable conclusion that the dragon persecuted the church through the instrumentality of papal Rome. In Revelation 12 and 13 the dragon persecutes during **three stages**:

#### **Dragon Stage #1:**

- It was **Satan** who stood next to the woman to **devour her child** as soon as He was born. But Satan operated through the instrumentality of **Herod**, a ruler of the **Roman Empire**. Satan also used the power of Rome to **condemn Jesus** to death (Revelation 12:3 [Daniel 7:23] Matthew 2:16).

#### **Dragon Stage #2:**

- When the Roman Empire disintegrated, it gave its **seat**, its **power** and its **great authority** to the beast (Revelation 13:2) and then the beast persecuted the woman for 1260 years. Thus the papacy continued to exercise the powers of the dragon—Satan and Rome.

#### **Dragon Stage #3:**

- Revelation 13:11 informs us that the beast from the earth will speak like a dragon. Thus the land beast will not only be a spokesman for Satan but also **Satan working through Rome**. And so, the **dragon**, the **sea beast** and the **land beast** are all agents of Satan operating through **Rome**.

## Summary of Revelation 12

**Stage #1:** It was the dragon—Satan through pagan Rome—that **attempted to kill the male child** (Revelation 12:1-5).

**Stage #2:** It was the dragon—Satan through papal Rome—who **persecuted the woman for 1260 years** after the child ascended to heaven (Revelation 12:5, 6, 13-15).

**Stage #3:** It **will be the dragon**—Satan through resurrected papal Rome with the aid of the United States—who will persecute the remnant of the woman's seed when the deadly wound is healed (Revelation 12:17).

This is the reason why Revelation 13:4 affirms that the world will not only **worship the beast** but it will also **worship the dragon** from whom the beast received its power, its throne and great authority! Ellen White made a very interesting remark about the Papacy having a **Roman element**:

*"She [the Papacy] is silently growing into power. Her doctrines are exerting their influence in **legislative halls**, in the churches, and in the hearts of men. She is piling up her lofty and massive structures in the secret recesses of which her former persecutions will be repeated. **Stealthily** and **unsuspectedly** she is strengthening her forces to further her own ends when the time shall come for her to **strike**. All that she desires is vantage ground, and this is already being given her. We shall soon see and shall feel what the purpose of the **Roman element** is. Whoever shall believe and obey the word of God will thereby incur reproach and persecution."*  
GC, p. 581

### Characteristics of the Land Beast

**Characteristic #1:** It is universally agreed among students of apocalyptic prophecy that **beasts** represent **kingdoms** or **nations**. In the book of Daniel, the lion, the bear, the leopard, the dragon, the ram and the he-goat all represent **nations** or empires.

The noted Bible commentator, **Adam Clarke** wisely remarked about this lamb-horned beast:

*"As a beast has already been shown to be the **symbol of a kingdom** or empire, the rising up of this second beast must consequently represent the rising up of **another empire**."*

**Characteristic #2:** The **Historical flow** of Daniel 7 and Revelation 13:1-10 **reveals the time** when the beast from the earth would rise to power:

- Lion: Babylon (605-539 BC)
- Bear: Medes and Persians (539-331 BC)

- Leopard: Greece (331-168 BC)
- Dragon: Rome (168 BC-476 AD)
- Ten Horns: Divided Rome (476 AD)
- Little horn and Sea Beast: Papal Rome during its 1260-year stage (538-1798 AD)
- Deadly wound stage from 1798 till the present (secular governments restrain)
- **Beast from the earth** ratified its Declaration of Independence in 1776, its Constitution in 1787 and its Bill of Rights in 1791 AD
- Yet to occur: The deadly **wound will be healed** by the land beast (secular governments will be influenced to remove the restraint)

**Characteristic #3:** The land beast rose around the time **when** the first beast received its deadly wound and was led into captivity in 1798.

**Revelation 13:10, 11:**

*“He who leads into captivity shall go into captivity; he who kills with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints. **Then** I saw another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb and spoke like a dragon.”*

**Characteristic #4:** The **earth** must represent a **sparsely populated** area because all of the other beasts arose from the sea of multitudes, nations, tongues and peoples (Revelation 17:15; Isaiah 17:12, 13). In Revelation 13:11 there is no reference to **waters, winds** or **savage beasts**. The land beast **did not have to war** against a previous empire.

**Daniel J. Boorstin** (for many years the librarian of Congress) in his **1975 Reith Lectures** in London stated:

*“. . . the **vacancy** of North America [was] to prove to be its peculiar promise to the world. . . **Emptiness** was America’s special fertility.”* Quoted in Signs of the Times, October, 1976, p. 25

**Characteristic #5:** The land beast rose **like a plant in silence** and not in the midst of tumult of nations and war. The expression ‘coming up’ is used in the Parable of the Sower to describe the sprouting of plants:

**Matthew 13:7:**

*“And some fell among thorns, and the thorns **sprang up** and choked them.”*

*“The history of the United States was separated by a beneficent Providence from the wild and cruel history of the rest of the continent, and like a **silent seed** we grew into **an empire**.”* G. A. Townsend, The New World Compared with the Old, quoted in “*Why America Happened*,” Signs of the Times, October 1976, p. 26

**Characteristic #6:** The four beasts of Daniel 7 arose **from the sea** (Daniel 7:2; 13:1, 2). The first two beasts were **Asiatic** powers (Babylon and Medo-Persia). The next two beasts were **European** powers (Greece and Rome). The land beast with lamblike horns could not then rise in **Europe or Asia**. The beast with lamblike horns **rose from the earth** and thus it must have risen in a **different place** than the first four beasts. The fulfillment of prophecy seems to move from **east to west**, so this nation must arise **further west** than the nations of Daniel 7. Notably, the American continent is directly west of Europe.

**Characteristic #7:** The **territory** in which this nation later arose, **provided refuge** for the woman who was persecuted by the sea beast during the **1260 years** (Revelation 12:13-16).

**Characteristic #8:** Whereas the beasts of Daniel 7 ruled in succession, the land beast is **contemporaneous** or **co-existent** with the sea beast but the sea beast is much **older**.

In contrast to the previous beasts, the land beast becomes an **ally** of the first and **helps it recover** its power. Thus the land beast will become the first beast's **enforcer** and help its **wound to heal**. It will force people to worship the beast, the image and to receive the mark.

**Characteristic #9:** Later in its history this nation would grow into a **worldwide superpower economically** (forbidding to buy or sell), **militarily** (enforcing the mark of the beast on pain of death) and **politically** (leading all the nations of the world to worship the first beast).

**Population** of the United States:

- 1701: 260,000
- 1776: 2.8 million
- 1800: 5,236,000
- 1900: 76,212,000
- 1950: 151,325,000
- 2016: Over 340 million

**Characteristic #10:** While the land beast has **two lamblike horns** it will end up speaking like a **dragon**. This characteristic will engage us for the rest of this study.

## **Two Horns: Two Kingdoms Within One Nation**

Seventh-day Adventist interpreters have been accused of being **inconsistent** because they teach that the two lamblike horns in Revelation 13:11 represent two principles upon which the United States was built (civil and religious liberty) while they teach that horns represent **kingdoms** in other parts of Daniel and Revelation (such as the ten horns on the fourth beast of Daniel 7 and the ram and he-goat of Daniel 8)? But we shall find in our study

that there is really no inconsistency at all! As we proceed in our study we will see that the principles of civil and religious liberty are based upon the idea of **two distinguishable and separable kingdoms** within a **single nation**.

**Adam Clarke** shows how consistency demands that the **two horns** of the land beast represent kingdoms:

*“As the seven-headed beast is represented as having ten horns, which signify so many kingdoms leagued together to support the Latin Church, so the beast which rises out of the earth has also two horns, which **must consequently represent two kingdoms**; for if horns of a beast mean kingdoms in one part of the Apocalypse, kingdoms must be intended by this symbol whenever it is used in a similar way in any other part of this book.”*

### **The Background of Daniel 8**

Was Adam Clarke correct? I believe we can prove that he was. The **closest Biblical parallel** to the lamb-horned beast of Revelation 13:11 is the ram of **Daniel 8**. Let's notice verses three and twenty:

*“Then I lifted my eyes and saw, and there, standing beside the river, was a **ram** which had **two horns**, and the two horns were high; but one was higher than the other, and the higher one came up last . . . The ram which you saw, having the two horns--they are the **kings of Media and Persia**.”*

It will be noticed that the ram represents **one nation** that was composed of **two kingdoms**—the Medes and the Persians. The inevitable conclusion is that the two horns like a lamb in Revelation 13:11 symbolize **two kingdoms** that exist side by side within a **single nation**.

### **Why the Horns are Lamblike**

Revelation uses the word 'Lamb' **29 times** and in 28 of those references it refers indisputably to Christ. Does it apply to Christ as well in Revelation 13:11? Ranko Stefanovic answers the question:

*“The symbol of the lamb in Revelation **always** refers to Christ, which suggests that the reference here is not to any lamb but clearly to **the Lamb**. Thus, the appearance of the earth beast is described in Christ-like terms, suggesting a very possible history of this power, with a religious overtone.”* Ranko Stefanovic, Revelation of Jesus Christ, p. 419

The text is clear: The two lamblike horns are in **antithesis** to the **dragon's voice**. The land beast has two horns like a lamb **but** in contrast it speaks like a dragon. Clearly there is a contrast here between the Lamb's horns and the dragon's voice.

It is clear from Revelation 13:11 that the two lamblike horns constitute the **positive or favorable side** of the land beast while the dragon's voice is the **negative or unfavorable side**. The two lamblike horns indicate that while the earth beast **professes** to believe in the two kingdoms that Jesus believed in it **contradicts its profession** in actual practice.

Being that the two horns represent the two kingdoms that Jesus, the Lamb, recognized, the question is: **Which two kingdoms did Jesus**, the lamb, recognize? Before we answer this question, let us summarize what we have studied so far about this beast.

## **Conclusion and Summary**

- The land beast represents a **single nation**.
- The two horns represent the fact that within this single nation **two kingdoms** would coexist side by side.
- The horns are lamblike so they must represent two kingdoms that were **recognized by Jesus, the Lamb of God**.

## **Which Two Kingdoms did Jesus Recognize?**

In order to answer this question, let's turn in our Bibles to **Matthew 22:15-21**

*"Then the Pharisees went and plotted how they might entangle Him in His talk. 16 And they sent to Him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, "Teacher, we know that You are true, and teach the way of God in truth; nor do You care about anyone, for You do not regard the person of men. 17 Tell us, therefore, what do You think? Is it lawful to pay taxes to Caesar, or not?" 18 But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, "Why do you test Me, you hypocrites? 19 Show Me the tax money." So they brought Him a denarius. 20 And He said to them, "Whose image and inscription is this?" 21 They said to Him, "Caesar's." And He said to them, "Render therefore to **Caesar** the things that are Caesar's, and to **God** the things that are God's."*

Clearly, Jesus, the Lamb of God, recognized the co-existence of two kingdoms in His day. The first was the **civil power of Rome** (the state) and the second was the **spiritual kingdom** of God (the church). Jesus elsewhere referred to these two kingdoms as "my kingdom" and the kingdoms of "this world" (John 18:36).

## **The Nation with Lamblike Horns**

Now the question must be asked and answered: What nation or kingdom was beginning to rise to power around **1798** when the first beast **received its deadly wound** which in its founding documents explicitly recognized the **legitimate simultaneous existence of two kingdoms within a single nation** such as Jesus believed in? The answer is unmistakable and irrefutable. States Ellen White:

*“What nation of the New World was in 1798 rising into power, giving promise of strength and greatness, and attracting the attention of the world? The application of the symbol admits of **no question. One nation, and only one**, meets the specifications of this prophecy; it points **unmistakably** to the United States of America.” GC, p. 440*

## **Two Periods**

For convenience’s sake, the history of the United States can be divided into **two broad periods**:

- The **Colonial** period (1620-1776)
- The **Constitutional** period (1776 to the present)

## **The Constitutional Fathers**

The **Constitutional Fathers** (men such as George Washington, Thomas Jefferson, John Adams, James Madison and Benjamin Franklin) of the United States knew full well **three realities**:

- The history of the church/state alliance in the **middle ages**
- The history of church/state relations in the **Colonial period**
- The union of church and state as portrayed in the **Bible**

## **The Founders and the Inquisition**

In their writings, the Founding Fathers reveal that they knew full well the history of the church/state alliance in the middle Ages and the persecution that ensued. In fact, they were living in the **closing years of the 1260-year prophecy**. It is sobering to realize that the **Declaration of Independence** (1776), the **Constitution** (1787) and the **Bill of Rights** (1791) were all written and ratified immediately **before the deadly wound** was given to the papacy in 1798.

The constitutional fathers were well aware that when church and state are **joined together** the inevitable result is a denial of civil and religious liberty and persecution.

They knew all about the **mechanism of the Inquisition** and were well acquainted with the martyrdom of holy men such as **John Hus**. They knew that Hus was held in **subhuman prison squalor for months without due process**, that he was accused by **false witnesses**, that he had broken **no civil laws**, that he was tried for the **religious convictions of his conscience**, that he was judged by the leaders of the church in a similar fashion that the **Sanhedrin** had judged Jesus, that the religious leaders pronounced the **death penalty** against him and that the **church had** finally **appealed to the civil power of**

**emperor Sigismund** to **ratify** and carry out the church's death decree. And they knew that Hus was **burned at the stake** for nothing other than the convictions of his own conscience.

## **John Hus**

The man who was chosen to take Hus from **Prague to Constance** was called **Pogius the Papist**. When Pogius went to Prague to take Hus to Constance, he was a strong Roman Catholic but when he observed Hus' piety and how he was mistreated by the papacy, he became a Hus sympathizer.

Upon arrival in Constance, Hus was **thrown into prison** where he spent **several months without due process**. Finally, he was brought forth from prison for his ecclesiastical trial. This is how Pogius described Hus' condition when he was brought forth from his cell:

*"After a short while Hus was led out of his dungeon into a decent chamber, but his feet almost refused to carry him, he swayed as he walked; listless and unused to the day was the light of his eyes, deathly pale his cheeks and loose what was left of his teeth, since eleven had fallen out due to the damp prison. The nails on his fingers were terribly long, because he had been unable to bite them off for many weeks; upon his skin was a crust of dirt, which exuded an awful stench, and his otherwise brown hair fell in white ringlets upon his rotting and torn garb. His shoes had rotted upon his feet and his shirt and loincloth had vanished. The rounded flesh, which had covered his bones, had shrunken and shriveled and he had become a picture of woe without equal, unrecognizable to those who had known him before. Horror filled those who looked upon him and pitying people prepared a bath for him, brought shirts and clothing and refreshed him with strengthening foods, for which he could only thank with tearful eyes."*  
Pogius the Papist, Hus the Heretic, p. 19

After cleaning up, Hus was taken to stand before the **religious magistrates** of the Church (much as Jesus stood before the Sanhedrin) for a **religious trial**:

*"With the clock striking eight and the bells tolling, the procession of **bishops, cardinals, fathers** and deputies moved toward **the church**, where a chair had been placed for Hus about which the seats of the gentlemen were arranged."* Hus the Heretic, p. 28

**Forty-seven charges** were then read against Hus and none of them were violations of civil law. Every charge had to do with the religious convictions of his own conscience. According to Pogius when Hus attempted to present his defense, the religious leaders **shouted much like the mob** that cried out for the crucifixion of Jesus (Hus the Heretic, p. 40)

When the shouts had subsided Hus was allowed to speak and in his concluding statement he made reference to **the sword** that the church was about to use to execute him:



*“He [God] gave to Peter, his disciple, the key to open all hearts and the heaven of faith with it, but **not the sword**, to slay, as you slay all those who do not accept your worldly doctrines and who evade them.” (Hus the Heretic, p. 41)*

**The vote** was then taken to determine if Hus was guilty of the accusations that were leveled against him. This was the final tally:

- **31** votes found him **not guilty**
- **11** were for **excommunication**
- **45** votes were for **death**

After **his religious trial** Hus was taken before the civil ruler, **Emperor Sigismund**, because the church needed the aid of the civil power in order to execute him. Pogius described how **Count Chlum**, one of Hus’ ardent defenders, pleaded with the Emperor:

*“Caesar, desist from such doings . . . Caesar, Caesar, do not write your name with blood.”*

Pogius then remarks:

*“But the Emperor’s **ears were deaf** and were **further closed** by the cardinals, bishops and priests who crowded about him, kissed the hem of his garments and praised his name, when he seized the quill and wrote his name.” (Hus the Heretic, p. 63)*

The priests **then wrote the sentence** and gave it to Emperor Sigismund who signed the royal edict on **July 5, 1415**.

## **The Inquisition in Lima, Peru**

A few years ago I had the privilege of preaching a week of prayer at our Seventh-day Adventist University near the city of **Lima, Peru**. There was one place I had always wanted to visit in Lima—the palace of the **Inquisition**. You see, Latin America had **three places** where the Inquisition functioned: **Colombia, Peru and Mexico**.

At the very entrance of the Palace there was a **large mural** that portrayed an **Auto de Fe** in the **Plaza de Armas**. After our tour guide explained the various details of the mural, we stepped into the **torture chamber**. I was amazed at how our young tour guide matter-of-factly described the methods that were used to torture and slay heretics who disagreed with the teachings and practices of the Roman Catholic Church.

As we entered the torture chamber on the right there was the **Strappado**:

- The victim’s **wrists were bound behind their back** with one end of a rope and then the loose end was **tossed over an elevated beam**.

- With hands tied behind the back, the victim would then **slowly be raised** by pulling on the loose end of the rope and when the victim was high above the ground the loose end was **abruptly released** and then **stopped** slightly before the victim reached the ground thus **dislocating** the arms and shoulders.
- Sometimes weights of up to **25 pounds** were bound to the victim's feet to make the drop more precipitous and the dislocation more painful.

Next there was the **whipping post**:

- With hands and feet in the **stocks** the prisoner was beaten with a whip on his bare back a minimum of 50 and a maximum of **200 times**.

A left-turn and on the left hand side there was **the Rack**:

- The victim was **laid upon a table** face up with **arms and legs extended**. The victim's **ankles and wrists** were then tied with **ropes** that were attached to pulleys at the four ends of the table.
- **Wheels** at **either end** of the board were **turned** pulling the **legs downward** and the **arms upward**. As the ropes got **tighter and tighter** the body was stretched in **opposite directions**.
- As the victim was commanded to recant, the **shoulders, elbows, thighs and ankles** were **slowly** dislocated as the prisoner writhed in pain.

On the right hand side was the **Garotte**:

- It was an instrument that **slowly strangled** the victim.
- The **hands and feet** were tied with rope to the arms and legs of the chair and a **noose was tied around the neck**.
- In back of the chair was **a wheel** that worked as a **tourniquet**.
- The wheel was **slowly turned** and this **pulled the rope** tighter and tighter around the hands, feet and neck until the victim was **strangled**.

**Water boarding** was next:

- Another left and we are at **a bench** where the victim was **laid down** face up, his **nostrils were pinched** shut and water was poured down **a funnel** into the **victim's throat**.
- Sometimes **a cloth** was forced down the throat while **pouring the water** causing the sensation of **suffocation by drowning**.

Then we went down deep into the **underground tunnels** where **dungeons** had been hewn into the rock.

- The **cubicles** were **barely larger than the person** who was enclosed in them
- For days victims were shut in by the **cold** and in **absolute darkness** with barely enough room to **wiggle** while their **families wondered** where they were.

As mentioned before, some more fortunate victims were taken to the **Plaza de Armas**, wood was placed around their bodies, and they were chained to a stake and then burned alive.

The **Constitutional Fathers** of the United States **knew** all about this history and they were determined to establish a nation with full civil and religious liberty where such things could never happen.

## **The Colonial Period**

The Constitutional Fathers also knew all about the history of the **colonial period** (1620-1776). They were well aware that **atheists, Jews, Quakers, Baptists** and others were **deprived of their civil rights** simply because their beliefs and practices did not square with those of the **established Puritan religion** of the colonies.

The founders knew all about **Sunday laws** that compelled people to attend church on pain of **finer, lashes, imprisonment** and in the case of three colonies, **even death**. They knew that only members of the established church were allowed to serve in in the **civil government**. They knew that pastors of the established churches were remunerated from taxes collected by the government from the people.

They knew full well about **Roger Williams** who was banished from the **Massachusetts Bay Colony** in September of 1635 for his views concerning the separation of church and state. They knew how Williams was forced to flee from the colony in late **1635 and early 1636** in the dead of winter in order to escape the wrath of the religious leaders. The Founding Fathers knew that Williams had founded the **colony of Rhode Island** with its capital, **Providence**. Williams' used a persuasive argument against the idea that the church should employ the power of the state to force people to embrace and practice the established religion of the colonies:

*“The forcing of a woman, that is, the violent acting of uncleanness upon her body against her will, we count rape: by proportion that is a **spiritual or soul-rape**, which is forcing of the conscience of any person, to acts of worship.” Words of Roger Williams in Timothy Hall, Separating Church and State, p. 87*

According to Williams:

The civil magistrate possesses a “**civil sword** . . . for the defense of persons, estates, families, liberties of a city or civil state, and the suppressing of uncivil or injurious persons or actions.” Words of Roger Williams in Timothy Hall, Separating Church and State, p. 79

In his excellent book, Separating Church and State, Timothy Hall explains Williams’ understanding of the **two swords**:

“Nor did Williams think that toleration required believers in different faiths to leave one another alone. Proselytization, for him was entirely consistent with religious liberty. He believed in a **militant faith** although one whose militancy expressed itself through **spiritual weapons such as preaching and persuasion and prayer** rather than through **civic violence**. The religious toleration Williams advocated was one that would leave believers free to undertake **spiritual warfare against spiritual error**. He sought to sheath the **civil sword** so that the **sword of spiritual truth** could be wielded against apostasy and unbelief.” Timothy L. Hall, Separating Church and State, p. 29

In language very **similar to Revelation 13:11**, Roger Williams once said that when a follower of Christ advocates persecution against those who disagree with him, he is guilty of ‘the language of the dragon in a lamb’s lip.’

Amazingly, the sentence of **banishment** against Roger Williams in **September of 1635** was not lifted until **1936** when **Bill #488** was expunged from the laws of Massachusetts:

“Resolved, that the sentence of expulsion passed against Roger Williams by the General Court of Massachusetts Bay Colony in the year sixteen hundred and thirty-five be and hereby is revoked.” Timothy L. Hall, Separating Church and State, p. 39

Concerning the Colonial period in the **Colony of Virginia**, Southern Baptist minister and former eight-term Republican Congressman, John Buchanan once said:

“Preachers like Pat Robertson and Jerry Falwell should not forget that, in the colony of Virginia, Baptist ministers were beaten and imprisoned and run out of town for preaching their dissenting faith, while Anglican ministers were paid with **tax funds** from the state treasury.” Quoted by Samuel Rabinove, “Religious Liberty and Church-State Separation: Why Should We Care?” Speech on April 10, 1986, Vital Speeches of the Day, June 15, 1986, p. 527.)

## **Constitutional Fathers and the Bible**

Although the founding Fathers were not churchgoers, they were well acquainted with the Bible. They particularly admired the human Christ and knew all about His **trial, sentencing and execution** by a union of the apostate Jewish church with the Roman state.

They were also cognizant that the **apostolic church** was persecuted when the apostate Jewish church influenced the Roman state to do so.

## **The Founding Documents**

The founding documents of the United States are clearly of divine origin. In **1776** the **Declaration of Independence** affirmed that all men are created equal and have certain **inalienable** rights among which are life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness. In **1787** the **Constitution** was ratified and in **1791** the **Bill of Rights**. (the first Ten Amendments to the Constitution).

These three foundational documents were ratified **immediately before** the papacy received its deadly wound in 1798. Just as prophecy had predicted, God was providentially preparing the **next world super power** to appear on the stage even as the previous power was on the verge of being mortally wounded.

An examination of the writings of the constitutional fathers reveals that they firmly believed in the legitimate existence of **two kingdoms** in the **United States** that were to forever **remain separate**. According to their view, the church was given a **spiritual sword** to persuade through the preaching of the Word and the state was given the **material sword** to preserve the civil order of society.

The new nation was established upon **two great principles**:

- **Republicanism** (representative civil government with the civil sword)
- **Protestantism** (representative religious government with the religious sword)

During the Middle Ages all civil matters were decided and imposed by the **king** and all religious matters were decided and enforced by the **Pope**. Thus all power in civil and religious matters flowed from **top to bottom**. When the king or Pope spoke, the people were simply expected to obey without question.

The Constitutional Fathers established a **revolutionary upside down system** of government that flowed from **the bottom up**—a government **of** the people, **by** the people and **for** the people in which citizens could enjoy full civil and religious liberty. The foundational idea behind this concept was that of **two kingdoms in one nation**, each with its own sword and separate from one another.

This was one of the most revolutionary experiments in human history. **Ellen White**, who was born just **27 years** after the deadly wound was given to the papacy in 1798, describes the contrast between the oppressive system of the middle ages and the system that the Constitutional Fathers envisioned and implemented:

*“Among the Christian exiles who first fled to America and sought an asylum from **royal oppression [an oppressive state]** and **priestly intolerance [an oppressive church]** were many who determined to establish a government upon the broad foundation of **civil [state]** and **religious [church] liberty**. Their views found place in the Declaration of Independence, which sets forth the great truth that ‘all men are created equal’ and endowed with the inalienable right to ‘life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness.’ And the Constitution guarantees to the people the right of **self-government**, providing that representatives elected by the popular vote shall enact and administer the laws. **Freedom of religious faith** was also granted, every man being permitted to worship God according to the dictates of his conscience. **Republicanism [a state without a king]** and **Protestantism [a church without a Pope]** became the fundamental principles of the nation.”*

Ellen White then makes the following astounding statement in which she describes the secret of the United States’ greatness:

*“These principles are the **secret of its power and prosperity**.”* GC, p. 441

Ellen White further wrote:

*“The founders of the nation wisely sought to guard against the employment of **secular power on the part of the church**, with its inevitable result—intolerance and persecution.”* GC, p. 442

In this way the founding fathers rejected the apostate Roman Catholic view that it is legitimate for the church to use the power of the state to enforce its beliefs and practices. Instead, the Founding Fathers established a government that **returned to the view of church and state** that had characterized **Jesus and the earliest church**, one that separated church and state and guaranteed the freedom to worship God according to the dictates of conscience.

Let’s take a look at several statements from the writings of the Founders of the nation:

### **George Washington**

George Washington, the first president of the United States and the chair of the Convention that ratified the Constitution in 1787 wrote to the Baptist Delegation in 1789:

*“If I could have entertained the slightest apprehension that the Constitution framed by the convention where I had the honor to preside might possibly endanger the religious rights of **any ecclesiastical society**, certainly I **would never have placed my signature on it**; and if I could now conceive that the general government might ever be so administered as to render the liberty of conscience insecure, I beg you will be persuaded that no one would be more zealous than myself to establish **effectual barriers against the horrors of spiritual tyranny and every species of religious persecution**. For, you doubtless remember, I have*

often expressed my sentiments that any man, conducting himself as a **good citizen** and being **accountable to God alone for his religious opinions**, ought to be **protected** in worshiping the Deity according to the dictates of his own conscience." George Washington to the Baptist Delegation, August 8, 1789.

### **Benjamin Franklin**

"When religion is good, I conceive that it will **support itself**; and when it does not support itself, and God does not take care to support it, so that its professors are obliged to call for the **help of the civil powers**, 'tis a sign, I apprehend, of it being **a bad one**." (Quoted in Clifford Goldstein, Day of the Dragon, p. 77)

### **Thomas Jefferson**

I have had the privilege of visiting the **Jefferson Memorial** in Washington D. C. on a number of occasions. Etched on the white marble of the monument are the memorable words:

"Almighty God hath created the **mind free**. All attempts to influence it by **temporal punishment or burdens** . . . are a departure from the plan of the Holy Author of our religion . . . No man shall be **compelled** to frequent or support any religious worship or ministry or shall otherwise suffer on account of his religious opinions or belief, but all men **shall be free** to profess and by argument to maintain, their opinions in matters of religion. I know but one code of morality for men whether acting singly or collectively."

#### **Jefferson once wrote:**

"The **legitimate powers** of government extend to such acts only as are **injurious to others**. It does me no injury for my neighbor to say that there are twenty gods, or no gods. It neither picks my pocket nor breaks my leg." (Thomas Jefferson, Writings, p. 285)

And in 1782 Jefferson wrote:

"It is error alone which needs the support of government. **Truth can stand by itself**." (Thomas Jefferson, Notes on Virginia, 1782; from George Seldes, ed., The Great Quotations, Secaucus, New Jersey: Citadel Press, 1983, p. 363)

Jefferson knew full well about the mechanism of the **Inquisition**:

"Is uniformity [**in matters of religion**] attainable? Millions of innocent men, women, and children, since the introduction of Christianity, have been **burnt, tortured, fined, imprisoned**; yet we have not advanced one inch towards **uniformity [of belief and practice]**. What has been the effect of coercion? To make one half the world **fools** and the

other half **hypocrites**. To support roguery and error all over the earth” (Thomas Jefferson, Notes on Virginia, 1782; from George Seldes, editor., The Great Quotations, Secaucus, New Jersey: Citadel Press, 1983, p. 363)

Jefferson stated that people should be **willing to die as martyrs** if necessary in order to preserve civil and religious liberty:

*“To preserve the **freedom of the human mind** then and **freedom of the press**, every spirit should be ready to devote itself **to martyrdom**; for as long as we may think as we will, and speak as we think, the condition of man will proceed in improvement.”* (Thomas Jefferson, letter to William Green Mumford, June 18, 1799. From Adrienne Koch, ed., The American Enlightenment: The Shaping of the American Experiment and a Free Society, New York: George Braziller, 1965, p. 341)

The **Religious Liberty department** of the Seventh-day Adventist Church has made it a top priority to defend the religious freedom of **all denominations**. When the civil power has occasionally attempted to restrict the religious freedom of any religious group (even of Roman Catholics), the Adventists have been among the first to step to the plate to defend it. Thomas Jefferson explained one reason Adventists feel so strongly about this:

*“It behooves every man who values liberty of conscience for himself, to resist invasions of it in the **case of others**; or their case may, by change of circumstances, **become his own**.”* (Thomas Jefferson, letter to Benjamin Rush, April 21, 1803. From Daniel B. Baker, ed., Political Quotations, Detroit: Gale Research, Inc., 1990, p. 189.)

Jefferson warned against the **clergy using the power of the state** to enforce religion:

*“The **clergy**, by getting themselves established by law and **engrafted into the machine of government**, have been a very formidable engine against the **civil and religious** rights of man.”* (Letter to J. Moor, 1800)

*“History, I believe, furnishes **no example** of a **priest-ridden people maintaining a free civil government**. This marks the lowest grade of ignorance of which their civil as well as religious leaders will always avail themselves for their own purposes* (Letter to von Humboldt, 1813).

*“In every country and in every age, **the priest has been hostile to liberty**. He is always in alliance with the despot, abetting his abuses in return for protection to his own.”* (Letter to H. Spafford, 1814)

*“To suffer the civil magistrate to intrude his powers into the field of opinion and to restrain the profession or propagation of principles on supposition of their ill tendency is a dangerous fallacy which at once destroys all religious liberty, because he being of course judge of that tendency will make his opinions the rule of judgment and approve or condemn the sentiments*



of others only as they shall square with or differ from his own” (Statute for Religious Freedom, 1779).

“Reason and free inquiry are the only effectual agents against error. Give a loose to them they will support the true religion by bringing every false one to their tribunal, to the test of their investigation. They are the natural enemies of error, and of error only.” (Notes on Virginia, 1785)

Several years after the drawing up and ratification of the founding documents of the nation, Jefferson could look back with pride at how the experiment had proved a success:

“We **have solved** by fair **experiment** the great and interesting question whether **freedom of religion** is compatible with **order in government** and obedience to the laws. And we have experienced the quiet as well as the comfort which results from leaving everyone to profess freely and openly those principles of religion which are the inductions of his own reason and the serious convictions of his own inquiries (Letter to the Virginia Baptists, 1808).

“. . . our fellow citizens, after **half a century of experience and prosperity**, continue to approve the choice we made. **May it be to the world**, what I believe it will be, (to some parts sooner, to others later, but finally to all,) the signal of arousing men to **burst the chains** under which monkish ignorance and superstition had persuaded them to bind themselves, and to assume the blessings and **security of self-government**. That form which we have substituted, restores the free right to the unbounded **exercise of reason and freedom of opinion**. All eyes are opened, or opening, to the rights of man. The general spread of the light of science has already laid open to every view the palpable truth, that the mass of mankind has not been born with saddles on their backs, nor a favored few booted and spurred, ready to ride them legitimately, by the grace of God. These are grounds of hope for others. For ourselves, let the annual return of this day [Fourth of July] forever refresh our recollections of these rights, and an undiminished devotion to them....” (Thomas Jefferson, letter to Roger C. Weightman, June 24, 1826 [Jefferson's last letter, dated ten days before he died]; from Adrienne Koch, ed., The American Enlightenment: The Shaping of the American Experiment and a Free Society, New York: George Braziller, 1965, p. 372)

Some have argued that Jefferson believed that only the Federal Government was bound by the First Amendment and **not the individual states**. Such a fallacious argument has consistently been proved wrong by the **Fourteenth Amendment** where it is made clear that the First Amendment of the Federal Constitution applies to the **individual States**. Jefferson stated:

“I consider the government of the United States as **interdicted** by the Constitution from intermeddling in religious institutions, their doctrines, discipline, or exercises. This results not only from the provision that no law shall be made respecting the establishment or free

exercise of religion [***the First Amendment***], but from that also which reserves to the states the powers not delegated to the United States. Certainly, no power to prescribe any religious exercise or to assume authority in religious discipline has been delegated to the General Government. ***It must rest with the States***, as far as it can be in any human authority.” (Letter to Samuel Miller, Jan. 23, 1808)

## **Danbury Baptism Association**

In a letter addressed to the **Danbury Baptist Association in 1802**, Thomas Jefferson expressed his understanding of the first two clauses of the first amendment by using the **wall metaphor** that he possibly borrowed from **Roger Williams**:

*“Believing with you [***the Danbury Baptists***] that ***religion*** is a matter which lies solely between Man and his God, that he owes account to none other for ***his faith*** or ***his worship***, that the legitimate powers of government reach actions only, and not opinions, I contemplate with sovereign reverence that act of the whole American people which declared that their legislature should “make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof,” thus ***building a wall of separation between Church and State.***”*

Certainly **Thomas Jefferson knew far better** the intent of the First Amendment than those who now boldly attempt to **rewrite and reinterpret it**.

It will be noticed that while the first two clauses of the First Amendment guarantee religious liberty, the **third clause** guarantees full **civil rights**—freedom of **speech**, freedom of the **press**, freedom of **assembly** and freedom to petition the government for a redress of **grievances**.

Thus, **encased in the First Amendment** to the Constitution we find in a **single** nation, the **two horns like a lamb**—religious and civil liberty. And these principles of religious and civil liberty are based on the **foundational idea** that the kingdom of the church and the kingdom of the state both have a legitimate existence and purpose but should be kept separate. If the government, at some point in the future, should violate either of the first two clauses of the First Amendment, the inevitable result will be the **loss of the civil liberties** guaranteed by the third clause and inevitably persecution.

## **James Madison in Memorial and Remonstrance**

The climax of the conflict between James Madison and **Patrick Henry** was the **1784-1785** debate over Henry's **Assessment Bill**. This tax for the support of religion at first singled out one sect for preferential treatment, but was later broadened to include all Christian sects. In its final form, the bill allowed each taxpayer to designate which church should

receive his share of the tax. In the absence of such a choice, the legislature was authorized to apply it to "*pious uses*."

James Madison's **Memorial and Remonstrance** is an attack on **all forms** of establishment of religion, whether they are selective or general and 'nondiscriminatory.' This document is also the most concise and articulate statement of the views of the First Amendment's author concerning what is an establishment of religion. Here most of all we can see that he had in mind **much more than simply a national church**.

Helping create a storm of popular protest, the Remonstrance played a key role in killing the Assessment Bill. Support for the bill varied among different religious groups. **Quakers and Mennonites** were immediately skeptical, not surprising since Virginia had recently considered a special tax on them because they were exempt from serving in the militia. **Presbyterian ministers** and leaders initially supported the bill, but the **laity came out strongly against it** — especially after the publication of the Remonstrance. **Baptists** came out immediately against the bill, supporting a full separation of church and state.

Madison's was not the only effort to kill the bill: there was also a popular uprising against it, with numerous petitions and over 10,000 signatures submitted to the legislature before the vote. Some were based on religious principles while others were explicit in their secularism, even going so far as to reject the idea that religion is at all necessary for public morality.

## **Religious Freedom in Virginia and America**

The defeat of the Assessment Bill cleared the way for Jefferson's **Bill for Establishing Religious Freedom**. Madison drove it through in **January of 1786**, seven years after it was first introduced. The next year, Madison became a member of the Constitutional Convention where he could work to secure religious liberty for the entire nation.

Madison believed that, under the Constitution, "*there is not a shadow of right in the general government to intermeddle with religion*" and that "*this subject is, for the honor of America, perfectly free and unshackled. The Government has no jurisdiction over it. . .*" Despite this, he promised he would get a Bill of Rights added to the Constitution to specifically guarantee religious freedom. Virginia and other states ratified the Constitution partially on the strength of such promises.

At no point is Madison more unrelenting than in his opposition to state support or aid for religion. Not even '*three pence*' contribution was to be taken from any citizen for such a purpose. "*If it were lawful to impose a small tax for religion the admission would pave the*

way for oppressive levies." Not the amount but "the principle of assessment" itself was wrong. For Madison, his struggle was as much to prevent "the interference of law in religion" as to restrain religious intervention in political matters. He recognized that these were two sides of the same coin.

**Article #4:** "Whilst we assert for ourselves a freedom to embrace, to profess and to observe the Religion which we believe to be of divine origin, we cannot deny an equal freedom to those whose minds have not yet yielded to the evidence which has convinced us. If this freedom be abused, it is an offence against God, not against man: To God, therefore, not to man, must an account of it be rendered."

**Article #7:** "Because experience witnesseth that ecclesiastical establishments, instead of maintaining the purity and efficacy of Religion, have had a contrary operation. During **almost fifteen centuries** has the legal establishment of Christianity been on trial. What have been its fruits? More or less in all places, pride and indolence in the Clergy, ignorance and servility in the laity, in both, superstition, bigotry and persecution."

**Article #8:** "What influence in fact have ecclesiastical establishments had on Civil Society? In some instances they have been seen to erect a **spiritual tyranny** on the ruins of the Civil authority; in many instances they have been seen **upholding the thrones of political tyranny**: in no instance have they been seen the guardians of the liberties of the people. Rulers, who wished to subvert the public liberty, may have found an established Clergy convenient auxiliaries. A just Government instituted to secure & perpetuate it needs them not. Such a Government will be best supported by **protecting every Citizen in the enjoyment of his Religion** with the same equal hand which protects his person and his property; by neither invading the equal rights of any Sect, nor suffering any Sect to invade those of another."

**Article #9:** "Because the proposed establishment is a departure from the generous policy, which, offering an Asylum to the persecuted and oppressed of every Nation and Religion, promised a luster to our country, and an accession to the number of its citizens. What a melancholy mark is the Bill of sudden degeneracy? Instead of holding forth an Asylum to the persecuted, it is itself a signal of persecution. It degrades from the equal rank of Citizens all those whose opinions in Religion do not bend to those of the Legislative authority. **Distant as it may be in its present form from the Inquisition, it differs from it only in degree.** The one is the first step, the other the last in the career of intolerance."

**Article #11:** "Torrents of blood have been spilt in the **old world**, by vain attempts of the **secular arm**, to extinguish Religious discord, by proscribing all difference in Religious opinion."

**Article #15:** "Because finally, "the equal right of every citizen to the free exercise of his Religion according to the dictates of conscience" is held by the **same tenure** with **all our other rights**. If we recur to its origin, it is equally the gift of nature; if we weigh its importance, it cannot be less dear to us; if we consult the "Declaration of those rights which pertain to the good people of Virginia, as the basis and foundation of Government," it is enumerated with equal solemnity, or rather studied emphasis."

## **James Madison Statements**

In a letter to Edward Livingston, James Madison once stated:

"I observe with particular pleasure the view you have taken of the **immunity of religion from civil jurisdiction**, in every case where it does not trespass on **private rights** or the **public peace**." (Quoted in Timothy Hall, Separating Church and State, p. 145

**James Madison**, who is called the '**Father of the Constitution**,' expressed his views on the relationship between religion and the government:

"There is **not a shadow of right** in the general government to intermeddle with religion. Its **least interference** with it [religion] would be a most flagrant usurpation. I can appeal to my uniform conduct on this subject that I have warmly supported religious freedom."

"An **alliance or coalition** between Government and religion cannot be too carefully guarded against . . . Every new and successful example therefore of a **PERFECT SEPARATION** between ecclesiastical and civil matters is of importance . . . religion and government will exist in greater purity, **without (rather) than with the aid of government**." [James Madison in a letter to Livingston, 1822, from Leonard W. Levy- *The Establishment Clause, Religion and the First Amendment*, page 124]

"**We are teaching the world** the great truth that Governments do better without Kings and Nobles than with them [**republicanism**]. The merit will be doubled by the **other lesson** that Religion flourishes in greater purity, **without** than with the aid of Government [**Protestantism**]." [James Madison, Letter to Edward Livingston, July 10, 1822 The Writings of James Madison, Gaillard Hunt].

"[I]t may not be easy, in every possible case, to trace the line of separation between the rights of religion and the Civil authority with such distinctness as to avoid collisions and doubts on unessential points. The tendency to usurpation on one side or the other, or to a corrupting coalition or alliance between them, will be best guarded against by an **entire abstinence of the Gov't from interference in any way whatsoever**, beyond the necessity of preserving **public order**, and **protecting each sect** against trespasses on its legal rights by others."

[James Madison, in a letter to Rev Jasper Adams spring 1832, from James Madison on Religious Liberty, edited by Robert S. Alley, pp. 237-238]

*“It was the Universal opinion of the Century preceding the last, that **Civil Government could not stand without the prop of a religious establishment**; and that the Christian religion itself, would perish if not supported by the legal provision for its clergy. The experience of Virginia conspicuously corroborates the disproof of both opinions. The Civil Government, though bereft of everything like an associated hierarchy, possesses the requisite stability and performs its functions with complete success; whilst the number, the industry, and the morality of the priesthood, and the devotion of the people have been manifestly increased by the **TOTAL SEPARATION OF THE CHURCH FROM THE STATE**.”* [James Madison, as quoted in Robert L. Maddox: *Separation of Church and State; Guarantor of Religious Freedom*]

*“We hold it for a fundamental and undeniable truth that religion, or the duty which we owe our Creator, and the manner of discharging it, can be directed only by reason and conviction, **not by force or violence**. The religion, then, of every man must be left to the conviction and conscience of every man: and that it is the right of every man to exercise it as these may dictate.”* [James Madison, *Memorial and Remonstrance to the Assembly of Virginia*]

*“No **distinction** seems to be more obvious than that between **spiritual and temporal** matters. Yet whenever they have been made objects of Legislation, they have clashed and contended with each other, till one or the other has gained the supremacy.”* [James Madison in a letter to Thomas Jefferson Oct-Nov 1787]

*“The experience of the United States is a happy disproof of the error so long rooted in the unenlightened minds of well-meaning Christians, as well as in the corrupt hearts of persecuting usurpers, that without a legal incorporation of religious and civil polity, neither could be supported. A **mutual independence** is found most friendly to **practical Religion**, to **social harmony**, and to **political prosperity**.”* [James Madison, Letter to F.L. Schaeffer, Dec 3, 1821]

Sometimes when I am lecturing on this subject I ask the question: To how many kingdoms do Christians in the United States belong?

The fact is that Christians are **citizens of two kingdoms in a single country**. We are citizens of the United States **by birth** and we are citizens of the heavenly kingdom by the **new birth**. We have an **earthly passport** that identifies our earthly country of origin and we have a **heavenly passport**, the blood of the Lamb, which identifies us as citizens of Christ’s heavenly kingdom, the church.

## Inconsistent Founding Fathers

Some revisionist historians such as **David Barton** have shown that the founders did not always abide by their own principles of separation of church and state. This is true but the **conclusion** that Barton draws from it is false. Timothy Hall explains one example of an egregious contradiction between Madison's opinions and his actions:

*"His [Madison's] **actions** did not always coincide with his **professed opinions**, particularly with those he professed late in life. For example, it has been noted that on the **same day** Madison introduced Jefferson's Bill for Establishing Religious Freedom in the Virginia legislature [**bill #84**], he also introduced a bill for the punishment of Sabbath-breakers [**horns like a lamb but speaks like a dragon**]." Timothy Hall, *Separating Church and State*, p. 136*

Madison pushed through the Virginia Legislature a bill that was called: "A Bill for Punishing Disturbers of Religious Worship and Sabbath Breakers".

This was clearly a **religious law** established by the Virginia Legislature and thus a violation of Madison's and Jefferson's principles. Thus, early in the history of the United States even the founding fathers were doing exactly what the land beast of Revelation would eventually do: Claiming to uphold two principles while at the same time undermining them.

Madison's bill stated:

*"If any person **on Sunday** shall himself be found laboring at his own or any other trade of calling, or shall employ his apprentices, servants or slaves in labor, or other business, except it be in the ordinary household he shall forfeit the sum of ten shillings for every such offense."*

This is the same James Madison who is called 'the Father of the Constitution'. But Madison was not in this alone. What is even more tragic is that Thomas Jefferson wrote the actual wording of this bill, and this at about the same time that Jefferson wrote (Bill #82) "The Bill for Establishing Religious Freedom" in which he stated that:

*"No man shall be compelled to frequent or support any religious worship, place, or ministry whatsoever, nor shall be enforced, restrained, molested, or burdened in his body or goods, nor shall otherwise suffer on account of his religious opinions or beliefs; but that all men shall be free to profess and by argument to maintain, their opinion in matters of religion, and that the same shall in no wise diminish, enlarge, or affect their civil capacities."*

It is important to remember that both of these laws were enacted in **1786**, five years before the First Amendment was included in the Constitution. Perhaps Madison and Jefferson had matured somewhat in their ideas when they drew up the First Amendment to the Constitution five years later.

The founding fathers were not always consistent in living up to their principles. The Declaration of Independence states that **all men are created equal** and have been endowed by their Creator with certain inalienable rights among which are the right to life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness and yet the founding fathers **all had slaves** to whom these rights were denied. Does this make the statement in the Declaration of Independence untrue? No, they simply did not abide by their own principles.

This inconsistency does not prove that the founders did not believe in a strict separation of church and state. All it proves is how easy it would be for the United States to **contradict its own principles**. Remember, the land beast has two horns like a lamb and yet speaks like a dragon. Even in its early history the founders showed how the United States could stand for the two principles and yet contradict them in actual practice.

### **John Adams and the Treaty of Tripoli**

On **June 10, 1797**, the year before the deadly wound was given to the Roman Catholic papacy, president John Adams signed into law the **Treaty of Tripoli** that unambiguously stated:

*“The Government of the United States is **not in any sense** founded upon the Christian religion.”*

Notably, President Adams sent this treaty to the Senate in **May of 1797** where it was **read aloud** to all of the senators who were present and **printed copies** were also given to each Senator. The **vote to ratify** the treaty was unanimous! Notably, the treaty was **printed in full** in several newspapers in Philadelphia and New York City and there was not even a whimper of protest from the general public. None of the Senators paid a heavy price for signing the treaty.

The views of John Adams on religious liberty are broad and clear:

*“We think ourselves possessed, or, at least, we boast that we are so, of liberty of conscience on all subjects, and of the right of free inquiry and private judgment in all cases, and yet how far are we from these exalted privileges in fact! There exists, I believe, throughout the whole Christian world, a law which makes it blasphemy to deny or doubt the divine inspiration of all the books of the Old and New Testaments, from Genesis to Revelations. **In most countries of Europe it is punished by fire at the stake, or the rack, or the wheel.** In England itself boring through the tongue with a red-hot poker punishes it. In America it is not better; even in our own Massachusetts, which I believe, upon the whole, is as temperate and moderate in religious zeal as most of the States, a law was made in the latter end of the last century, **repealing the cruel punishments** of the former laws, but substituting **fine and***



**imprisonment** upon all those blasphemers upon any book of the Old Testament or New. Now, what free inquiry, when a writer must surely encounter the risk of fine or imprisonment for adducing any argument for investigating into the divine authority of those books? Who would run the risk of translating Dupuis? But I cannot enlarge upon this subject, though I have it much at heart. I think such laws a great embarrassment, great obstructions to the improvement of the human mind. Books that cannot bear examination certainly ought not to be established as divine inspiration by **penal laws**. It is true, few persons appear desirous to put such laws in execution, and it is also true that some few persons are hardy enough to venture to depart from them. But as long as they continue in force as laws, the human mind must make an awkward and clumsy progress in its investigations. **I wish they were repealed**. The substance and essence of Christianity, as I understand it, is eternal and unchangeable, and will bear examination forever, but **it has been mixed with extraneous ingredients**, which I think will not bear examination, and **they ought to be separated**. Adieu." (John Adams, letter to Thomas Jefferson, January 23, 1825. Adams was 90, Jefferson 81 at the time; both died on July 4th of the following year, on the 50th anniversary of the signing of the Declaration of Independence. From Adrienne Koch, ed., The American Enlightenment: The Shaping of the American Experiment and a Free Society, New York: George Braziller, 1965, p. 234.)

## **The First Amendment**

It has become fashionable today for **Christian activists** to say that separation of church and state was established only to protect the rights of the church from the **encroachment of the state** but just the opposite is true. The history of the middle Ages and the colonial period proves beyond any doubt that the **greater danger** is for the church to use the state to accomplish its mission.

Frequently Christian activists will also say that separation of church and state appears **nowhere in the Constitution**. Technically this is true if we mean that the **actual expression**: "separation of church and state" is not in the Constitution. However, although the specific expression is not found in the Constitution, **the concept is clearly and explicitly contained** in the First Amendment to the Constitution:

*"Congress shall make no law respecting an **establishment of religion** [clause #1], or prohibiting the **free exercise thereof** [clause #2]; or abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press; or the right of the people peaceably to assemble, and to petition the Government for a redress of grievances [clause #3]."*

Some contemporary Christian activists have even gone so far as to say that the First amendment applies to **the federal government but does not apply to the states**. But the

Supreme Court on the basis of the **Fourteenth Amendment** has overturned this idea consistently.

Notice that the intent of the First Amendment is not to forbid the establishment of **a** church or **one** religion over and above another church or another religion. The word ‘*religion*’ in the First Amendment is **not preceded** by a definite or an indefinite article.

Clearly, the First Amendment forbids Congress from drawing up laws that have anything to do with religion, period. In this sense the Constitution clearly contains the concept of the **separation of church and state** because the state is forbidden to **make laws** that **establish** religion or **prohibit** its free exercise. Thus the state can have **nothing to do with religion** except to protect everyone’s right to practice it freely according to the dictates of their own conscience. Of course people are not permitted to disobey legitimate civil laws in the name of religion such as flying airplanes into the World Trade Center. Someone has expressed it this way: “Your freedom ends where my nose begins.”

### **Vision of the Founding Fathers**

What the founding fathers envisioned was not a **Christian Nation** but rather a **nation of Christians**. Their ideal was that the church should do the work implanting Christ’s kingdom in the human heart by teaching honesty, chastity, respect for life and property, family values, etc. In this way, society would be leavened from within and would be moral and righteous.

The idea was not that the government should impose by legislation the moral values of the church to make society moral. This is not the mission of the church. The mission of the church is to leaven society by the preaching of the Word of God so that society can be transformed from the inside out, not from outside in. This is what is taught in the parable of the leaven (Matthew 13:33).

### **Thomas Paine**

Thomas Paine (whom Ellen White strongly condemned as an infidel stating that he would come up in the second resurrection at the end of the millennium) was an **enemy of the Bible and religion**, nevertheless he had some interesting things to say about the relationship between church and state:

*“Persecution is not an original feature in any religion; but it is always the strongly-marked feature of all law-religions, or **religions established by law. Take away the law-establishment**, and every religion re-assumes its original benignity.”* (Thomas Paine, *The Rights of Man*, 1791-1792. From Gorton Carruth and Eugene Ehrlich, eds., *The Harper Book of American Quotations*, New York: Harper & Row, 1988, pp. 499-500.)

The founding fathers believed that freedom of religion was an **inalienable right** and that is why Thomas Paine stated the following:

***“Toleration is not the opposite of intolerance but the counterfeit of it. Both are despotisms: the one assumes to itself the right of withholding liberty of conscience, the other of granting it.”*** (Thomas Paine, *The Rights of Man*, p. 58. As quoted by John M. Swomley, *Religious Liberty and the Secular State: The Constitutional Context*, Buffalo, NY: Prometheus Books, 1987, p. 7. Swomley added, “Toleration is a concession; religious liberty is a right.”)

### **Isaac Backus**

***“Religious matters are to be separated from the jurisdiction of the state not because they are beneath the interests of the state, but, quite to the contrary, because they are too high and holy and thus are beyond the competence of the state.”*** (Isaac Backus, *An Appeal to the Public for Religious Liberty*, 1773, as quoted by Albert Menendez and Edd Doerr, compilers, *The Great Quotations on Religious Liberty*, Long Beach, CA: Centerline Press, 1991, p. 7.)

### **Patrick Henry**

*“That religion, or the duty we owe to our Creator, and the manner of discharging it, can be directed only by reason and conviction, **not by force or violence**; and therefore all men are equally entitled to the **free exercise of religion**, according to the dictates of conscience.”* (Patrick Henry [1736-1799], American patriot and statesman, Virginia Bill of Rights, June 12, 1776. From Daniel B. Baker, ed., *Political Quotations*, Detroit: Gale Research, Inc., 1990, p. 189)

### **Samuel West**

*“For the **civil authority** to pretend to establish particular modes of faith and forms of worship, and to punish all that deviate from the standards which our superiors have set up, is attended with the most pernicious consequences to society. It cramps all free and rational inquiry, fills the world with hypocrites and superstitious bigots--nay, with infidels and skeptics; it exposes men of religion and conscience to the rage and malice of fiery, blind zealots, and **dissolves every tender tie of human nature**. And I cannot but look upon it as a peculiar blessing of Heaven that we live in a land where everyone can freely deliver his sentiments upon religious subjects, and have the privilege of worshipping God according to the dictates of his own conscience, without any molestation or disturbance--a privilege which I hope we shall ever keep up and strenuously maintain.”* (Samuel West, Dartmouth, MA, Election Sermon, 1776, as quoted by Albert Menendez and Edd Doerr, compilers, *The Great Quotations on Religious Liberty*, Long Beach, CA: Centerline Press, 1991, p. 103.)

## John Leland

*"Is conformity of sentiments in **matters of religion** essential to the happiness of **civil government**? Not at all. Government has no more to do with the religious opinions of men than it has with the principles of the mathematics. Let every man speak freely without fear--maintain the principles that he believes--worship according to his own faith, either one God, three Gods, no God, or twenty Gods; and **let government protect him in so doing**, i.e., see that he meets with no personal abuse or loss of property for his religious opinions. Instead of discouraging him with proscriptions, fines, confiscation or death, let him be encouraged, as a free man, to bring forth his arguments and maintain his points with all boldness; then if his doctrine is false it will be confuted, and if it is true (though ever so novel) let others credit it. When every man has this liberty what can he wish for more? **A liberal man asks for nothing more of government.**"* (John Leland, "The Rights of Conscience Inalienable, and Therefore Religious Opinions not Cognizable by Law" [a pamphlet], New London, Connecticut, 1791. Reprinted in Mortimer Adler, ed., 1784-1796, Organizing the New Nation: The Annals of America, Vol. 3, Chicago: Encyclopedia Britannica, 1968, pp. 447-448. Leland was a Baptist minister who refused to support the Constitution until Madison persuaded him that the Constitution would not undermine religious liberty)

*"The liberty I contend for is **more than toleration**. The very idea of toleration is **despicable**; it supposes that some have a pre-eminence above the rest to **grant indulgence** whereas all should be equally free, Jews, Turks [Muslims], Pagans and Christians. Test oaths and established creeds should be avoided as the worst of evils."* (Baptist minister John Leland, 1820, as quoted by Samuel Rabinove, "Church and State Must Remain Separate," in Julie S. Bach, ed., Civil Liberties: Opposing Viewpoints, St. Paul: Greenhaven Press, 1988, p. 53)

## Other Thinkers

**Henry Clay, 1818:** *"**All religions united with government** are more or less **inimical** to liberty. All **separated from government** are compatible with liberty."* (Henry Clay, 1777-1852, *Speech in the House of Representatives, March 24, 1818*. From Daniel B. Baker, ed., Political Quotations, Detroit: Gale Research, Inc., 1990, p. 190)

**Abraham Lincoln, 1855:** *"When the Know-Nothings get control, it [the Declaration of Independence] will read: "All men are created equal except negroes, foreigners and Catholics." When it comes to this I should prefer immigrating to some country where they make no pretense of loving liberty--to Russia, for instance, where despotism can be taken pure, and without the base alloy of hypocrisy."* (Abraham Lincoln, 16th U. S. President [1860-1865], letter to Joshua F. Speed, August 24, 1855, according to Albert Menendez and Edd Doerr, compilers, The Great Quotations on Religious Liberty, Long Beach, CA: Centerline Press, 1991, pp. 59-60.)

**Millard Fillmore, 1856:** *"I am tolerant of all creeds. Yet if any sect suffered itself to be used for political objects I would meet it by political opposition. In my view **church and state should be separate**, not only in form, but fact. **Religion and politics should not be mingled**."* (Millard Fillmore, 13th U. S. President [1850-1853], in an address during the 1856 Presidential election, according to Albert Menendez and Edd Doerr, compilers, The Great Quotations on Religious Liberty, Long Beach, CA: Centerline Press, 1991, p. 35.)

**Ulysses S. Grant, 1875:** *"**Encourage free schools, and resolve that not** one dollar of money shall be appropriated to the support of any sectarian school. Resolve that neither the state nor nation, or both combined, shall support institutions of learning other than those sufficient to afford every child growing up in the land the opportunity of a good common school education, unmixed with sectarian, pagan, or atheistical tenets. Leave the matter of religion to the family altar, the church, and the private schools, supported entirely by private contributions. **Keep the church and state forever separated**."* (Ulysses S. Grant, 18th U.S. President [1869-1877], speech before the Army of the Tennessee, Des Moines, Iowa, 1875; from George Seldes, ed., The Great Quotations, Secaucus, New Jersey: Citadel Press, 1983, p. 288)

**Jeremiah S. Black, 1885:** *"[The] manifest object of the men who framed the institution of this country, was to have **a State without religion and a Church without politics**--that is to say, they meant that one should never be used as an engine for the purposes of the other . . . For that they built up **a wall of complete partition between the two**."* (Jeremiah S. Black, noted constitutional advocate, Essays and Speeches, D. Appleton and Co., 1885. As quoted by Leo Pfeffer, "The Establishment Clause: The Never-Ending Conflict," in Ronald C. White and Albright G. Zimmerman, An Unsettled Arena: Religion and the Bill of Rights, Grand Rapids, Michigan: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1990, p. 72)

**Theodore Roosevelt, 1908:** *If there is one thing for which we stand in this country, it is for **complete religious freedom**, and it is an emphatic **negation of this right** to cross-examine a man on his religion before being willing to support him for public office. (Theodore Roosevelt, 26th U. S. President [1901-1909], letter to J. C. Martin, November 9, 1908, according to Albert Menendez and Edd Doerr, compilers, The Great Quotations on Religious Liberty, Long Beach, CA: Centerline Press, 1991, p. 83.)*

**Alfred E. Smith, 1927:** *"I believe in **absolute freedom of conscience for all men** and equality of all churches, all sects, and all beliefs before the law as a **matter of right** and **not as a matter of favor**. I believe in the **absolute separation of church and state** and in the **strict enforcement** of the Constitution that Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion or prohibiting the free exercise thereof. I believe that no tribunal of any church has any power to make any decree of any force in the law of the land, other than to establish the status of its own communicants **within its own church**."* (Alfred E. Smith,

Governor of New York and Democratic candidate for President in 1928; in *Atlantic Monthly*, April, 1927, according to Albert Menendez and Edd Doerr, compilers, *The Great Quotations on Religious Liberty*, Long Beach, CA: Centerline Press, 1991, p. 89.)

**John F. Kennedy, 1959:** *"It is my firm belief that there should be separation of church and state in the United States--that is, that both church and state should be free to operate, without interference from each other in their respective areas of jurisdiction. We live in a liberal, democratic society which embraces wide varieties of belief and disbelief. There is no doubt in my mind that the pluralism which has developed under our Constitution, providing as it does a framework within which diverse opinions can exist side by side and by their interaction enrich the whole, is the most ideal system yet devised by man. I cannot conceive of a set of circumstances which would lead me to a different conclusion."* (John F. Kennedy, 35th U.S. President [1961-1963]; letter to Glenn L. Archer, February 23, 1959, according to Albert Menendez and Edd Doerr, compilers, *The Great Quotations on Religious Liberty*, Long Beach, CA: Centerline Press, 1991, p. 54.)

**Lyndon B. Johnson, 1964:** *"I believe in the American tradition of separation of church and state which is expressed in the First Amendment to the Constitution. By my office--and by my personal conviction--I am sworn to uphold that tradition."* (Lyndon B. Johnson, 36th U. S. President [1963-1969]; interview, *Baptist Standard*, October, 1964, according to Albert Menendez and Edd Doerr, compilers, *The Great Quotations on Religious Liberty*, Long Beach, CA: Centerline Press, 1991, p. 50.)

**Carl N. Degler, 1970:** *"In the eighteenth century the American principle of separation of Church and State was indeed an audacious experiment. Never before had a national state been prepared to dispense with an official religion as a prop to its authority and never before had a church been set adrift without the support of the state. Throughout most of American history the doctrine has provided freedom for religious development while keeping politics free of religion. And that, apparently, had been the intention of the *Founding Fathers*." (Carl N. Degler, *Out of Our Past: The Forces That Shaped Modern America* [Revised ed.], New York: Harper & Row, 1970, p. 96)*

**Gerald R. Ford, 1976:** *"I believe that prayer in public schools should be voluntary. It is difficult for me to see how religious exercises can be a requirement in public schools, given our Constitutional requirement of separation of church and state. I feel that the highly desirable goal of religious education must be principally the responsibility of church and home. I do not believe that public education should show any hostility toward religion, and neither should it inhibit voluntary participation, if it does not interfere with the educational process."* (Gerald R. Ford, 38th President [1974-1977], in an interview with *Los Angeles Herald-Examiner*, October 9, 1976 [p. A-8], according to Alan F. Pater and Jason R. Pater,

compilers and editors, What They Said in 1976: The Yearbook of Spoken Opinion, Beverly Hills, CA: Monitor Book Co., 1977, p. 522.)

**Sam J. Ervin, Jr. 1983:** *“Many sincere persons charge that the school-prayer cases show the **Supreme Court to be hostile to religion**. This charge is **untrue and unjust**. In these cases the Supreme Court was faithful to its judicial duty. **It enforced the First Amendment**, which commands government to maintain **strict neutrality respecting religion**, neither aiding nor opposing it.”* (Sam J. Ervin, Jr., 1896-1985, U.S. Senator from North Carolina, in Free Inquiry, Summer 1983; as quoted by Leo Pfeffer, "Prayer in Public Schools: The Court's Decisions," in the "Church and State" issue of National Forum: The Phi Kappa Phi Journal, Winter, 1988, p. 26.)

*“Government is contemptuous of true religion when it **confiscates the taxes of Caesar to finance the things of God**.”* (Sam J. Ervin, Jr., 1896-1985, U.S. Senator from North Carolina, in an "Open Letter to President Reagan," Congressional Record, April 29, 1982, according to Albert Menendez and Edd Doerr, compilers, The Great Quotations on Religious Liberty, Long Beach, CA: Centerline Press, 1991, p. 33.)

*“If religious freedom is to endure in America, the responsibility for teaching religion to public school children must be left to the **homes and churches** of our land, where this responsibility rightfully belongs. It must not be assumed by the government through the agency of the public school system.”* (Sam J. Ervin, Jr., 1896-1985, U.S. Senator from North Carolina, in Preserving the Constitution, Michie, 1984, according to Albert Menendez and Edd Doerr, compilers, The Great Quotations on Religious Liberty, Long Beach, CA: Centerline Press, 1991, p. 33.)

**Leonard W. Levy, 1986:** *“The wall of separation ensures the government's **freedom from religion** and the individual's **freedom of religion**. The second probably cannot flourish without the first.”* (Leonard W. Levy, The Establishment Clause: Religion and the First Amendment, 1986. From Gorton Carruth and Eugene Ehrlich, eds. The Harper Book of American Quotations, New York: Harper & Row, 1988, p. 499.)

**John M. Swomley, 1987:** *“Voluntary, individual, silent prayer has never been banned or discouraged in the public schools. The Supreme Court has banned **state-sponsored religious services**. Those who advocate prayer services in the public schools **do not want voluntary prayer**. They want the government to be officially involved in promoting and sponsoring prayer services so as to put pressure on children to engage in public prayer. They apparently do not care whether parents want their children to engage in public prayer or be indoctrinated with sectarian religious ideas. The object is to provide a captive classroom audience that will be exposed to the prayers of those with a religious message, which they deliver in the form of a prayer.”* (John M. Swomley, Religious Liberty and the Secular State: The Constitutional Context, Buffalo, NY: Prometheus Books, 1987, p. 128)

**Leo Pfeffer, 1990:** *“Recognizing the evils of man acting like God or of man's using government to help God out in managing the world, the traditional religionists, such as disciples of Roger Williams, Isaac Backus, and John Leland, joined with the deists in fashioning a system in which neither belief nor disbelief in God was to be a matter within the jurisdiction of human government. Both groups sought to secure a government that neither aided nor injured religion, and for this both the Establishment and Free Exercise Clauses of the First Amendment were adopted.”* (Leo Pfeffer, "The Establishment Clause: The Never-Ending Conflict," in Ronald C. White and Albright G. Zimmerman, An Unsettled Arena: Religion and the Bill of Rights, Grand Rapids, Michigan: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1990, p. 73 [footnote])

### **John F. Kennedy**

Although a Roman Catholic, John F. Kennedy showed that he clearly understood the principles upon which the United States was founded when he assured a group of Protestant pastors in Houston, Texas that he would **follow the Constitution** rather than the Pope if he became president. In an address to the Greater Houston Ministerial Association on **September 12, 1960** he eloquently stated:

*“I believe in an America where the separation of church and state is **absolute**; where no Catholic prelate would tell the President—should he be Catholic—how to act, and no Protestant minister would tell his parishioners for whom to vote; where no church or church school is granted any **public funds** or political preference, and where no man is denied **public office** merely because his religion differs from the President who might appoint him, or the people who might elect him.*

*I believe in an America that is **officially neither Catholic, Protestant nor Jewish**; where no public official either requests or accepts instructions on public policy from the Pope, the National Council of Churches or any other ecclesiastical source; where no religious body seeks to impose its will directly or indirectly upon the general populace or the public acts of its officials, and where **religious liberty is so indivisible that an act against one church is treated as an act against all.**”*

**Alexis de Tocqueville**, French political thinker and historian, toured the United States in 1831-1833 and after careful observation of the political system he wrote the famous two volume set, **Democracy in America**. When he asked American political thinkers why there was so much peace in the United States, he was told that it was mainly because of the separation of church and state. In his own words:

*“... all attributed the peaceful dominion of religion in their country mainly **to separation of church and state**. I do not hesitate to confirm that during my stay in America I did not meet*



*a single individual, of the clergy of the laity, who was not of the same opinion.” (Democracy in America, volume 1, p. 308)*

## **A Dire Warning from Ellen G. White**

**Ellen White** has warned about what will happen in the United States when the First Amendment is finally trampled upon:

*“Protestants have tampered with and patronized popery; they have made **compromises and concessions** which papists themselves are surprised to see and fail to understand. Men are closing their eyes to the real character of Romanism and the dangers to be apprehended from her supremacy. The people need to be aroused to resist the advances of this most **dangerous foe** to civil and religious liberty.” GC, p. 566*

*“When the land which the Lord provided as an asylum for His people, that they might worship Him according to the dictates of their own consciences, the land over which for long years the shield of Omnipotence has been spread, the land which God has favored by making it the depository of the pure religion of Christ—when that land shall, **through its legislators** [it will be done by Congress], abjure the principles of Protestantism, and give countenance to Romish apostasy in tampering with God's law--it is then that the final work of the man of sin will be revealed. **Protestants** will throw their **whole influence and strength** on the side of the Papacy; by a **national act** [this is an act of Congress] enforcing the false sabbath, they will give **life** and **vigor** [the United States helps the wound to heal by giving the sword back] to the corrupt faith of Rome, **reviving** [giving her life again so she must have been dead] her tyranny and oppression of conscience. Then it will be time for God to work in mighty power for the vindication of His truth.” Maranatha, p. 179*

It is truly amazing that Ellen White would say such a thing at that time!!! Ellen White was actually saying two things that at the time were inconceivable: 1) The deadly wound of the papacy **would be healed** (contrary to Uriah Smith who said at the same time that the career of the papacy was finished), and 2) the United States would exercise **worldwide influence** to make this possible.

Our next topic of discussion will be on the time when the lamb-horned beast will make an **image of the first beast** and speak like a **dragon**.





## **“The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”**

**by Pastor Stephen Bohr**

# **LESSON #7 – THE IMAGE OF AND TO THE BEAST**

## **Introduction**

In a previous lecture we identified the sea beast of Revelation 13:1-10 as the Roman Catholic papacy. Next we studied about the land beast of Revelation 13:11 and discovered that it represents the United States. The two lamblike horns symbolize the fact that the land beast kingdom, in its founding documents, recognized the simultaneous legitimate existence of two separate kingdoms within one nation—church and state. These two separate kingdoms lie at the foundation of the two principles of civil and religious liberty. In this lesson we want to study the meaning of the image that the land beast will make in honor of the sea beast.

## **What is the Image?**

In order to understand what the image of the sea beast is, we must first ascertain what characterized the sea beast because the image is a replica or reflection of it in its honor (see, for example, Luke 20:24; II Cor. 3:18). It is an image or reflection of the beast and in honor to it. Thus Ellen White asks:

*“But what is the ‘image to the beast’? And how is it to be formed? The image is made by the two-horned beast, and is an image to the beast. It is also called an image of the beast. Then to learn what the image is like and how it is to be formed we must study the characteristics of the beast itself—the papacy.*

The crucial question, then, is this: What was the central characteristic of the Roman Catholic papacy during its heyday?

We have found that the answer to this question revolves around the sword. As stated before, the word ‘papacy’ refers to a church that employs the power of the state to

accomplish its own purposes. Thus the land beast must lend the power of the sword to the first beast in its honor. Ellen White explains clearly and succinctly what the image is:

*“When the early church became corrupted by departing from the simplicity of the gospel and accepting heathen rites and customs, she **lost the Spirit and power of God**; and in order to control the consciences of the people [because the Holy Spirit no longer did], she sought the **support of the secular power**. The result was the **papacy, a church that controlled the power of the state** [notice here that Ellen White clearly defines the meaning of the word ‘papacy’ as the union of church and state] and employed it to further her own ends, especially for the punishment of ‘heresy.’ In order for the United States to form an image of the beast, the **religious power [the church] must so control the civil government [must have the power of the secular sword]** that the **authority of the state will also be employed by the church** to accomplish her own ends” GC, p. 443*

As we have seen, the papacy during the 1260 years **united the church with the state** and then used the punitive **sword of the state** to punish those who dissented from her doctrines and practices. Apostate Protestantism in the United States—the land beast—will make a replica of this. Especially the spiritual leaders will work upon the secular power to safeguard their institutions and to punish those who dissent. In this way they will **make an image** of the mother from whom they were born.

By making an image of the first beast, the United States will disown and **contradict its own founding principles** and make an image or replica of what the papacy did during the 1260 years. As a result, much of the history of what the papacy did to John Hus and the Sanhedrin did to Jesus **will be repeated** in the end time.

We have already interpreted the meaning of the **two horns like a lamb—a single nation** composed of **two separate kingdoms**—church and state. But what is the meaning of the **dragon’s voice**? In order to answer this question we must review what the dragon represents.

## **The Identity of the Dragon**

Let’s review some details about the identity of the dragon. The dragon is the central protagonist of Revelation 12 and 13. As we have seen, it primarily represents **Satan** (Revelation 12:7-9) but it also represents the **Roman Empire** (Revelation 12:3 [Daniel 7:23]; Matthew 2:16). Thus the beast that rises from the earth yet speaks like a dragon must be a spokesman not only for Satan but also **for Rome**.

It was **Satan** who stood next to the woman to **devour her child** as soon as He was born. Satan operated through the instrumentality of Herod, a ruler of the **Roman Empire** (Revelation 12:3 [Daniel 7:23] Matthew 2:16).

When Imperial Rome (represented by the dragon) disintegrated, we are told that it **gave its throne**, its **power** and its **great authority** to the sea beast (Revelation 13:2). That is to say, the papacy continued to exercise the powers of the dragon—Satan and Rome for 1260 years. But then it received the deadly wound.

After convalescing for a period of time with the deadly wound, the wound will be healed by the land beast who will speak **like a dragon**. This must mean that the land beast will not only be a spokesman for Satan but also **for Rome**. And so, the **dragon**, the **sea beast** and the **land beast** are all agents of Satan who operates through Rome.

This phenomenon of Satan operating through the instrumentality of Rome can be clearly discerned in the chronological sequence of events in Revelation 12:

- It was the dragon—Satan through **pagan Rome**—who **attempted to kill the male child** (Revelation 12:1-5)
- It was the dragon—Satan through **papal Rome**—who **persecuted the woman for 1260 years** after the child ascended to heaven (Revelation 12:5, 6, 13-15).
- It **will be the dragon**—Satan through **resurrected papal Rome** with the aid of apostate Protestantism—who will persecute the remnant of the woman’s seed when the deadly wound is healed (Revelation 12:17)
- This is the reason why Revelation 13:4 affirms that the world will not only **worship the beast** but it will also **worship the dragon** from whom the beast received its power, its throne and great authority!

## **The Roman Element**

Ellen White made a very interesting remark about the Papacy having a **Roman element**:

*“She [the Papacy] is silently growing into power. Her doctrines are exerting their influence in **legislative halls**, in the **churches**, and in the hearts of men. She is piling up her lofty and massive structures in the secret recesses of which her former persecutions will be repeated. **Stealthily** and **unsuspectedly** she is strengthening her forces to further her own ends when the time shall come for her to **strike**. All that she desires is vantage ground, and this is already being given her. We shall soon see and shall feel what the purpose of the **Roman element** [this is the iron of the legs, the power of the sword] is. Whoever shall believe and obey the word of God will thereby incur reproach and persecution.” GC, p. 581*

## The United States Speaks

We are told that the nation represented by the land beast will speak like a dragon. The land beast will command all to worship the **image** of the first beast and to receive its mark.

The question is: How does the United States speak? The answer is that it speaks **through the representatives** that the people have elected. The duly elected representatives of the **congress** of the United States are the voice **of** the people, **by** the people and **for** the people. Ellen White explains:

*“The ‘speaking’ of the nation is the action of its **legislative** and **judicial** authorities. By such action it will give the lie to those liberal and peaceful principles which it has put forth as the **foundation** of its policy.” GC, p. 442*

## A Unique Beast

It is significant that Revelation 13:11 is the **only time** in Bible prophecy where we are explicitly told **what kind of horns** a beast had on its head—**lamblike horns**.

Another unique element of this land beast is that in the prophecy of Daniel 7 each successive beast fought against, **defeated** and **replaced** the previous one. But this lamb horned beast is radically different than the previous ones. Instead of warring against the sea beast that immediately preceded it and taking its place, it actually **will help the sea beast** recover its lost power and then will **honor it** by building an image **of** and **to it**.

Everything this second beast does is **linked with the first beast**. It compels the world to **worship** the first beast, to make an **image** of it and to receive its **mark**. The land beast will exercise **all the authority** of the first beast (Revelation 13:14) in the same way that the first beast exercised all the authority of the dragon beast. Thus there is a passing of the baton from the dragon to the sea beast to the land beast. We are told that everything this land beast does is accomplished in the **presence** [*enoopion*] of the first beast. The word ‘presence’ is the same one that is used in **Revelation 13:13** where the land beast makes fire come down from heaven **in the presence** of men, obviously **to impress** them!

The text is clear that the first and second beasts **co-exist** in history and rule together. The second is far younger than the first and is subservient to it and does its bidding in order to impress it (Revelation 13:12, 14). We shall find in our study that the land beast will help the sea beast recover its power by helping tear down three walls that prevent the papacy from exercising world dominion. The first wall is the one between Protestants and Catholics. The second wall is the one between church and state and the third wall is the one between Catholicism and the secular minded worldlings.

## Providential Rise

The terminology of Revelation 13:11 would seem to indicate that this beast from the earth arises in the **providence** of God. That is to say, God made this beast by a **special creative act** for a special purpose. The terminology used in **Genesis 1:24** is very similar to what we find in Revelation 13:11. In both we are told that God brought forth something **out of the earth** by a **creative act**. This must mean that the beast from the earth represents a miraculous creative act of God. In contrast, the first beast rises from the sea and the beast of Revelation 17 rises from the grave or abyss, realms that are under Satan's dominion. Regarding the providential rise of the United States Ellen White remarks:

*"The greatest and **most favored nation** upon the earth is the United States. A **gracious Providence** has shielded this country, and poured upon her the **choicest of Heaven's blessings**. Here the persecuted and oppressed have found refuge. Here the Christian faith in its purity has been taught. This people have been the recipients of **great light and unrivaled mercies**." *Signs of the Times*, July 4, 1899*

## The Two Horns

As we have already seen, the two horns like a lamb represent the **two kingdoms** that Jesus, the Lamb, recognized while He was on the earth. In **John 18:36** Jesus assured Pilate that His kingdom is not of this world. These two kingdoms are mentioned explicitly by Jesus in **Matthew 22:21**:

*"Render therefore to **Caesar** the things that are Caesar's, and to **God** the things that are God's."*

Much is being said today in Evangelical circles about the need for Americans to be **patriotic** and **Christian**. It is assumed that in order to be both, the United States **government must support religion** through things like **inscriptions** on our currency, the expression 'one nation under God' in the Pledge of Allegiance, government **vouchers** for sending children to religious schools, government mandated **school prayer**, federal funds for **charitable choice, religious displays** on public property and the like.

But as we have already seen, to separate the affairs of the church and the state is **Christian** because it is what Christ taught. And it is also **patriotic** because it is in **harmony with the founding documents** of the nation. To join church and state would thus be **antichristian** (contrary to what Christ taught) and **unpatriotic** (contrary to what the founding fathers of America taught).

## The First Amendment

Let's review the first amendment to the Constitution of the United States:

*"Congress shall make no law respecting an **establishment of religion** [clause #1] or prohibiting the **free exercise** thereof [clause #2] or abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press, or the right of the people peaceably to assemble and to petition the Government for a redress of grievances [clause #3]."*

The **first two clauses** of the first amendment are known as 'the establishment clause' and 'the free exercise clause'. The **third clause** guarantees full civil rights. What happens when either of the first two clauses of the First Amendment is violated?

Let's turn to **Daniel 3 and 6** to find the answer to our question. The events described in these two chapters are **real life examples** of what happens when the **first two clauses** of the First Amendment are violated. When either of them is violated, the result is that citizens lose their legitimate civil rights and suffer persecution and ultimately risk losing the greatest civil right of all—life itself. When either of the first two clauses is violated the third clause will also fall by the wayside.

### The Establishment Clause in Daniel 3

One of the foundational **backgrounds** to Revelation 13:11-18 is found in **Daniel 3**. Both of these passages describe a **beast** (Nebuchadnezzar for a time lived like a beast), an **image**, a command by the **civil power** to **worship** the image, and a **death decree** against dissenters. And as we shall see in a later lecture, stealthily hidden behind the dimensions of Nebuchadnezzar's image (60X6) is the **mystic number** 666.

In **Jeremiah 27:4-8** we are told that God commanded all nations to obey king Nebuchadnezzar and if they failed to do so He would punish them:

*"And command them to say to their masters, "Thus says the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel — thus you shall say to your masters: 5 'I have made the earth, the man and the beast that are on the ground, by My great power and by My outstretched arm, and **have given it** to whom it seemed proper to Me. 6 And now **I have given** all these lands into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, **My servant**; and the beasts of the field **I have also given him** to serve him. 7 So **all nations shall serve him** and his son and his son's son, until the time of his land comes; and then many nations and great kings shall make him serve them. 8 And it shall be, that the nation and kingdom which will not serve Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, and which will not put its neck under the yoke of the king of Babylon, that nation **I will punish**,' says the Lord, 'with the sword, the famine, and the pestilence, until I have consumed them by his hand."*



Even though God had warned everyone to be subject to king Nebuchadnezzar, in Daniel 3 we find a description of three young men who **chose to disobey him**. But God, instead of punishing them for not being subject to the king, **rewarded them**! Why?

The answer is that in Daniel 3 the civil ruler, Nebuchadnezzar, attempted to **establish religion**. He **raised an image** and **commanded** all nations, tongues and peoples to worship it. Those who refused to comply with this **religious decree enforced by the state** were to be **deprived of the ultimate civil right**—life itself! Thus when the king overstepped his legitimate realm of authority and attempted to **establish** religion this automatically led to **persecution** against those who failed to comply.

The three young men who refused to worship the image are shown **elsewhere in the book** to be **respectful** of the king's **legitimate civil commands** but when the king **crossed the line** between civil law and religious duty the young men drew a **line in the sand**. When the civil power overstepped its legitimate bounds, the three young men **chose to obey God** rather than man and as a result they were condemned to the **fiery furnace**.

In the final instance the three young men had **no human court** of appeal and it looked like the king had all the cards. In fact the king defiantly raised his hand to heaven and roared like a dragon:

*“And what god will be able to deliver you from my hand?”*

Jesus answered that question when He **personally and spectacularly** intervened to **deliver** His faithful servants from the devouring flames.

### **The Free Exercise Clause in Daniel 6**

The story of Daniel 6 is similar yet different. **God had placed Darius** to rule in **civil affairs** but he overstepped his bounds and gave a religious decree **forbidding the free exercise** of religion. Darius was **not establishing** a religious observance. He was not commanding everyone to pray to a certain god or in a certain manner. He was simply **forbidding the free exercise** right of the people to pray to the God of their choice for a period of thirty days.

In Daniel six we catch a glimpse of what happens when the **free exercise** clause of the First Amendment is violated. When Darius forbade the free exercise of religion in his realm, the inevitable result was the **persecution** of Daniel who insisted upon the right of worshiping his God according to the dictates of his own conscience.

Daniel was **loved by the king** and is seen elsewhere in the book as a **loyal subject** to all the **legitimate civil laws** of the Medes and Persians. He practiced **civil disobedience** only when the king overstepped his legitimate bounds as a civil ruler and pronounced a

religious law. When the king **crossed the line** between civil and religious matters, Daniel drew a line in the sand and commended his case to God.

On this occasion all the power once again seemed to be in the hands of the **enemies of Daniel**. The law of the Medes and Persians could not be **changed or revoked** so it appeared that Daniel was **doomed to destruction**. But as in the case of Daniel's three friends, **God was the final court of appeal** and He intervened in spectacular fashion to deliver his servant from the lions and from his enemies. So it will be with God's faithful remnant people at the end.

### **Nebuchadnezzar and Darius Oblivious**

Significantly, neither **Nebuchadnezzar nor Darius** got the point that God was trying to teach them. After God delivered the three young men from the furnace, **Nebuchadnezzar threatened** that anyone who said anything **against the God of Daniel** would be cut in pieces and their houses razed to the ground (Daniel 3:29). He didn't yet understand that **God does not force** people to embrace true religion any more than the king attempted to force people to practice false worship. Worship is a matter of personal choice, not a matter of civil compulsion!

And after Daniel was delivered from the lion's den, king Darius made a decree that everyone was obligated to **tremble and fear before the God of Daniel** (Daniel 6:26, 27). The king didn't get the point. People **can't be forced to tremble and fear** before God—this must come from a spontaneous heart that loves Him.

### **The First Amendment in the End Time**

Someone might ask: How is all this related to the **United States** in the end time?

The prophecy of Revelation 13:11-18 clearly indicates that the United States will eventually **violate both** the **establishment clause** and the **free exercise clauses** of the First Amendment. It will not necessarily get rid of them but rather will preserve them **in theory** but **deny them in practice**. The land beast will not only compel all to obey the authority of the papacy by **keeping Sunday** thus **establishing religion** but it will also **forbid the observance of the Sabbath** thus forbidding the **free exercise** thereof. Ellen White prophetically understood this when she wrote:

*“The time will come when men will not only **forbid Sunday work**, but they will try to force men to **labor on the Sabbath**, and to subscribe to Sunday observance or forfeit their freedom and their lives.”* Maranatha, p. 177

During the 1260 years **the papacy** attempted to **change the day** of worship from Sabbath to Sunday (Daniel 7:25) and in the future apostate Protestantism in the United States will enforce that change by compelling all to receive the mark of the beast. A comparison of **Daniel 7:25** with **Revelation 13:3-10** reveals some very interesting information. Daniel 7:25 contains **four elements** that relate to the little horn:

- Speaks **great words** against the Most High
- **Persecutes** the saints of the Most High
- Thinks to **change times and laws**
- Rules for a period of **1260 years**

Revelation 13 contains the same elements that relate to the beast but **one appears to be missing**:

- Speaks **great words** and blasphemies against the Most High
- **Persecutes** the saints of the Most High
- Rules for **42 months**

**Where is the parallel** to the change in the times and laws? The answer is found in the fact that the land beast will force all to receive the **mark of the beast** and the mark of the beast is the change in the Law. Thus, during the 1260 days the papacy thought to change the Law and in the future it will enforce the change.

When Protestants in the United States enforce the mark of the beast by civil authority, the process will have come full circle. Just as the **papacy destroyed the apostolic view of the separation of church and state**, so apostate Protestantism will overturn the view of church and state that was established and taught the **founding fathers of the United States**.

### **Aren't Sunday Laws Unconstitutional?**

Someone might legitimately ask: Wouldn't the establishment of a **Sunday law by congress** as the **national day of rest** be a **clear violation** of the **establishment clause** of the first amendment to the Constitution, especially if it is established because Pope Francis I call for it? Wouldn't such a law be clearly unconstitutional?

And a related question: Wouldn't a congressional law **forbidding the observance of the seventh-day Sabbath** also be in violation of the **free exercise clause** of the First Amendment and thus also be **unconstitutional**? The obvious answer of any rational person to these questions would be yes.

I am quite sure that when that time comes, the constitutionality of such laws **will be challenged** in court. But according to Bible prophecy the remnant's appeal will fall upon **deaf ears**—there will be no redress of grievances for God's faithful remnant.

## **Profession and Practice**

It bears noting that we are not to expect the **eradication of the First Amendment** from the Constitution. The First Amendment will **remain in place**. But what will most likely happen is that the **Supreme Court** will declare in a time of dire **national emergency**, that **unconstitutional laws** are **constitutional**. After all, we are not told that the **two lamblike horns** will be **broken** before the land beast speaks as a dragon. It will **still have the two horns** like a lamb while it speaks **like a dragon**.

Ellen White poignantly describes this nuance of the prophecy:

*“The lamblike horns and dragon voice of the symbol point to a **striking contradiction** between the **professions** and the **practice** of the nation thus represented. The ‘speaking’ of the nation is the action of its **legislative and judicial** authorities. By such action it will **give the lie** to those liberal and peaceful principles that it has put forth as the foundation of its policy. The prediction that it will speak “as a dragon” and exercise “all the power of the first beast” plainly foretells a development of the spirit of intolerance and persecution that was manifested by the nations represented by the dragon and the leopardlike beast. And the statement that the beast with two horns ‘causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast’ indicates that the authority of this nation is to be exercised in **enforcing some observance** which shall be an act of homage to the papacy.*

*“Such action would be **directly contrary** to the principles of this government, to the genius of its free institutions, to the direct and solemn avowals of the Declaration of Independence, and to the Constitution. The founders of the nation wisely sought to guard against the employment of secular power on the part of the church, with its inevitable result--intolerance and persecution. The Constitution provides that ‘Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof,’ and that ‘no religious test shall ever be required as a qualification to any office or public trust under the United States.’ Only in **flagrant violation of these safeguards** to the nation's liberty, can civil authority enforce any religious observance. But the **inconsistency** of such action is no greater than is represented in the symbol. It is the beast with lamblike horns--in profession pure, gentle, and harmless--that speaks as a dragon.” GC, p. 442*

## Three Branches of Government

Our system of government like that of many other nations has three branches:

1. The **executive**
2. The **legislative**
3. The **judicial**

As we know, the legislative branch **draws up the laws**, the executive branch **enforces** them and the judicial branch (especially the Supreme Court) **interprets** them. I frequently ask people: Which of these three branches of government is the **most powerful**? The answer is usually, the **executive**. But actually the most powerful branch of government in the United States is the **judicial**, particularly the **Supreme Court**.

And **why** is this? The answer is quite simple. Congress can write a bill and the president can sign it into law but if the law is appealed and the Supreme Court declares it unconstitutional, the bill will **not remain law**. The **flip side** is also true: Congress could draw up a bill that is unconstitutional but if the Supreme Court **declares it constitutional** it would be enforced.

## The Most Powerful Branch

If you don't think that the Supreme Court is the most powerful branch of government, just remember what happened in the **presidential election in the year 2,000**. All of us most likely remember the debacle in Florida. Democrats wanted a vote recount and Republicans did not. After many appeals to various courts of the land, the case was taken to the Supreme Court and when the Supreme Court spoke, **George W. Bush** became president and there was no more discussion. The same could be said about the legalization of **gay marriage** on a federal level. On June 26, 2015 the Supreme Court declared gay marriage constitutional and now all civil magistrates are required to perform gay marriages. Thus the power to declare a law constitutional or unconstitutional lies in the hands of **nine individuals**!

There are now **six Roman Catholics** on the Supreme Court of the United States: Chief Justice **John Roberts** and associate justices **Antonin Scalia**, **Clarence Thomas**, **Anthony Kennedy**, **Samuel Alito** and **Sonia Sotomayor**. There is nothing to indicate that the trend of naming Roman Catholics to the Court will end anytime soon. Catholics compose **25%** of the population of the United States but they own **66%** of the Supreme Court!

Roman Catholics have done all in their power to win over **Barack Obama** to their side and have been quite successful. Shortly after being elected president, Mr. Obama was invited to give the Commencement Address at **Notre Dame University** in the midst of protests and

then shortly thereafter Obama nominated Sonia Sotomayor, a Roman Catholic, as the sixth justice to the Supreme Court. President Obama is also fully on board with Pope Francis on climate change and world poverty, has referred to him as ‘the holy father’, has discussed policy matters with him at the White House, and has referred to the Pope as the greatest moral authority on earth!

The **more liberal judges** on the Court are getting up in years and most likely will be replaced in the next few years. Can we fathom what it will be like to have **seven or more** Roman Catholics on the Supreme Court?

Ellen White has warned us what will happen when a Protestant government becomes entangled with the Roman Catholic Papacy:

*“They [Christians] do not see that if a Protestant government sacrifices the principles that have made them a free, independent nation, and **through legislation** brings into the Constitution, principles that will propagate papal falsehood and papal delusion, they are plunging into the Roman **horrors of the Dark Ages.**” The Review and Herald, December 11, 1888*

Some Seventh-day Adventists say that this **scenario** portrayed by Ellen White is **alarmist** or sensationalist, that the Supreme Court **justices are patriotic** Americans and that they would never return the United States to the horrors of the dark ages. But Ellen White has warned to whom Roman Catholics owe their supreme loyalty:

*“The Roman Catholic Church, with all its ramifications throughout the world, forms one vast organization under the control, and designed to serve the interests, of the papal see. Its millions of communicants, in every country on the globe, are instructed to hold themselves as **bound in allegiance to the pope.** Whatever their nationality or their government, they are to regard the **authority of the church as above all other.** Though they may take the oath pledging their loyalty to the state, yet back of this lies the **vow of obedience to Rome,** absolving them from every pledge inimical to her interests.” GC, p. 580*

## **Fascination with the Papacy**

Many Protestants today are **fascinated** with the papacy. Prominent political leaders such as **Jeb Bush**, **Newt Gingrich** and **Tony Blair** have renounced their Protestant heritage and have converted to the Roman Catholic Church. Many Protestants point to the papacy’s **fight for human rights**, for **religious freedom**, for the **poor**, for **life**, for **morality**, for **conventional marriage** and against what John Paul II called the ‘**culture of death**’. They believe that the papacy **has changed** and therefore that there is nothing to fear. Yet the papacy has not repudiated **any of its dogmas** nor has it laid aside its aspirations to **global political power**. She is harmless when she is helpless. One its leaders once said:

*“In the minority we are a **lamb**; in equality we are a **serpent** and in the majority we are a **lion**.”*

Ellen White added her testimony:

*“It is a part of her [the papacy’s] policy to **assume the character** which will best accomplish her purpose; but beneath the variable appearance of the **chameleon** she conceals the invariable venom of the **serpent**.”* GC, p. 571

Ellen White described the image of the beast over 120 years ago:

*“When the land which the Lord provided as an asylum for his people, that they might worship him according to the dictates of their own consciences, the land over which for long years the shield of Omnipotence has been spread, the land which God has favored by making it the depository of the pure religion of Christ—when that land shall, **through its legislators**, abjure the principles of Protestantism, and give countenance to Romish apostasy in tampering with God’s law—it is then that the final work of the man of sin will be revealed. Protestants will throw their whole influence and strength on the side of the Papacy; by **a national act [an act of congress]** enforcing the false Sabbath, they will **give life and vigor** to the corrupt faith of Rome, **reviving** her tyranny and oppression of conscience. Then it will be time for God to work in mighty power for the vindication of his truth.”* Signs of the Times, June 12, 1893

When this happens, the United States will have formed a **mirror reflection** [image] **of** the papacy **in its honor**. Time and again Ellen White warned about the dangers ahead:

*“In order for the United States to form an image of the beast, the religious power must **so control the civil government** that the authority of the state will also be **employed by the church** to accomplish her own ends.”* GC, p. 443

*“Rome is aiming to **re-establish** her power, to **recover** her **lost supremacy**. Let the principle once be established in the United States that the **church may employ or control the power of the state**; that religious observances may be **enforced by secular laws**; in short, that the **authority of church and state** is to dominate the conscience and the **triumph of Rome** in this country is assured.”* GC, p. 581

*“When the leading churches of the United States, **uniting upon such points of doctrine as are held by them in common**, shall **influence the state** to enforce their decrees and to sustain their institutions, then Protestant America will have formed an **image** of the Roman hierarchy, and the **infliction of civil penalties** [the state using the sword] upon dissenters will inevitably result.”* GC, p. 445

In this way the land beast of Revelation 13:11 will speak **like a dragon**, that is, **like Rome**.

The first beast of Revelation 13 (the papacy) thought to change the law of God by changing the day of worship from Sabbath to Sunday. The second beast will **enforce this change** by using the **sword of the state**. The **whole world** will then be led to follow the example of the United States.

*“As America, the land of religious liberty shall unite with the papacy in forcing the conscience and compelling men to honor the false sabbath, the people of **every country on the globe** will be led to follow her example.”* Testimonies for the Church, volume 6, p. 18

## **How Could It Happen?**

How can such a thing happen when the global power of the United States seems to be **waning** while the power of nations such as China and Russia seems to be increasing? Though we still don't have **all the answers** to this question several things are clear in Bible prophecy.

The issue that will galvanize the world into one body will be **global survival** (see Matthew 24:6-8). No doubt a Sunday law will be enacted in the context of a global **economic meltdown**, a series of unprecedented **natural disasters** perhaps due to climate change, an alarming **increase in crime**, unparalleled **terrorist attacks** and **spectacular manifestations** from the spirit world instructing and encouraging the global political leaders to do away with what they perceive to be the cause of the problems facing the global community. Then the **story of Elijah** will be repeated and God's Remnant people will be called 'troublers of the people.'

The argument that was used against Jesus two thousand years ago will be invoked once again: *“It is better for these dissenters to die than for the United States to perish.”* (See GC 615) In America this argument will appear **patriotic** and **Christian** but it will prove to be just the opposite. As happened with the **Jewish nation**, **national apostasy** will be followed speedily by **national ruin**:

*“When Protestant churches shall unite with the secular power to sustain a false religion, for opposing which their ancestors endured the fiercest persecution, then will the papal sabbath be enforced by the combined authority of church and state. There will be a **national apostasy**, which will end only in **national ruin**.”* Evangelism, p. 235

The question is: How will the United States be able to persuade the entire world to follow its agenda? As mentioned before, global survival will be used as an argument. But there will also be **another factor involved**. The beast from the earth will perform powerful and undeniable miracles to back up its agenda!



## Miracles and The Image

Before we are able to discuss how miracles will be instrumental in getting the world to buy the agenda of Sunday legislation, we must say a few things about the three members of the Godhead.

At the very beginning of Revelation we are introduced to the fact that the Godhead is composed of **three equal beings** each with his **own personality** and individuality but one in purpose.

- First, we have *'the one **who is** and who **was** and who **is to come**.'*
- Second, we have the **seven spirits** who are before the throne
- Finally we have **Jesus Christ**, the faithful witness (Revelation 1:4-5)

In chapters 4 and 5 we once again meet the **Father** who is seated on the throne (Revelation 4:1, 2), the **seven spirits** who are before the throne (Revelation 4:5) and the **Lamb** as though it had been slain in the midst of the throne (Revelation 5:6).

Each of these persons has a particular function in the plan of salvation. God the Father is the **Monarch of the universe** who sits on the throne and is described as the one who *'is and was and is to come.'* But the Father **delegates** His **authority** to Jesus who carries on His Father's work on earth (Matthew 28:18-20).

After **receiving authority** from His Father, Jesus had a **three and a half year ministry** at the end of which He was given a **mortal wound** (Revelation 5:6 [the identical word used in Revelation 13:3 to describe the beast's wound]; see, Isaiah 53:5) but the **wound was healed** when he resurrected and the **entire world** was reached with the message of the resurrected Christ.

When Jesus **ascended** to heaven He delegated His authority to the **Holy Spirit** who spoke in **name of Jesus** (John 14:26) and performed his **wondrous works** even making **fire come down** from heaven on the day of **Pentecost** (Acts 2:1-4). The fire, a symbol of holy zeal, gave power to preach the gospel and brought conviction to thousands all over the world who chose to follow Jesus (Acts 2:47; Colossians 1:6)

## Satan's Counterfeit Trinity

According to the book of Revelation Satan has a **counterfeit godhead** composed of three entities—the **dragon**, the **beast** and the **false prophet** (Revelation 16:13). These three powers **counterfeit** the roles of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit.

The dragon counterfeits the **role of God the Father** because it is described as the one who *'was and is and is to come'* (Revelation 17:8). He is the one who **calls the shots**. He in turn

**delegates** his throne and authority **to the beast** as God the Father delegated His authority to Jesus (Revelation 13:2).

After the beast receives authority from the dragon, he, like Jesus, has a symbolic **three and a half year** ministry (Revelation 13:5). At the end of the three and a half symbolic years, the beast receives a **deadly wound** (Revelation 13:3, 9, 10) but the **wound is healed** (Revelation 13:3) and the whole world **wonders** after the beast marveling because of its miraculous resurrection (see Revelation 17:8).

The false prophet then exercises all the authority of the first beast and **speaks for it** even to the point of making **fire come down** from heaven in the sight of men (Revelation 13:13). The fire from heaven **persuades the multitudes** that the message of the false prophet is true and the whole world wonders after the beast and follows it.

### **Apocalyptic Elijah's Three Enemies**

**Elijah's three enemies** illustrate the functions of each of the members of Satan's counterfeit godhead. Elijah had three enemies:

- The first was the **political ruler**, king Ahab
- The second was the **harlot woman** Jezebel
- The third was the **false prophets** of Baal who did the bidding of the harlot.

These three enemies **foreshadow** the enemies of God's end time Elijah movement.

The beast from the earth is called **THE** false prophet (Revelation 16:13). The definite article indicates that this is a **specific** false prophet with a **proper name**. And what is his name? **Elijah**. He is a **counterfeit Elijah**. How do we know that this is true? Because of his actions!

In the Old Testament, Elijah had three enemies: **Ahab**, **Jezebel** and the **false prophets** of Jezebel. In Revelation we also have three enemies of God's end time people—the **kings**, the **harlot**, the **counterfeit prophet Elijah**. Elijah made fire come down from heaven in the sight of men and this proved that he was God's messenger. The false prophet will bring fire down from heaven deceiving the multitudes that he is God's messenger.

- The first enemy of the end-time Elijah is the **dragon** that represents the **kings of the earth** and the whole world who commit fornication with the harlot (Revelation 16:13, 14; 17:2; 18:3)
- The second enemy of the end-time Elijah is identified as the **great harlot** who sits on many waters (Revelation 17:1). This great harlot deceived the nations by her sorcery (Revelation 18:23). She is also called the **beast**.

- This harlot is called the mother of harlots and of the abominations of the earth. If she is the mother then she must have harlot **daughters** (Revelation 17:5; see also, Revelation 2:20-23) who do her bidding. The daughters are also called the **false prophet**.

The harlot sits upon many waters which means that she rules over peoples, multitudes, nations and tongues (Revelation 17:1, 15)

In order to fully comprehend the relationship among these three end time powers it is also necessary to study carefully the story of **John the Baptist** who was called Elijah by Jesus (Luke 1:17; Matthew 11:11-14; Matthew 17:10-13). The story of **Mark 6:18ff** is particularly important.

In the days of Elijah the message of Elijah was proved true when fire came down from heaven to consume the sacrifices he had placed on the altar. At the end of time the false prophet will **counterfeit this miracle**.

### **Counterfeit Holy Spirit Revival**

Ellen White seems to indicate that the fire that will fall from heaven **will be literal** as on the Day of Pentecost:

*“Satan will work **through his agents** who have departed from the faith to bring fire down from heaven in the sight of men.”* Selected Messages, volume 2, p. 54

You say: “Literal fire falling from heaven? Are you kidding? Really? How could such a thing happen?”

How this might occur can be illustrated by some remarks that were made by world-renowned Pentecostal evangelist and faith healer, **Benny Hinn**. On Friday evening, **November 13, 2001** I was in a hotel room near Tucson, Arizona and happened to tune into TBN’s “Praise the Lord” program. Paul Crouch, President of TBN, was interviewing **Benny Hinn** about his conversion experience. Hinn explained that before he was a Christian he had visions and dreams of himself preaching in stadiums before thousands of people. Then he said this, and I quote:

*“In the last twelve months I have been having some new dreams and visions . . . some amazing dreams. I have been seeing fire. I have seen myself in stadiums where literal fire was falling from heaven. The glory of God is about to be revealed visibly.”*

Benny Hinn then referred to the tongues of fire on the **Day of Pentecost**, the Elijah experience on **Mt. Carmel** and the **pillar of fire** in the wilderness as proof that in the future the fire would fall from heaven at his meetings.

The critical question is this: Would the descent of literal fire from heaven at Hinn's meetings be a sign that the Holy Spirit is being poured out and that his message is true? Of course not! The Bible provides the standard by which all supernatural phenomena must be tested. Our senses cannot be trusted and our feelings can lead us astray.

**Isaiah 8:20** clearly states:

*"To the law and to the testimony! If they do not speak according to this word, it is because there is no light in them."*

Do Benny Hinn's teachings square with the Bible? Two items will prove that they don't. Hinn claims to speak regularly with the spirits of Katherine Kuhlman and Amee McPherson at their graves at Forrest Lawn Cemetery in California. He has also gone on the record stating that Sunday is the day that the Lord has made to be kept by Christians in honor of the resurrection of Christ.

Ellen White describes a **great counterfeit revival** in the Christian world just before the final outpouring of God's Spirit in the Latter Rain:

*"Notwithstanding the widespread declension of faith and piety, there are true followers of Christ in these churches [**the churches identified as Babylon**]. Before the final visitation of God's judgments upon the earth there will be among the people of the Lord such a **revival of primitive godliness** as has not been witnessed since apostolic times. The Spirit and power of God will be poured out upon His children. At that time many will separate themselves from those churches in which the love of this world has supplanted love for God and His word. Many, both of ministers and people, will gladly accept those great truths which God has caused to be proclaimed at this time to prepare a people for the Lord's second coming. The enemy of souls desires to hinder this work; and **before** the time for such a movement shall come, he will endeavor to prevent it by **introducing a counterfeit**. In those churches which he can bring under his deceptive power **he will make it appear** that God's special blessing is poured out; there will be manifest what is thought to be great religious interest. Multitudes will exult that God is working marvelously for them, when the work is that of **another spirit**. Under a **religious guise**, Satan will seek to extend his influence over the Christian world." GC, p. 464.*

## **Religious Ecumenism**

In recent years there has been a growing **illegitimate love affair** between Protestants and Catholics in the United States. **What factors** have fostered this unevenly yoked love fest? Several **theological**, **sociological** and **historical** factors have converged to foster this growing intimacy. Let's examine some highlights.

In **1517** Martin Luther nailed his **95 Theses** on the cathedral door in Wittenberg, an event which historians mark as the beginning of the **Protestant Reformation**. This act began the process of building a **wall of separation** between Protestants and Roman Catholics. Martin Luther laid the first bricks in the wall and others such as Calvin and Zwingli made the wall ever higher.

In order for the Papacy to regain its power, **this wall must tumble down**. The problem is that the wall got higher and higher with the passing of time. **Colonial America** was very suspicious of the papacy and set up laws to impede its progress. But at no time in its history was the United States more inimical to the papacy than in the decades of the **1870's and 1880's**. During this period, Protestants looked upon Roman Catholics with great suspicion because **Pope Pius IX** did several things that angered Protestants. First he was instrumental in the proclamation of the Dogma of the **Immaculate Conception** of Mary in 1854. Then he published his **Syllabus of Errors** in 1864 and capped it all off by presiding at Vatican Council I where the Dogma of **Papal Infallibility** was established in 1870.

These and other actions by the Papacy **alienated Protestants** in the United States from the Vatican and made the rift between the two ever broader and deeper. As late as the **early 1960's** Protestants were still suspicious and fearful of Roman Catholicism as can be seen by **John F. Kennedy's** explanation of his views of church and state to a pastoral alliance in Houston, Texas (more on this later)

### **Vatican Council II (1962-1965)**

Until Vatican Council II, Protestants looked upon Roman Catholicism as a **Latin babbling, Bible suppressing, Protestant hating** cult. Vatican Council II did much to change this image. Good old grandfatherly **Pope John XXIII** presided over the Council in its initial years. Amazingly, the Vatican extended the hand of fellowship to theologians of prominent Protestant churches who were invited to attend the Council as **observers**.

The catchword of the Council was **Aggiornamento** that is Latin for '**renewal**.' The Council encouraged Roman Catholics to study the Bible in **small groups** (under the careful supervision and scrutiny of the priests). The Council encouraged an **orderly dialogue** between Catholic and Protestant theologians. The Mass could now be said in the **languages that the common people** could understand. Protestants were no longer called heretics but rather '**separated brethren**.' Even the rite of **baptism** that was performed in Protestant churches was accepted as legitimate. To the superficial view of the **careless observer**, Roman Catholicism was emerging from the **Jurassic age** and catching up with the times.

Yet to the **careful observer**, the changes were merely **cosmetic**. That is, the Papacy went through a **facelift** but under the facelift it remained the **same old ugly system**. **None of the dogmas** of the Catholic Church were changed or reformed. It still considered itself

**infallible**, still taught that **Sunday** is the Sabbath, that the **dead are not dead**, that we can **pray to the spirits** of departed saints, that sins should be **confessed to a human priest**, that **hell** burns forever, that **Mary** mediates between Christ and sinners, that man is **justified by faith plus works**, that it is acceptable to **bow before idols**, that Christ is **sacrificed anew** in each and every mass, that **priests must be celibate**, that **oral tradition** is of equal authority as Scripture, etc. Yet in the aftermath of the Council the **image of the papacy** began to change for the better in the minds of Protestants. The cosmetic surgery proved to be a success.

## **Election of JFK**

I was just a kid in **Caracas, Venezuela** back then but I still remember as clearly as today that in Seventh-day Adventist churches it was whispered that if John F. Kennedy, a Roman Catholic, won the 1960 election the **national Sunday** law would be right around the corner.

There was fear in the United States about having a Catholic president but it was soon discovered that the fears were **unfounded**. The expected Sunday law and time of trouble **did not come**. What's more, Kennedy's views on the relationship between church and state were **identical to those of Protestants** so people assumed that Kennedy's own understanding was also that of the Roman Catholic Church.

In an address to the Greater Houston Ministerial Association on **September 12, 1960** Kennedy eloquently stated:

*"I believe in an America where the separation of church and state is **absolute**; where no Catholic prelate would tell the President -- should he be Catholic -- how to act, and no Protestant minister would tell his parishioners for whom to vote; where no church or church school is granted any **public funds** or political preference, and where no man is denied **public office** merely because his religion differs from the President who might appoint him, or the people who might elect him.*

*I believe in an America that is officially neither Catholic, Protestant nor Jewish; where no public official either requests or accepts instructions on public policy from the Pope, the National Council of Churches or any other ecclesiastical source; where no religious body seeks to impose its will directly or indirectly upon the general populace or the public acts of its officials, and where **religious liberty is so indivisible that an act against one church is treated as an act against all.**"*

Kennedy's death was a traumatic event for the people of the United States. The optimism that Kennedy had sown (through the establishment of organizations such as the Peace

Corps) in the hearts of the youth was shaken to the core. Whether you loved or hated him, Kennedy's death caused a **deep trauma in the psyche** of the American people.

## **Ban on Government Sponsored School Prayer**

Another event that galvanized Protestants and Catholics and led them to conclude that government was inimical toward religion was the **Supreme Court's 1962** decision to ban government sponsored school prayer. In **Engel vs. Vitale**, a strongly civil-libertarian court, headed by Chief Justice Earl Warren, ruled that reciting **nondenominational prayers** written by **government officials** violated the Establishment Clause of the Constitution.

The Board of Education of Union Free School District No. 9 in **New Hyde Park, New York**, at the time required students to recite a 22-word, **nondenominational prayer** every morning. Several parents sued claiming that this prayer requirement violated their children's freedom of religion. The United States Supreme Court ruled that the daily prayer ritual **violated the First Amendment's Establishment Clause**, even though students were given the opportunity not to participate. The Establishment Clause provides that "*Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion.*"

The Court wrote an unusual opinion, one that does not cite any cases, or rely on any prior case law, in support of its decision. Instead, the Court relied on the **history of religion** and its relationship with government and warned of the **dangers of a union between church and state**. The Court supported its position using historical examples, such as the notorious religious intolerance in **17th century England** that contributed to the European migration to North America and the founding of the American colonies. The Court wrote:

*"It is a matter of history that this very practice of establishing governmentally composed prayers for religious services was one of the reasons that caused many of our early colonists to leave England and seek religious freedom in America."*

## **Roe v. Wade**

Perhaps no single event in the last forty years has done more to cement the relationship between Protestants and Catholics and to mobilize them in a common cause than the **Roe v. Wade** decision by the Supreme Court in **1973**. This decision has mobilized conservative **Protestants and Catholics** in a relentless attempt to overturn it. A **politician's attitude** toward Roe v. Wade for a long time became the **litmus test** of political orthodoxy to the religious right. For years, organizations such as the **Moral Majority** and the **Christian Coalition** distributed voter guides in evangelical churches which served as a report card on a politician's view on abortion, school prayer, vouchers, etc.

**Norma McCorvey** who used 'Jane Roe' as a pseudonym brought this class-action lawsuit before the Supreme Court. The defendant in the case was Dallas County, Texas district attorney, **Henry B. Wade**. McCorvey, representing all pregnant women, contended that the Texas abortion law **violated the privacy rights** of pregnant women. The case was heard at the Supreme Court in Washington, D. C. Using the **Ninth Amendment** (which guarantees the right to privacy) as the basis for their ruling, **seven of the nine** judges voted to overturn the Texas abortion law (Chief Justice Warren Burger, Harry Blackmun, William J. Brennan, William O. Douglas, Thurgood Marshall, Lewis Powell and Potter Stewart). The two judges who dissented were William Rehnquist and Byron White. The arguments of the plaintiff's attorneys were based on the Ninth Amendment idea that abortion **is a personal decision** and that a person's **right to privacy** is infringed upon when abortion is forbidden. The defense attorneys on the other hand argued that the **unborn have certain legal rights** that must be protected by the state.

What made the decision particularly thorny was the fact that the Texas abortion law targeted only those who performed the abortion and **not those who sought it**. Thus, Assistant District Attorney John Tolle argued that McCorvey **lacked standing** to sue because the law did not apply to her since she was seeking an abortion and not performing it.

Tolle also requested a personal interview with the so called 'Jane Roe' but in an anonymous affidavit filed by her attorneys she declined because the notoriety of the case might damage her ability to secure a job in the future and also because her right to privacy might be severely infringed upon.

On **January 22, 1973**, the Supreme Court handed down its decision. Reading from his majority opinion, **Justice Harry Blackmun** reviewed the history of abortion legislation in the United States, writing:

*"The restrictive criminal abortion laws in effect in a majority of states today . . . are not of ancient or even of common law origin."*

Rather, Blackmun said, it seemed that legislators had designed these laws to protect women from a procedure that was, in the 19th century, a **risk to their health**. That objective was no longer valid, said Blackmun, since abortions were now as safe as or safer than childbirth for women.

Blackmun then turned to a discussion of the "right to personal privacy," before coming to the central point of his decision:

*"The right of privacy, whether it is founded in the Fourteenth Amendment's concept of personal liberty and restrictions on state action . . . or . . . in the Ninth Amendment's*



*reservation of rights to the people, is broad enough to encompass a woman's decision to terminate her pregnancy."*

Discussing Texas' claim that it had the right to infringe on Roe's rights "to protect prenatal life," Blackmun examined the U.S. Constitution to see if the Founding Fathers had intended to include prenatal life when they used the word "person" in the document. He concluded that nowhere in the document had he found "any possible pre-natal application." He declared, "The word 'person' as used in the Fourteenth Amendment, **does not include the unborn.**"

## **Erosion of Moral Values in Society**

The decade of the 1960's was a period of moral transition for the United States. The **Beatles, Elvis Presley, and Woodstock** glorified the use of drugs and encouraged sex outside of marriage and rebellion against all authority. The **Vietnam War** galvanized the youth against the political establishment and the slogan 'make love, not war' became the **clarion call of the hippies**. There can be no doubt that the 1960's were a **watershed decade**. It brought into existence an entire generation of young people who **openly defied the authority** of parents, teachers, preachers, the Bible and political institutions. Morality in the United States **precipitously decayed**. The backlash from the religious community was to be expected and in the course of time **Protestants and Catholics joined hands to 'moralize' society**.

It was perceived that the moral deterioration of society demanded **unity of action**. To use the expression of **Chuck Colson**, 'we cannot afford to be divided when the barbarians are scaling the walls'. There was a perception, and it is real, that the **political left** and the secular humanists were inimical to religion and would rather have religion cease to exist! Growing economic turmoil, social unrest, war, drug trafficking, disrespect for authority, erosion of family values, terrorism, and natural disasters create an *angst* that **demand**s **united action** in order to restore sanity to society.

So, the recent decades have seen a growing intimacy between the conservative Protestant churches in America and the Roman Catholic papacy. Enthusiastic **cooperation on social issues** such as abortion, gay marriage, school prayer, school choice vouchers, religious displays on public property and judicial activism gave them a common agenda. Cooperation in the election of conservative candidates gave them a **common cause**.

## Political Activism Due to the Disintegration of Morality

Journalist Cal Thomas once wrote:

*“If we will not be constrained from within by the power of God, we must be **constrained from without** by the power of the State acting **as God’s agent**.” Harper’s Magazine, March 1995, p. 30*

Ralph Reed, the first president of the Christian Coalition was invited to speak at the **Catholic Campaign for America** and explained the united socio-political agenda of conservative Protestants and Catholics:

*“The Catholic vote holds the key to the future and I believe that if they can **unite**, if Catholics can **unite** with the Evangelical Christians, the Protestants who **share their views** on the sanctity of innocent human life and the need for religious liberty, and school choice, and common sense values, I believe if Catholics and Evangelicals can **unite** there is no person who **runs for office** in any city or any state in America that **can’t be elected** and there is **no bill that can’t be passed** in either house of Congress or any state legislative chamber anywhere in America. It is the emerging force in the **electorate** today. The Pope does use the term hierarchy of doctrine. Father Robertson said: ‘Obviously some teachings are more important than others and there has to be an **agreement on those essential points** while leaving considerable latitude on other points that are **less essential** to the faith.”*

Author and theologian Tim LaHaye made legislative reform a necessary precondition for revival:

*“While it is true that God has already given America three national revivals in the past, we desperately need another one today. Personally, I am not sure we can have one without **legislative reform**.” Clifford Goldstein, The Saving of America, p. 47*

Of course the question begs to be asked: Is revival brought about by the inward working of the Holy Spirit or is it accomplished by legislative reform?

Richard Hogue in his book, Saints and Dirty Politics linked Christian involvement in politics with bringing back the nation to the Lord:

*“ . . . if our country survives—and I realize that’s a big IF—it will be because there is an awakening in the lives of committed Christians across our nation who finally begin to realize that it is not only their opportunity but also their absolute responsibility to be **intricately involved in the political process of our country** and use that involvement to turn **this nation once again to the Lord**.” (Quoted in Clifford Goldstein, The Saving of America, p. 53)*

And **Ralph Reed**, who was the first president of Pat Robertson's **Christian Coalition**, joined the chorus of voices clamoring for Christians to take back the country through political involvement:

*"What Christians have got to do is **take back this country**, one precinct at a time, one neighborhood at a time, one state at a time. I honestly believe that in my lifetime we will see a country once again **governed by Christians**." (Quoted in Clifford Goldstein, Day of the Dragon, p. 72)*

Radical right winger **Randall Terry** gave a speech at Willoughby Hills, Ohio in July of 1993 where he challenged Christians:

*"Our goal must be simple: We must have a **Christian nation built on God's law**, on the Ten Commandments. No apologies." (Speech by Randall Terry at Willoughby Hills, Ohio in July of 1993)*

**Pat Robertson**, speaking at the concluding meeting of the **Second Annual Road to Victory Conference** of the Christian Coalition on **September 12, 1992**:

*"Two thousand three hundred years ago the world was at a similar crisis as it is today, and a man named Haman erected a gallows to kill God's man, Mordecai. We see that same thing today and who knows but what you are come to the kingdom for a time such as this . . . The **enemies of religious freedom** have erected a gallows for us but they will be hung on their own gallows.*

*"God told me in December 1991 that He was going to bless the Christian Coalition beyond our wildest expectations. Before the year 2000, the Christian Coalition will be the most powerful organization in the United States. We will have over 1.7 million Christian activists in all counties and voting precincts in America. People will be calling from Washington D. C. to ask us what is the position of the Christian Coalition **so that we will know how to vote** . . .*

*"Reports of the demise of the Christian Right have been greatly exaggerated. We are alive, growing and better organized than ever. Even if George Bush is not reelected this year, we're going to be back in 1993, and in 1994, we are going to be back in 1995 and in 1996 and 1997 and 1998 and 1999. We're going to be back **until we win it all**."*

*The recent major natural disasters, the San Francisco earthquake, hurricane Andrew, hurricane Iniki are evidences that God is displeased with the wickedness of our nation and we can expect these disasters to increase until **we get our nation back to God**."*

Many years before, **Pat Robertson** had already expressed the objectives of the Christian right:

*“. . . we have together with the Protestants and the Catholics **enough votes to run the country** and when the people say, ‘We’ve had enough,’ **we are going to take over.**”* *Conservative Digest*, August, 1979:

**Robert Grant**, president of *Christian Voice*, which was a branch of the **Moral Majority** established by Jerry Falwell once said:

*“If Christians unite we can do anything. We can pass any law or **any amendment** and that’s exactly what **we intend to do.**”* Quoted in *Liberty Magazine*, May/June 1980, p. 4

In a television interview, **Grant** stated:

*“We can do anything. We can **amend the Constitution**. We can **elect a president**. We can **change** or make **any law** in the land. And it behooves us to do it. If we have to live under the law, as well, we should live under **moral and Godly Law.**”* (20/20 program the week of the Democratic National Convention in 1980)

What many conservative religious leaders want today is exactly what the religious leaders wanted during the **Colonial period**. They believe that the political system united with the religious leaders can **preserve the moral fiber** of the nation. But history proves that the opposite is true. Ellen White warned:

*“The regulation adopted by the early colonists, of **permitting only members** of the church to vote or to hold office in the civil government, led to most **pernicious results**. This measure had been accepted as a means of **preserving the purity of the state**, but it resulted in the **corruption of the church**. A profession of religion being the condition of suffrage and office holding, many, actuated solely by motives of **worldly policy**, united with the church without a **change of heart**. Thus the churches came to consist, to a considerable extent, of **unconverted persons**; and even in the ministry were those who not only held errors of doctrine, but who were ignorant of the **renewing power of the Holy Spirit**. Thus again was demonstrated the evil results, so often witnessed in the history of the church from the days of Constantine to the present, of attempting to **build up the church by the aid of the state**, of appealing to the **secular power in support of the gospel** of Him who declared: “My kingdom is not of this world” John 18:36. The union of the church with the state, **be the degree never so slight**, while it may appear to bring the world nearer to the church, does in reality but bring **the church nearer to the world.**”* *GC*, p. 297

The humanist philosopher, **Friedrich Nietzsche** expressed it this way: “Be careful when you fight the dragon lest you become a dragon.” By wanting to fight against the **dragon of the left wing**, or **secular humanism**, the **Christian right** will speak like the **dragon** that they wish to overcome. Presently it appears that the moral issues are on the backburner

but when things get really bad, Catholics and Protestants will join forces to bring America 'back to God'.

## **Judge Roy Moore**

Judge Roy Moore was a state judge who campaigned in the year 2000 to become the **Chief Justice of the Alabama Supreme Court**. He campaigned as the '**Ten Commandments Judge**' and promised that if elected he would display the Ten Commandments in the state court building. With the support of the religious right, he won in a **landslide**.

Alabama is notorious for being a **bastion of the religious right**, a stronghold of the so-called Bible belt. Bible belt Protestants have traditionally taught that the Ten Commandments were nailed to the cross and that we are not under law but under grace. They have been strong opponents of Seventh-day Adventists who have sought to uphold the perpetuity of God's moral law. And so it is quite puzzling that they would want to post the Ten Commandments in America's courtrooms when they believe that the law was nailed to the cross!! Yet the religious right fought tooth and nail in support of Judge Moore's Ten Commandment monument.

In fact the monument weighed a whopping **5,300 pounds**. It was sneaked into the state building after working hours on **July 31, 2001** without informing any of the other justices on the court. Several religious right supporters financed the building of the monument.

**Americans United** for the Separation of Church and State immediately sued Judge Moore, along with the **American Civil Liberties Union** and the **Southern Poverty Legal Center**. In the trial that ensued, Judge Moore had to testify before United States District Court **Judge Myron Thompson**. During the trial, Moore boldly declared that Buddhism is not a religion that is protected by the First Amendment. In his legal opinion, Justice Thompson pointed out that Judge Moore's position almost amounted to the **establishment of a theocracy**. Justice Thompson stated:

*"His fundamental, if not sole, purpose in displaying the monument was **non-secular**; and the monument's primary effect **advances religion**."*

Not surprisingly, a good share of Justice Moore's legal expenses were raised by **D. James Kennedy**, who before his death was a staunch opponent of the separation of church and state and by his own admission would have liked the United States to return to the **theocratic style** of government that existed in **Calvin's Geneva** or in Colonial America. One is reminded that Servetus was burned at the stake for heresy under Calvin's system.

At the conclusion of the trial, Judge Moore was given **30 days** to remove the monument or face the threat of **removal from office**. Judge Moore refused to budge and was removed from office. In a rather long article, **CNN** reported:

“On **November 13, 2003**, Alabama's Court of the Judiciary unanimously **removed Moore** from his post as Chief Justice.

Alabama's judicial ethics panel removed Chief Justice Roy Moore from office Thursday for defying a federal judge's order to move a Ten Commandments monument from the state Supreme Court building.

The nine-member Court of the Judiciary issued its **unanimous decision** after a **one-day trial** Wednesday.

The panel, which includes judges, lawyers and non-lawyers, could have reprimanded Moore, continued his suspension or cleared him.

The ethics panel said Moore put himself above the law by "willfully and publicly" flouting the order to remove the 2.6-ton monument from the state judicial building's rotunda in August.

U.S. District Judge Myron Thompson ruled the granite carving was an unconstitutional endorsement of religion. Moore refused to obey the order but was overruled by his eight colleagues on the state Supreme Court. On November 3, the U.S. Supreme Court refused to hear Moore's appeal of Thompson's ruling.

Moore 'showed no signs of contrition for his actions,' the Court of the Judiciary found.

Moore's critics said they were not yet satisfied.

Richard Cohen, a lawyer for the Southern Poverty Law Center—one of the groups that sued Moore over the monument—said the organization would seek to have Moore disbarred.

After the ruling, Moore said he was not surprised by the decision and that he was being removed from office because he 'acknowledged God.'

Moore read comments by Alabama Attorney General Bill Pryor in 1997 that defended his display of the Ten Commandments in his courtroom when he was a state circuit court judge.

Pryor filed the ethics charges after Moore refused to remove the monument.

'God has chosen this time and this place so we can save our country and save our courts for our children,' Moore said.

President Bush has nominated Pryor to a seat on the 11th U.S. Circuit Court of Appeals. Senate Democrats are trying to block the nomination by filibuster.

Pryor, a Republican, has said he believes the Ten Commandments display was constitutional, but he said Thursday federal court orders must be obeyed.

'At the end of the day, when the courts resolve those controversies, we respect their decision,' he said. 'That does not mean that we always agree with their decision.'

On Wednesday, prosecutors showed the ethics panel documents and videotapes they said proved Moore defied a lawful court order in violation of his oath of office. They rested their case after 25 minutes."

Alabama Christian Coalition president, **John Giles** said that he believed that there would be a **backlash** against the ruling in Alabama.

'I am afraid the judge's order putting a 30-day limit on the removal of the monument will lead to an uprising of citizens protesting removal of that monument.'

Because of this decision conservative **Protestants and Catholics** have accused the government of being inimical to religion in general and to the Ten Commandments in particular. This has provided fuel to the fire of evangelicals who have **accused the Federal Judiciary** of being activist and secular humanist.

Thomas Jefferson once warned that threats to freedom come, not when the government acts against its constituents, but when 'a government is a mere instrument of the major number of constituents.'

## **Vouchers, Charitable Choice and Religious Displays**

In recent years the failure of the public education system has led Protestants and Catholics to **lobby together** for school vouchers that will allow parents to send their children to **sectarian schools at government expense**. Of course the Roman Catholic Church stands to benefit most from this arrangement because they have the largest parochial school system in the country.

Protestants and Catholics have also made great strides in getting the government to support their **charitable organizations**. **George W. Bush** signed an executive order authorizing the federal government to give money to private and sectarian charities. Is this not the case of **Caesar rendering to God, that which is Caesar's?** Would we feel comfortable if the government requested churches to pay a portion of their tithes as taxes in order to reduce the Federal budget deficit? Would this not be rendering unto Caesar that which is God's?

Another area of debate that has joined Protestants and Catholics in a common camp is the issue of **religious displays on government property**. For example, when government

magistrates refuse to put up nativity scenes on public property, the Christian right has cried foul, claiming that this is discriminatory against Christianity.

## **The Marriage Debate**

The issue of marriage has also helped fuse the relationship between Protestants and Catholics. The papacy (and rightly so!) has been a staunch defender of conventional marriage as the union between a man and a woman. Conservative Protestants agree. The Manhattan Declaration, which was signed by conservative Protestants and Catholics, puts the pressure on the political leaders of the United States to defend the sanctity of heterosexual marriage. The legalization of gay marriage by the courts and legislatures in several states and on a federal level has led Christian conservatives to feel like the government has become morally lax.

Ironically, the political left in the United States is in favor of gay marriage that is clearly contradictory to the institution of marriage that was established by God at Creation. On the other hand, conservative Catholics and Protestants are in favor of Sunday sacredness that is clearly contradictory to the creation story where God made the seventh-day Sabbath holy. So both the left and the right are attempting to change creation institutions. It is crass hypocrisy to defend the sanctity of marriage on the basis of creation and not to sustain the equal sanctity of the Sabbath that was created at the same time and in the same place!

## **Theological Ecumenism**

The word 'ecumenism' means 'to dwell in the same house'. After Vatican II Protestant and Roman Catholic scholars began meeting on a regular basis to discuss theological issues. In these contacts friendships were formed and a consensus was sought on the 'basics' of the Christian faith. Three documents signed by prominent Protestant and Catholic leaders in recent years illustrate how the two sides have drawn closer and closer together. The first was *Evangelicals and Catholics Together*, the second was the *Joint Declaration on Righteousness by Faith* and the third was the *Manhattan Declaration*.

## **Evangelicals and Catholics Together**

The twenty-five page document, *Evangelicals and Catholics Together: The Christian Mission in the Third Millennium* was signed on March 29, 1994 by 39 of the most influential evangelicals and Catholics in the United States at the time, including Richard Neehaus (a prominent clergyman who converted from the Lutheran to the Catholic Church), Charles Colson (of Watergate and prison ministries fame), Pat Robertson (founder of the Christian Broadcasting Network), the late John Cardinal O'Connor (who



was in charge of the archdiocese of New York) as well as other influential bishops, archbishops and scholars. The document discouraged Protestants and Catholics from **proselytizing members** from one another's churches and encouraged Protestants and Catholics to work together in the **evangelization** of the world.

**Pat Robertson's** explained the reason why he signed the document:

*"The moral crisis facing society today and the obvious social breakdown mandates a **closer cooperation** between people of faith. The time has come where we must **lay aside minor points** of doctrinal differences and focus on the Lord Jesus Christ. . . I'm lending my support because I believe it's imperative that we work to **bring the body of Christ together.**"*  
*Christian American, May/June, 1994*

**USA Today**, March 30, 1994 had this to say about *Evangelicals and Catholics Together*:

*"The leaders in a statement [Evangelicals and Catholics Together] are urging the nation's fifty-two million Catholics and thirteen million evangelicals to no longer hold each other at theological arms length and stop aggressive proselytizing of each others' flocks, in short, to turn their theological swords into a recognition of a **common faith.**"*

One of the signers of this document was **Keith Fournier** who wrote a book titled, **House United**. This book has incredible **ecumenical implications**. Notice his comment on page 336:

*"Catholics, Protestants and Orthodox can **come together**, must **come together**, and are **coming together**. The **wall of separation is cracking**, portions of the wall are beginning to fall away. Christians are waking up and starting to see each other as Family."*

**Kenneth Kantzer**, in an article in *Christianity Today*, "Church on the Move," November 7, 1986, p. 16 remarked:

*"Finally we [Catholics and Evangelicals] can **work together** on those **political** and **social** issues where we are in such **strong agreement**. Our **united effort** in these areas will do much to influence the world to the good . . . In spite of **basic differences**, we can use our **common** Judeo-Christian value system to forge moral leadership that will advance the cause of justice and peace through a stable society in our nation and around the world."*

### **Joint Declaration on Righteousness by Faith**

On **October 31, 1999** after 33 years of deliberation and negotiation (which began right after Vatican II) Roman Catholic and Lutheran leaders (who represented **61.5 million** Lutherans worldwide) signed the **Joint Declaration on Righteousness by Faith** in which they concluded that Martin Luther's rift with Rome was actually due to a misunderstanding

and was a battle **over semantics** (definition of words). The irony of the whole matter is that the document was signed exactly **482 years to the day** after Martin Luther nailed his **95 Theses** to the cathedral door in Wittenberg.

## **The Manhattan Declaration**

More recently thousands of religious leaders, both Protestant and Roman Catholic signed the **Manhattan Declaration**. I have written extensively on the importance of this document in a Secrets Unsealed Newsletter a portion of which I will quote here:

“Perhaps some of you have heard of the *Manhattan Declaration*. This document was drafted on **October 20, 2009** and released on **November 20** by some very influential Roman Catholic, Protestant, Evangelical and Orthodox religious leaders in the United States and the world. Among **those who have signed** the Declaration are bishops and archbishops, university presidents, theological seminary presidents, seminary teachers, chancellors, leaders of various family life organizations, senior pastors of influential mega and giga churches, lawyers and world renowned Christian authors, editors and religious broadcasters.

To date there are over **one half million signatories** from every religious stripe—Roman Catholic, Episcopalian, Anglican, Orthodox, Methodist, United Methodist, Baptist, Presbyterian, Reformed, Salvation Army, Christian, Reformed Episcopal, Church of God in Christ, Congregational, Pentecostal, Church of Christ, Evangelical Free, Assembly of God, Church of the Brethren, Lutheran—a truly ecumenical group! In fact the drafters of the Declaration have explicitly stated: ‘we act together’ and we have ‘united at this hour’ to ‘reaffirm fundamental truths.’ In another place the Declaration states:

*“We are Christians who have **joined together** across historic lines of **ecclesial differences** to affirm our right—and, more importantly, to embrace our obligation—to speak and act in defense of these truths.”*

As I see it, this ecumenical spirit is one of the most problematic aspects of the Manhattan Declaration.

## ***Ut Unum Sint***

To these three documents must be added John Paul’s encyclical, *Ut Unum Sint* (‘that they all may be one’) where He envisions the day when Protestants and Catholics can gather together under the same roof to **celebrate the Eucharist or Mass**. This is a significant call because, according to Roman Catholic theology, only a properly **ordained priest** by apostolic succession has the power to transubstantiate the bread and the wine into the body and blood of Jesus. This must mean that if and when such an ecumenical Mass is

celebrated, a **Roman Catholic priest** must officiate because only he can transubstantiate the bread and wine.

## **Together on Common Points**

It is an undeniable fact that Roman Catholic and Protestant theologians have drawn ever closer together on what they consider to be the '**bare minimums**' of the Christian faith.

**Chuck Colson** in the introduction to Roman Catholic **Keith Fournier's** book, *Evangelical Catholics* (notice that Fournier claims to be both Evangelical and Catholic), makes several remarkable statements:

*"It's high time that all of us who are Christians **come together regardless of the differences** of our confessions and our traditions and make **common cause** to bring Christian values to bear in our society. When the barbarians are scaling the walls, there is no time for petty quarreling in the camp." p. 1*

*"But at root, those who are called of God, whether Catholic or Protestant, are part of the **same Body**. What they share is a belief in **the basics**: the virgin birth, the deity of Christ, His bodily resurrection, His imminent return, and the authority of His infallible Word. They also share the **same mission**: presenting Christ as Savior and Lord to a needy world" p. vi.*

*"I pray that this [Fournier's] book will be read by Catholics and Protestant alike, that it will be **a bridge** across many of the historic divisions in the church that have weakened our stand in today's culture" p. vi.*

**Ralph Reed** who was the first president of Pat Robertson's Christian Coalition and now lobbies for Christian causes in Congress said the following in a speech that he delivered to the **Catholic Campaign for America**:

*"The truth is, you and I are uniting . . . We are **coming together** because whatever **theological differences** there are, there is far more that **unites us** and **brings us together** than divides us and separates us . . . The good news is the **chasm is being bridged** and that those **walls are crumbling** . . . The truth my friends is this. **Catholicism never has been, is not today, and never will be a threat to American democracy.** It was and remains the most colorful and the most vibrant thread running through the tapestry of American democracy."*

One's mouth drops wide open when one hears Reed unashamedly and recklessly affirm:

*"Cardinal Gibbons said this: he said, **No constitution is more in harmony with Catholic principles than the American constitution** and no religion is more in accord with that constitution than the Catholic religion."*

Here Ralph Reed is obviously suffering from historical amnesia and Gibbons is knowingly prevaricating.

Reed continued his speech:

*“I want you to know that as Evangelicals we stand **shoulder to shoulder** with you in insuring that never again will bigotry be directed **against Catholics** and their religion be used to try and silence them and drive them from the public square.*

*“I think you know that we have recently launched a division of the Christian Coalition called the Catholic Alliance which is designed to formalize and continue **to build bridges** in our partnership with Roman Catholics. The Catholic Alliance, like the Catholic Campaign, will be a lay movement.”*

**Ellen White** warned that Christian conservatives would do exactly as Reed suggested:

*“When the leading churches of the United States, **uniting upon such points of doctrine** as are held in **common**, shall influence the state to enforce their decrees and to sustain their institutions, then Protestant America will have formed an image to the Roman hierarchy, and the infliction of civil penalties upon dissenters will inevitably result.” GC, p. 445.*

**Ralph Reed** as reported in *The Amarillo Sunday News Globe*, December 10, 1995 referred to divisions as a ‘luxury’ that Christians can no longer live with:

*“We can no longer afford to be divided. It is a **luxury** that is no longer ours. The left wants you and I to be divided. Nothing frightens them more than Christians **shattering the barriers of denomination**.”*

He further affirmed:

*“Obviously, some teachings are more important than others, and there has to be an **agreement on** those **essential points**, while leaving considerable latitude on other points that are **less essential** to the faith.” Ralph Reed, *Our Sunday Visitor*, January 14, 1996.*

**Gary North**, one of the leaders of the religious right once stated:

*“We must use the doctrine of religious liberty to gain independence for Christian schools until we train up a generation of people who know that there is **no religious neutrality** . . . Then they will get busy in **constructing a Bible-based social, political and religious order** which finally denies the religious liberty of the enemies of God.” Gary North quoted in *The Religious Right: The Assault on Tolerance and Pluralism in America*, pp. 5, 6*

**Ellen White's** prediction in 1888 appeared **totally absurd** but is now quite believable:

*"When the land which the Lord provided as an asylum for His people, that they might worship Him according to the dictates of their own consciences, the land over which for long years the shield of Omnipotence has been spread, the land which God has favored by making it the depository of the pure religion of Christ--when that land shall, **through its legislators**, abjure the principles of Protestantism, and give countenance to Romish apostasy in tampering with God's law--it is then that the final work of the man of sin will be revealed. **Protestants will throw their whole influence** and strength on the side of the Papacy; by a **national act** enforcing the false sabbath, they will **give life and vigor** to the corrupt faith of Rome, **reviving** her tyranny and oppression of conscience. Then it will be time for God to work in mighty power for the vindication of His truth." *Maranatha*, p. 179.*

**W. A. Criswell**, who for many years was the senior pastor of the First Baptist Church in Dallas, one of the largest Baptist churches in the United States, had this to say about the ecumenical union of Protestants and Catholics:

*"I don't know anyone more dedicated to the great fundamental doctrines of Christianity than the Catholics." W. A. Criswell, former president of the Southern Baptist Convention. Quoted in, Dave Hunt, *A Woman Rides the Beast*, p. 388.*

And what does **Billy Graham** (who for over seven decades was the most admired pastor in the United States and the dean of all Protestant evangelists) have to say about Roman Catholicism?

*"I've found that **my beliefs are essentially the same** as those of orthodox Roman Catholics." Billy Graham, quoted in Dave Hunt, *A Woman Rides the Beast*, p. 388.*

In **1981 Billy Graham** hailed the pope as *"the greatest moral leader of the world and the world's greatest evangelist."* Quoted in Michael de Semlyen, *All Roads Lead to Rome?* p. 170

US News and World Report quoted Graham as saying:

*"World travel and getting to know the clergy of all denominations has helped mold me into **an ecumenical being**. We're separated by theology and, in some instances by culture and race, but all of that **means nothing to me anymore**." *US News and World Report*, December 19, 1988.*

On the *Good Morning America* program, Billy Graham stated on **August 12, 1993**:

*"I admire the Pope. We address the same moral issues."*

When the Pope visited **Salt Lake City**, **Larry King** interviewed Billy Graham On January 21, 1998 on his program *Larry King Live*. Notice how the dialogue unfolded:

**King:** “Do you feel comfortable with Salt Lake City? Do you feel comfortable with the Vatican?”

**Graham:** “Oh, I’m very comfortable with the Vatican. I’ve been to see the Pope several times, and, in fact, the day that he was inaugurated, made Pope, I was preaching in his Cathedral in Krakow. I was his guest.”

**King:** “You were preaching in his church the day he was made Pope?”

**Graham:** “That is correct, in Krakow.” (Graham chuckled)

**King:** “You must have been shocked.”

**Graham:** “Of course I was. There was shouting on the streets, you know, the next day: ‘Polish Pope, Polish Pope.’”

**King:** “Do you like this Pope?”

**Graham:** “I like him very much. He’s very conservative . . . He and I agree on almost everything.”

In the Introduction to the book by Keith Fournier, *Evangelical Catholics*, **Charles Colson** of Watergate fame and who spearheads Prison Ministries International stated:

*“It’s high time that all of us who are **Christians come together** regardless of the differences of our confessions and our traditions and make **common cause** to bring Christian values to bear in our society. When the barbarians are scaling the walls, there is no time for **petty quarreling** in the camp.”*

In the ecumenical meeting that was held at **St. Joseph’s Church in Manhattan**, New York on Friday, April 18, 2008 we can see an example of this growing intimacy between Protestants and the papacy. No less than **250 leaders** from the great mainline Protestant denominations and other Christian organizations in the United States participated including United Methodists, Evangelical Lutherans, Lutheran Church Missouri Synod, the National Association of Evangelicals, Presbyterians, the Reformed church, the National Baptist Convention, various Pentecostal groups, Greek Orthodox, Armenian and Episcopalian. **Even the Mormons** were represented! Fifteen of these leaders were chosen to personally shake the Pope’s hand.

**Benedict XVI** stood at the **front of the church** in his white papal robe and cassock as each of these **fifteen** representatives came forward to cordially shake his hand; some of them inclining their head to him and all of them uttering **kind words**. This, in spite of the fact that Benedict has explicitly said that **Protestant churches are not true Christian**

**Churches.** So to speak, Martin Luther must have been rolling over in his grave at such a betrayal of the Protestant Reformation that cost so much sweat, blood and tears!

## **Tony Palmer and the Pope**

Probably most have heard of Tony Palmer. Who was he and what motivated him? He was an Anglican clergyman of the Celtic Tradition who belonged to a church that is seriously **fragmented** with **offshoots** everywhere. For this reason he **yearned for a unity** of Christians driven by a **common subjective experience**.

In February of 2014 Palmer was invited to address a charismatic leader's convention organized by Pentecostal mega-pastor Kenneth Copland. Palmer stated that God had brought him to **Kenneth Copland's leaders' convention** (on February 25, 2014) **'in the spirit of Elijah'** to bring the hearts of the sons to the fathers and the fathers to the sons—that is to say, to **unite all Christians**

Palmer lamented that after Martin Luther's Reformation, **Protestantism has split into 33,000** denominations and sects. This led him to announce that **'diversity is divine'** and **division is 'diabolic'**. He then went on to affirm that God has given charismatics **the glory** so that they **may be one**. Downplaying the importance of doctrine, he stated:

*"It is the glory that glues us together, **not the doctrine**. It's the glory. If you accept that the glory of God is living in me and the presence of God is in you, that's all we need because **God will sort out all our doctrine later upstairs** . . . Christian unity is the basis of **our credibility** because Jesus said that until we are one the world will not believe."*

In **1999** Lutherans and Catholics signed a **joint declaration** on righteousness by faith where they stated that they were on the same page on the doctrine of **righteousness by faith**. **Five years** later the **Methodists** signed the declaration as well. This led Palmer to confidently state that **Luther's protest is over**. In his own words:

*"Brothers and sisters, **Luther's protest is over**. Is yours?"*

After lamenting that to date **no evangelical church** has signed the agreement Palmer said:

*". . . this must be fixed. . . The protest has been **over for 15 years**. If there is no longer any protest, how can there be a protestant church? **Maybe now we are all Catholics again.**"*

Palmer had a close friendship with **Pope Francis I** and before the convention he visited the Pope in the Vatican and taped a video message **on his cell phone** to deliver to the hundreds of leaders gathered at the convention. The Pope passionately pleaded for **the visible unity of all Christians**.

He **said**:

*"I am yearning that this separation comes to an end and gives us communion. I am yearning for that embrace."*

At the **end of his message** the Pope pleaded with the hundreds of charismatic leaders:

*'Please **pray for me**, I need your prayers. And I will pray for you, but I need your prayers. And let's pray to the Lord that **He unites us all**. Come on, we are brothers. Let's give each other a **spiritual hug** and let God complete the work that He has begun. And this is a miracle; the **miracle of unity has begun**. I ask you to bless me; I bless you. From brother to brother I embrace you.'*

After the Pope delivered his message, the delegates **stood, clapped, cheered** and raised their hands as **Kenneth Copland** moved to the stage repeating the word: *"Glory, glory, glory!"*

When he arrived on stage Copland affirmed, *"We do not know how to pray for him [the Pope] as we ought"* so he uttered a prayer **in tongues**.

After his prayer, Copland invited Palmer come on stage with his **cell phone** and Copland recorded a message for Palmer to take back to the Pope:

*"These leaders represent literally tens of thousands that **love you**, that believe that **God is with you**, and in answer to your request we have just prayed for you and with you, and we did so in the spirit. We do **bless you**; we **receive your blessing**. It is very, very important to us. And we bless you with all of our **hearts**, we bless you with all of our **souls**, we bless you will all of our **might**, and we thank you sir, we thank God for you, and so, all of us declare together: **"Be blessed."***

## **James Robison**

After Copland's convention, several influential Protestant leaders were invited by the Pope to visit the Vatican. One of these leaders was James Robison. Upon meeting the Pope, Robison looked him in the eye and said:

*"Pope Francis, let me just say to you that **I see Jesus in you**; and in Christ we are **brothers**, we are family. Thank you for speaking **the language of love** that all may come to know him and love him and love one another."*

And then Robison gave the Pope the **first high five** in papal history!

May 5, 2014 Tony Palmer was invited to James Robison's program 'Life Today' and stated:

*"**Diversity** is divine; it is **division** that is diabolic. . . **Jesus' theology** is that if God is in you and you are in God and God is in me and I am in God, we are one together in God. . . Our sin is that we don't make our **unity visible** because we allow our **diversities to divide** us and if we*



elevate anything to divide us we are elevating it above the cross. So, whether it is a **doctrine or a dogma** or an expression, if you use that to divide our unity you have elevated that doctrine or whatever it may be above the cross. Now we are not saying 'put doctrine aside, certainly not!' Pope Francis recognizes only **two fundamental doctrines**—love for God and love for your neighbor, end of doctrine!"

## **Joel Osteen**

Mega-church pastor Joel Osteen was also the Pope's guest at the Vatican. After his visit, Osteen exclaimed: "I just felt very **honored and very humbled.**" (television station *Click 2 Houston*). He further stated:

*"It was amazing. And even to go back into that part of the Vatican—there's **so much history** there, the place that they took us through. You feel that deep **respect and reverence for God.**"*

The **Lakewood** leader also met with other **Vatican staff** during his visit, including Cardinal **Pietro Paroli, Secretary of State** for the Vatican, and had dinner with an unspecified staff member.

**Osteen attended mass** in St. Peter's Square on Wednesday prior to the meeting in the midst of a crowd of **100,000 people**. Osteen reminisced:

*"Afterward, [the Pope] spent an hour and a half going through the crowd with the Pope mobile, greeting people," he recalled to the *Houston Chronicle*. It was very heartwarming to see him **caring for people**. . . I love the fact that's he's made the Church **more inclusive**. . . Not trying to make it smaller, but to try to make it larger—to take everybody in. So, that just **resonates with me.**"*

## **Rick Warren**

Rick Warren, the author of the blockbuster best sellers, *The Purpose Driven Church* and *The Purpose Driven Life* and who has been described as the successor of Billy Graham as the most influential evangelical in the world has also made several trips to the Vatican. Recently Warren has made some amazing statements about Pope Francis I referring to him as the 'holy father' and calling him 'our Pope'. He stated in November of 2014 that Catholics and Protestants 'have far more in common than what divides us.' He went on to say:

*"They [Catholics and Protestants] would all say: 'We believe in the Trinity; we believe in the Bible; we believe in the resurrection; we believe in salvation through Jesus Christ. These are the big issues."*

Warren then admonished Protestants:

*"Sometimes Protestants think that Catholics worship Mary like she's another god, but that's **not exactly Catholic doctrine**. People say: 'What are the saints all about? Why are you praying to the saints? And when you understand what they mean by what they are saying, there's a whole lot more **commonality** [that we have with Roman Catholics] . . . There's still real differences—no doubt about that, but the most important thing is, if you love Jesus, **we're***

**on the same team**. . . When it comes to the family, we are co-workers in the field in this for the protection of the sanctity of life, the sanctify of sex and the sanctity of marriage. So, there's a **great commonality** and there's no division on any of those three."

## **Ulf Eckman**

Title of the online article in Christianity Today (posted on **March 10, 2014**):

"Sweden's Pentecostal Mega-pastor Converts to Catholicism"

The **subtitle** read:

"He stuns his Word of Life mega-church in Sunday sermon: He's crossing the Tiber."

"Just who is Ulf Eckman? He founded the 3,300-member mega-church in one of Sweden's largest cities. He operated the largest Bible school in Scandinavia. It has educated more than 9,500 students in the period of its existence. On **Sunday, March 9**, he announced to his **stunned congregation** that he was leaving his congregation to join the Roman Catholic Church."

What reason did he give?

"I have come to realize that the movement I, for the last 30 years have represented, despite some successes and much good that has occurred on various mission fields, is **part of the ongoing Protestant fragmentation** of Christendom".

He stated that he would now dedicate his time to **pursue unity** among Christian movements and denominations.

He stated that as he became **acquainted with Roman Catholics** he grew **closer and closer** to them. For a **decade a transformation** was taking place. In his own words:

"It really challenged our **protestant prejudices**, and we realized that we in many cases did not have **any basis for our criticism of them**." "We needed to know the Catholic faith better. This led us to realize that it was actually **Jesus Christ who led us to unite** with the Catholic Church."

He also said:

"We have seen a great love for Jesus and a **sound theology founded on** the Bible **and** classic dogma [in other words, 'tradition']. We have **experienced** the richness of sacramental life. We have seen the logic in having a **solid structure** for priesthood that keeps the faith of the church and **passes it on** from **one generation to the next**. We have met an ethical and moral strength and consistency that dare to **face up to the general opinion** [social factors], and a kindness towards the **poor and weak**. And, last but not least, we have come in contact with representatives for millions of **charismatic** Catholics and we have seen their living faith."

**Dave Hunt** is one of the few evangelicals that have foreseen the dangers of the Protestant-Roman Catholic love affair:

*“This indicates that not only Roman Catholicism and Eastern Orthodoxy will be united, but that **Protestants will join together with them**, along with all of the world’s religions, including even the Muslims, to form one new world religion.” A Woman Rides the Beast, p. 39*

**Ellen White** sounded an alarm similar to Dave Hunt’s:

*“Protestants have **tampered with and patronized popery**; they have made **compromises** and **concessions** which papists themselves are surprised to see and fail to understand. Men are closing their eyes to the real character of Romanism and the dangers to be apprehended from her supremacy. The people need to be aroused to resist the advances of this most dangerous foe to civil and religious liberty.” GC, p. 566*

### **Ellen White on Uniting on Common Points of Doctrine**

*“When the leading churches of the United States, **uniting upon such points of doctrine** as are held by them **in common**, shall **influence the state** to enforce their decrees and to sustain their institutions, then Protestant America will have formed an **image** of the Roman hierarchy, and the **infliction of civil penalties [the state using the sword]** upon dissenters will inevitably result.” GC, p. 445*

*“The **wide diversity of belief** in the Protestant churches is regarded by many as decisive proof that no effort to secure a forced uniformity can ever be made. But there has been for years, in churches of the Protestant faith, a strong and growing sentiment in favor of a union based upon **common points of doctrine**. To secure such a union, the discussion of subjects upon which all were not agreed--however important they might be from a **Bible standpoint**--must necessarily be waived.” GC, p. 444*

*“The Protestant churches **are in great darkness**, or they would discern the signs of the times. The Roman Church is far-reaching in her plans and modes of operation. She is employing **every device** to extend her influence and increase her power in preparation for a fierce and determined conflict to **regain** control of the world, to **re-establish** persecution, and to undo all that Protestantism has done.” GC, pp. 565, 566*

*“Rome is aiming to **re-establish** her power, to **recover** her lost supremacy. Let the principle once be established in the United States that the **church may employ or control the power of the state**; that religious observances may be **enforced by secular laws**; in short, that the **authority of church and state** is to dominate the conscience and the **triumph of Rome** in this country is assured.” GC, p. 581*

*"The people of the United States have been a favored people; but when they **restrict religious liberty, surrender Protestantism,** and give **countenance to popery,** the measure of their guilt will be **full,** and "national apostasy" will be registered in the books of heaven. The result of this apostasy will be **national ruin.**" Maranatha, p. 216*

## **Attack on the Wall**

As we have seen, the Founding Fathers built a tall wall of separation between **church and state**. In order for the Papacy to gain the ascendancy again, this wall must come tumbling down. The wall was built in **1787** when the Constitution was ratified and in **1791** when the first Ten Amendments to the Constitution were adopted. As we have already studied, the **two horns like a lamb** are ingrained in the First Amendment:

*"Congress shall make no law respecting an **establishment** of religion or prohibiting the **free exercise** thereof."*

As long as the government of the United States upholds the First Amendment the papacy cannot ascend to power once again. **Jesuit priest**, Malachi Martin stated as much when he wrote that *"two hundred years of inactivity have been imposed upon the papacy by the major secular powers of the world."* The Keys of this Blood, p. 22

Yet **Ellen White** has made it clear that the **restraint** by the secular power will be removed:

*"Let the **restraints** now imposed by **secular governments** [the First Amendment prevents the government from legislating in matters of religion] be **removed** and Rome be reinstated in her former power, and there would speedily be a revival of her tyranny and persecution. GC, p. 564*

As we have previously seen, nine years after the First Amendment was adopted, Thomas Jefferson wrote a letter to the **Danbury Baptist Association in 1802** where he explained his understanding of the first two clauses of the First Amendment by using the **metaphor of the wall** that he most likely borrowed from Roger Williams:

*"Believing with you [the Danbury Baptists] that **religion** is a matter which lies solely between Man and his God, that he owes account to none other for **his faith** or **his worship**, that the legitimate powers of government reach actions only, and not opinions, I contemplate with sovereign reverence that act of the whole American people which declared that their legislature should "make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof," thus **building a wall of separation between Church and State.**"*

Yet right wing religious leaders today wish to tear down the wall of separation between church and state. They think they have a better understanding of the First Amendment than Thomas Jefferson and James Madison.

**Keith Fournier**, who was President of the **American Center for Law and Justice**, the legal arm of Pat Robertson's organization once said:

*"Yet there is **a wall** which has been **mistakenly** erected in our own beloved country. Its impact on religious freedom has perhaps had an even more devastating effect [than the Berlin Wall], it is the so called **wall of separation of church and state**."*

**Pat Robertson** himself wrote:

*"They [**liberals and secular humanists**] have kept us in submission because they have talked about **separation of church and state**. There is **no such thing in the Constitution**. It's **a lie of the left**, and we're not going to take it anymore." (Anti-Defamation League, *The Religious Right: The Assault on Tolerance and Pluralism in America*, p. 4)*

**Jerry Falwell**, long time senior pastor of the Thomas Road Baptist Church in Lynchburg, Virginia once stated:

*"**Separation of Church and State** has long been the battle cry of civil libertarians wishing to purge our glorious Christian heritage from our nation's history. Of course, the term **never once appears in our Constitution** and is a **modern fabrication** of discrimination." Quoted in *Church and State*, June 2006, p. 14*

The late **D. James Kennedy** creator of Evangelism Explosion and longtime senior pastor of Coral Ridge Presbyterian church spoke of the wall of separation as diabolical:

*"If we are committed and involved in taking back the nation for Christian values . . . there is no doubt we can witness the **dismantling** of not just the Berlin wall but the even more **diabolical** 'wall of separation' that has led to secularization, immorality, and corruption in our country." (Quoted in "They Said It! Religious Right Leaders in Their Own Words.")*

**W. A. Criswell**, who for years was the senior pastor of the **First Baptist Church in Dallas** and is also the former president of the **National Baptist Convention** once boldly affirmed:

*"I believe that this notion of the separation of **church and state** was the **figment of some infidel's imagination**." *The Saving of America* p. 59*

Former **Arizona state** senator **John B. Conlan** several years ago argued, as do many Protestants and Catholics that:

*"The **separation of church and state** is a false issue. It is a slogan created by the **secular humanists** that **sounds legal** but in fact is a sham. It does **not appear anywhere in the constitution**, and it is not a concept that our Founding Fathers believed . . . 'Separation of church and state' . . . is simply a line of propoganda created by modern humanists to*

intimidate Christians and make us believe that we are second-class citizens.” The Saving of America, p. 59

**Keith Fournier**, on **September 10-12, 1992** in Washington, D. C. at the **Second Annual Road to Victory** Briefing Conference of the **Christian Coalition** stated:

“The **wall of separation between church and state** that was erected by **secular humanists** and other **enemies of religious freedom has to come down**. That wall is more of a threat to society than the **Berlin Wall** ever was. Those opposing our views are the new Fascists.”

**David S. Nelson** who was the director of **Pat Robertson’s Christian Coalition in Colorado** stated:

“The separation of church and state is (1) not a teaching of the founding fathers; (2) not an historical teaching; (3) not a teaching of law (except in recent years);(4) not a Biblical teaching. In summary, there should be absolutely **no ‘separation of church and state in America.’**” Undated flyer in 1992

### **Reinterpreting the Intent of the First Amendment**

The **1994 agenda** of the Republican Party in Congress was expressed in the book, Contract with the American Family, pp. 4, 5:

“The founding Fathers intended the establishment clause to insure that America’s political institutions would never be used to benefit **one religion at the expense of another.**”

“They [Europeans] believed that the European system of officially sanctioned ‘**state religions**’ benefited neither the state nor the religion involved. Indeed, it was from such systems that the Pilgrims and Puritans fled. This is what is rightly meant by the phrase, ‘**separation of church and state.**’

The Contract with the American Family, p. 1, refers to this when it stated:

“We have witnessed the steady **erosion** of the time honored **rights of religious Americans**. The time has now come to **amend the Constitution to restore** freedom of speech for America’s people of faith.”

**Tim LaHaye** is quoted in Time September 2, 1985 as saying that **25% of federal jobs** should go to Christian conservatives. He also said:

“No humanist is qualified to **hold any governmental office.**”

This flies in the face of the **fourteenth amendment** to the Constitution where we are clearly told that there can be **no religious test** to occupy any **office of trust** in these United States.

Notice what **Ralph Reed** says in his book, *Politically Incorrect*, p. 16

*“The future of American politics lies in the growing strength of Evangelicals and their Roman Catholic **allies**. If these two core constituencies—evangelicals comprising the swing vote in the south, Catholics holding sway in the north—can **cooperate** on issues and support like minded candidates they can **determine the outcome** of almost any election in the nation. Nasty nativism and dark distrust about Popery and foreign influence have been swept into the **ash heap of history**. John F. Kennedy’s election in 1960 buried the Catholic bogeyman forever. No longer **burdened by the past**, Roman Catholics, Evangelicals, Greek Orthodox and many religious conservatives from the mainline denominations are forging **a new alliance** that promises to be among the most powerful and important in the modern political era.”*

### **The Makeup of the Supreme Court**

**William Rehnquist**, the late Chief Justice of the United States Supreme Court once said:

*“**The wall** of separation between church and state is a metaphor **based on bad history**; a metaphor which has proved **useless** as a guide to judging; it should be frankly and explicitly **abandoned**” *The Saving of America*, p.*

Presently **six** of the nine justices on the Supreme Court, including the Chief Justice, are Roman Catholics. This does not bode well for religious liberty in the United States.

### **Immigration from Latin America**

As is well known, immigration from Latin America, both legal and illegal, has exploded in the last few decades. It is estimated that some 13 million illegal immigrants presently live in the United States, most of coming into the United States from the **southern border**. Irrespective of what one thinks about the issue of immigration, this influx of people has given the Seventh-day Adventist Church **great opportunities** for evangelism. Scores of Latin Americans in the United States have told me that they would probably never have known our message if they had not come to the United States.

But Latin American immigration into the United States also presents **grave dangers**. Most of the immigrants are Roman Catholics who bring with them a Roman Catholic political and religious philosophy. That is, they are **unacquainted with the vision** of the Founding Fathers of the United States. They come from countries where Roman Catholicism has been linked with the state and receives **special favors** from it. Separation of church and state is

an **alien concept to them**. In the future, when Catholicism implants its principles into the political system of the United States these immigrants, as good Roman Catholics, will most likely support religious legislation on the part of the government.

## **Shift in Prophetic Understanding**

For some three hundred years after Luther nailed his 95 Theses to the cathedral door, Protestants unanimously identified the papacy as the predicted antichrist of Bible prophecy. As a result, country after country in Europe withdrew their support from the papacy. The papacy knew that it would not be enough to **counteract the message** (hammered out at the **Council of Trent** 1545-1563) of Protestantism so it undertook the task of **changing its method** of interpreting prophecy.

In the early 19<sup>th</sup> century there was a shift in Protestant prophetic understanding (for the full story read my book, **Futurism's Incredible Journey**). Protestants forsook historicism as the governing method for the study of Bible prophecy and embraced Preterism and Futurism straight from the bosom of the Roman Catholic Jesuit counter-reformation:

- **Preterism** (Luis de **Alcazar**: Roman Catholicism and mainline protestant churches)
- **Futurism**: (Francisco **Ribera**: Conservative Protestantism such as Pentecostals, Baptists and Evangelicals)

Futurism and Preterism **hide** the identity of the **first beast**, the **second beast**, the **image** of the beast and the **mark** of the beast. If you get the **beast wrong** everything else will be wrong.

While everyone is **looking at Israel, Turkey and the Islamic State in east** for the fulfillment of prophecy, it is fulfilling in **the west** with the papacy and the United States and no one can see it because they are looking in the **wrong place**. This is the **real reason** for the turmoil in the **Middle East!**

## **The Rise of the Charismatic Movement and Neo-Mysticism: Worship styles based on subjective experience rather than the Word of God**

**Time** magazine for **March 21, 2005** carried an interesting article titled:

***"Hail, Mary: Catholics have long revered her, but Protestants are finding their own reasons to celebrate the mother of Jesus."***

In the article the writer states that Protestants are taking another look at Mary through the prism of Roman Catholic eyes.



The ideas and practices of Roman Catholic mystics are now being incorporated into the prayer habits and devotional life of many Protestant churches and are taught regularly in theological seminaries. These methods include practices that were established by Middle Ages mystic, St. Francis Assisi (where Pope Francis I got his name) and by the founder of the Jesuit Order, St. Ignatius Loyola. These practices are referred to by different names including 'Contemplative Prayer' and 'Spiritual Formation'. The end result of this type of devotional life is to cast aside doctrine. 'After all', it is said, 'why should we fight about arid, dry, intellectual doctrines when the Spirit is giving us all the same experience'?

And sadly, Satan has not only invaded the Protestant world but also the Remnant Church. As is well known, a **refined type of Spiritualism** is attempting to penetrate the Seventh-day Adventist Church in the form of Spiritual Formation and Contemplative Prayer. Everyone must be aware, for example, of the ONE PROJECT that many of our campus chaplains are attempting to implement on our university campuses. Their expressed intention is to change not only the face, but also **the very heart** of the Seventh-day Adventist Church. It is suggested that **seven books** be read on this subject:

- Stephen P. Bohr, Worship at Satan's Throne
- Dave Fiedler, Tremble
- Rick Howard, Meet It
- Thomas Mostert, Hidden Heresy
- Howard Peth, The Dangers of Contemplative Prayer
- Rick Howard, The Omega Rebellion
- Carsten Johnsen, The Mystic Omega of End Time Crisis

## **The Prestige of John Paul II**

John Paul II gave great **visibility and likeability** to the Roman Catholic Church. In spite of the sex-abuse scandals, **His travels** to the four corners of the earth raised the esteem of the Roman Catholic Church in the eyes of the world. John Paul was considered a role model because he took a **strong moral stand** on issues such as the right to life, traditional marriage, and against unrestrained materialism. He was a **favorite among the youth** and was instrumental in bringing down the iron curtain.

The high esteem in which he was held by the world can be seen as much in his death as in his life. At John Paul's funeral there were **80 heads** of state, political representatives from over **200 countries**, and representatives of all the world's **major religions** including Muslims, Jews, Hindus and Buddhists. **Three United States presidents** attended (Bill Clinton, George Herbert Walker Bush, and George W. Bush; as well as Condoleezza Rice and Mrs. Bush). It is said that Jimmy Carter wanted to attend but was slighted.

One of the impressive pictures etched in memory's hall was that of three presidents along with Laura Bush and Condoleezza Rice kneeling before the Pope's dead body. Over **5 million** people from all over the world went to Rome to pay their respects to memory of the Pope and some **300,000** gathered in St. Peter's Square for the funeral. Some stood in line for **24 hours** just to view his body. For two weeks, practically the only news on television was on the Pope's life and death. The pomp and ceremonies that accompanied the services were simply spectacular and awe-inspiring.

### **The Roman Catholic Media**

The television media in the United States is almost totally controlled by Roman Catholics. Most of the **talk show hosts** and news **anchors** and news **pundits** are Roman Catholics.

### **Renewed Emphasis on Sunday**

John Paul II wrote a Pastoral Letter titled *Dies Domini* (the Lord's Day) where he sought to encourage the leaders of his church to put a renewed emphasis upon the importance of Sunday as the 'Christian Sabbath.' In it he underlines that **materialism and consumerism** have shut out God and people need a common day of worship for family life and personal rest.

Notably, **Protestants feel very comfortable** with much of this pastoral letter because they believe that Sunday is the correct day of worship. Traditionally, the Roman Catholic Church has argued that the change of the Sabbath to Sunday was due to Tradition without any foundation in Scripture. But John Paul II in *Dies Domini* uses the same skewed arguments from Scripture that Protestants have used since time immemorial. I am sure that he has done this to please Protestants who do not accept the authority of Tradition as the basis for Sunday observance.

It is also well known that the Roman Catholic Church pressing hard for a Sunday law to be enforced in the entire **European Union**. Hundreds of organizations including Protestant Churches and labor unions have lobbied the European parliament for a European Union Sunday law for the common good of family and social harmony. It is recommended that the students read my article: "*Reflections on the Pope's Agenda*" in this syllabus for more information on how Pope Francis I have used poverty, immigration, family and climate change to highlight the importance of Sunday.

## **Prophecy's View: The Sword will be Restored**

**Dr. Ralph Reed** who was the president of the Christian Coalition in its heyday once stated:

*"The truth my friends is this. Catholicism never has been, is not today, and **never will be a threat** to American democracy. It was and remains the most colorful and the most vibrant thread running through the tapestry of American democracy." (Quoted in G. Edward Reid, *Sunday's Coming*, p. 72)*

To the contrary, **Ellen White** warned:

*"When Protestant churches shall **unite with the secular power** to sustain a false religion, for opposing which their ancestors endured the fiercest persecution, then will the papal sabbath be enforced by the combined authority of **church and state**. There will be a **national apostasy**, which will end only in **national ruin**." *Ev*, p. 235 (1899)*

*"**Protestants** will throw their whole influence and strength on the **side of the papacy**. By a **national act** enforcing the false sabbath they will **give life and vigor** to the corrupt faith of Rome, **reviving** [Revelation 13:3] her tyranny and oppression of conscience." *Maranatha*, p. 179*

*"When the leading churches of the United States, **uniting upon such points of doctrine** as are held by them **in common**, shall **influence the state** to enforce their decrees and to sustain their institutions, then Protestant America will have formed an image of the Roman hierarchy, and the infliction of **civil penalties** upon dissenters will inevitably result. *GC*, p. 445*

*". . . there is an **increasing indifference** concerning the doctrines that separate the reformed churches from the papal hierarchy; the opinion is gaining ground that, after all, we **do not differ so widely upon vital points as has been supposed**, and that a little concession on our part will bring us into a better understanding with Rome." *GC*, p. 563*

*"Protestants have tampered with and **patronized** popery; they have made **compromises** and **concessions** which papists themselves are surprised to see and fail to understand. Men are closing their eyes to the real character of Romanism and the dangers to be apprehended from her supremacy. The people need to be aroused to resist the advances of this **most dangerous foe** to civil and religious liberty." *GC*, p. 566*

Ellen White explained the **secret** of the power and prosperity of the USA:

*"Among the Christian exiles who first fled to America and sought an asylum from royal oppression and priestly intolerance were many who determined to establish a government upon the broad foundation of **civil and religious liberty**. Their views found place in the Declaration of Independence, which sets forth the great truth that "all men are created equal"*

and endowed with the inalienable right to "life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness." And the Constitution guarantees to the people the right of self-government, providing that representatives elected by the popular vote shall enact and administer the laws. Freedom of religious faith was also granted, every man being permitted to worship God according to the dictates of his conscience. **Republicanism and Protestantism** became the **fundamental principles** of the nation. These principles are **the secret of its power and prosperity.**" *GC*, p. 411.

## **Political Ecumenism**

In **1867** the United States broke relations with the Vatican and forbade any future diplomatic relations with it. But a subtle change in mood on the part of the United States government was seen when in **1951**, president **Harry Truman** suggested that it would be a good idea to formalize diplomatic relations with the Vatican. Truman was not prepared for the **uproar and backlash** from the American people who were still very much aware of the antagonism between the principles of Protestantism and Romanism.

When Truman nominated **General Mark W. Clark** to be our ambassador to the Vatican, the public opposition was so strong that General Clark withdrew his name and the nomination was killed before it reached confirmation in the Senate. In **1970 President Richard Nixon** asked Henry Cabot Lodge to make periodic visits to the Vatican for the purpose of exchanging views on international and humanitarian projects but he did so **without diplomatic status.**

But on **September 22, 1983** the ban on diplomatic relations came to an end when **Ronald Reagan** (with barely a whimper from an inclusive and pluralistic American people) appointed **William A Wilson** as the first United States ambassador, not to the State of Vatican City, but to the Holy See. The announcement was made on **January 10, 1984**. On **March 7, 1984**, the Senate confirmed **William A. Wilson** as the first U.S. ambassador to the Holy See. Now, for the first time, one of the two world superpowers had contributed to the healing of the deadly wound. Just six years later, the other superpower (Communism) would cave when in **1989** the Soviet Union also established full diplomatic relations with the Holy See.

Though the appointment of William A. Wilson did not awaken the furor that the nomination of General Mark W. Clark had, there was still much discussion in the Senate before his confirmation. The discussion revolved around the issue of how the United States could send an ambassador to a church and yet not violate the constitutional separation of church and state. Some senators tried to obviate this problem by insisting that the ambassador was being **sent to Vatican State** rather than to the Holy See. Concerning this crafty argument, V. Norskov Olsen remarks:

*“While Vatican City is subordinated to the Holy See and ambassadors are accredited not to the former but to the latter [the Holy See], it is acknowledged that the Pope could not claim the prerogatives of a temporal ruler without the Vatican City State. Referring to the international juristic personality of the Catholic Church and the Lateran Treaty, Cardinal Hyginus Eugene, apostolic nuncio to Belgium and the European Economic Council, writes that the latter ‘merely once more provided the Pope, who is the spiritual sovereign of the Church, with another title to sovereignty, that of temporal sovereignty, which would immediately cease to exist if the Vatican State became extinct.’” (V. Norskov Olsen, Papal Supremacy and American Democracy (Riverside, California: Loma Linda University Press, 1987), p. 52.*

What Olsen is saying is simply this: It is impossible to say that the ambassador is being sent to Vatican State without at the same time saying that the ambassador is being sent to the Holy See. The reason is simple: Vatican State gives the Pope, as the religious leader of the Holy See, a legitimate right to claim temporal power. You cannot any more separate the Pope’s secular power from his religious power than you can separate the body from the spirit!

Another controversial issue had to be resolved was how the United States could show **preferential treatment** to one church above all the others. This problem was simply ignored and never resolved. Yet in spite of these two problems, the nomination went through with few objections. The United States had prepared the way for the full healing of the deadly wound!

## **The Holy Alliance**

One of the greatest dangers to world peace after the Second World War was the global growth of communism. The spirit of communism that had its origins in the French Revolution, expanded to Russia in the 1917 **Bolshevik Revolution** and matured in the agreement between Truman, Churchill and Stalin after **World War II**. It was further bolstered in the **1960’s** when nation after nation seemed to be embracing communism. In order for the papacy to ascend to global power, Communism had to be overcome and it was, thanks to an alliance between the United States government and the Vatican. As reported in *Time Magazine*:

*“On June 7, 1982, Reagan and John Paul met for fifty minutes at the Vatican. During that conversation the plot was hatched **to eliminate communism**. In that meeting, Reagan and the Pope agreed to undertake a **clandestine campaign** to hasten the dissolution of the communist empire. Declares Richard Allen, Reagan’s first National Security Adviser: “This was one of the great **secret alliances** of all time.” *Time*, February 24, 1992, “The Holy Alliance, p. 28.*

The fascinating book by **Carl Bernstein**, *His Holiness*, documents with luxury of detail what happened behind the scenes. The **economic and military** might of the United States combined with the **on-the-ground intelligence** of the Roman Catholic Church brought down the Iron Curtain. Ironically, Reagan and the Pope were **wounded by would be assassins** just a few months apart but their wounds were healed. They both had a destiny to fulfill.

In 1990, Malachi Martin published the book, *The Keys of this Blood* where he stated that there were **three systems** vying for **global control** and only **one** could win. Catholicism is well on its way to winning this global competition.

On **May 24, 2000**, Congressman **Chris Smith** introduced legislation to award the **Congressional Gold Medal** to Pope John Paul II. By **July**, the House and the Senate had passed the bill and Baptist President **Bill Clinton** signed the bill on **July 27**.

### **Historical Amnesia In Our Own Church**

Now I am going to read a statement and I want you to **guess who wrote it**. After writing about how the Roman Catholic Church **controlled the consciences** of the populace during the middle Ages, the author states:

*“But those days are over. The world has **changed**. The United States has **changed**. And even the Roman Catholic Church has **changed**, in the second half of our century, having reconciled itself with progress, liberalism and modern civilization. **It is no longer** the Bible-suppressing, science-resisting, liberty-opposing, Protestant-hating, culture ignoring, Latin-mumbling, obscurantism loving ecclesiastical organization of former years, intent on ruling the world from Rome. Vatican Council II transformed all that.*

*“To ignore these new realities and to refuse to come to terms with the contemporary Roman Church is to choose to remain stuck in a religious no-man’s-land, **condemning a church that no longer exists**, using old labels and propaganda that only offend and alienate deeply. Instead, Seventh-day Adventists ought to involve themselves in **building bridges of understanding** to reach out to Roman Catholics and developing **bonds of love** to enable them with us to arrive at a fuller appreciation and application of the gospel of Jesus Christ.”*

The author was **Paul J. Landa**, history professor of La Sierra University. This quotation was published in **Adventist Today**, July/August, 1993. Is it possible that even in our own church we have made concessions and approaches toward apostate Protestantism and Rome?

It is a little known fact among the rank and file membership of the Seventh-day Adventist Church that our church belongs to several commissions of the **World Council of Churches**.

Most probably don't know that the religious liberty department of the General Conference gave a **gold medal to Pope Paul VI**, that the **flag of the Holy See** was paraded across the stage at the St. Louis General Conference in 2005, that **Andrews University** invited two Roman Catholic priests from Notre Dame University to lecture on evangelism at our Theological Seminary, that some of our prominent theologians were involved in dialogue with Roman Catholic scholars for several years, that two former teachers from **La Sierra University** have encouraged Adventists to build bridges of understanding between the Seventh-day Adventist Church and the Roman Catholic Church and that many of our scholars are shifting our view of the **number 666** to a Roman Catholic view. Just as disturbing is the fact that many churches have **discouraged the preaching of Bible prophecy** for fear of offending Catholics and Protestants.

## **Global Unity**

Ellen White predicted **triumvirate** global unity at the end composed of Papists, Protestants and Worldlings:

*"The line of distinction between professed Christians and the ungodly is now hardly distinguishable. Church members love what the world loves and are ready to join with them, and Satan determines to unite them in **one body** and thus strengthen his cause by sweeping all into the ranks of spiritualism. **Papists**, who boast of miracles as a certain sign of the true church, will be readily deceived by this wonder-working power; and **Protestants**, having cast away the shield of truth, will also be deluded. **Papists, Protestants, and worldlings** will alike accept the form of godliness without the power, and they will see in **this union** a grand movement for the conversion of the world and the ushering in of the long-expected millennium." GC, pp. 588, 589*

*"And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ." In the near future we shall see these words fulfilled as the **Protestant churches** unite with **the world** and with the **papal power** against Commandment keepers. The same spirit which actuated papists in ages past will lead Protestants to pursue a similar course toward those who will maintain their loyalty to God." 5T, p. 449*

Seventh-day Adventists have rightly placed emphasis upon the unity of the papacy with apostate Protestantism but have not given equal emphasis to the third member of the apostate triumvirate:

*"**Kings and rulers and governors** have placed upon themselves the brand of antichrist, and are **represented as the dragon** who goes to make war with the saints--with those who keep the commandments of God and who have the faith of Jesus. In their enmity against the people*

of God, they show themselves guilty also of the choice of Barabbas instead of Christ.” TM, p. 39

In Revelation 12 the dragon that attempted to slay the male child was Satan but Satan worked through a shadow ruler of the Roman Empire to accomplish his purposes. In Revelation 17 we once again find the same triumvirate—the harlot, the daughters and the kings with whom the harlot fornicates. In Revelation 19 we have the beast, the false prophet and the kings of the earth arrayed against Jesus. Only in Revelation 20 do we see the real ruler who stands behind the kings, and that is Satan.

### **Pilate’s Lesson**

We have been warned that **unscrupulous and self-serving legislators**, like Pilate, in order to **retain their political influence**, will give in to the popular demand for a national Sunday law and will condemn God’s faithful children to death.

*“To secure **popularity** and **patronage** [votes], legislators will yield to the demand for a Sunday law.” Testimonies for the Church, volume 4, p. 451*

As in the days of Christ the religious leaders of the day influenced the people to clamor for the crucifixion of Jesus, so will it be again:

*“Plans of serious import to the people of God are advancing in an underhand manner among the **clergymen of various denominations**, and the object of this secret maneuvering is to win **popular favor** for the enforcement of Sunday sacredness. If the people can be led to favor a Sunday law, then **the clergy** intend to exert their united influence to obtain a religious amendment to the Constitution, and compel the nation to keep Sunday.” Review and Herald, December 24, 1889*

When Pilate offered to release **Jesus in place of Barabbas** the populace clamored that Barabbas be released instead. And who instigated the multitudes to clamor for the release of Barabbas? Notice the answer in **Mark 15:11**:

*“But the **chief priests stirred up the crowd**, so that he should rather release Barabbas to them.”*

It was **the ministers** of that day and age who instigated the **multitudes to cry out for the blood of Jesus**. The initiative came from the **religious leaders**, not from the state or from the populace. Are we to expect anything less in the end time? Notice how God’s people will repeat the story of Jesus:

*“Those who honor the Bible Sabbath will be denounced as **enemies of law and order**, as breaking down the moral restraints of society, causing anarchy and corruption, and calling*



down the judgments of God upon the earth. Their conscientious scruples will be pronounced obstinacy, stubbornness, and **contempt of authority**. They will be accused of **disaffection toward the government**. Ministers who deny the obligation of the divine law will present from the pulpit the duty of **yielding obedience to the civil authorities as ordained of God**. In **legislative halls** and **courts of justice**, commandment keepers will be misrepresented and condemned. A false coloring will be given to their words; the worst construction will be put upon their motives." *GC*, p. 592

## **Lessons from the Earliest Church**

When the early church lost the Spirit and power of the true gospel, the **moral condition of the empire quickly deteriorated**. The church leaders, seeing that morality was at such a low point, linked up with **the state to enforce** morality and the result was the papacy which used the **sword of the civil power** to punish those who dissented.

The prophecy of Revelation 13:11-18 indicates that **Protestantism in the United States** will make an **image of this**. Protestantism has **lost the Spirit** and **power of the true gospel**; it has preached for so long that we **not under law but under grace** that people have come to believe that Christians are not required to keep the law. And the result has been the moral disintegration of society!

## **Protestantism's Power Failure**

The Protestants of the United States decry that morality in the United States has been going from **bad to worse**. Abortion has become commonplace, pornography, divorce and marriage between homosexuals has become a fact of life. The proliferation of illegal drugs runs rampant. Mass shootings seem to be the order of the day. Many religious leaders have appealed to the **arm of civil power to fix what they themselves have created**. They blame what they call a secular humanist government for the steady decline in morality when they themselves, by the doctrine of 'cheap grace' have to a great degree caused the problem.

Protestants today have come to believe that by having "*In God we Trust*" on our currency, or by reciting "*one nation under God*" in the Pledge of Allegiance, or by **mandating prayer in public schools**, or by **posting the Ten Commandments** in our courtrooms or by putting **Christmas displays** on public property, or by **enacting a constitutional amendment against gay marriage**, the nation will be **brought back to God**.

But Protestantism has forgotten that its **real source of power** is found in preaching the unadulterated Word of God through the ministration of the Holy Spirit. Instead, Protestantism has emphasized a **prosperity gospel**, a gospel of **signs and wonders**, a gospel of **psychological self-help** and a gospel of **political involvement**. It has thus lost

its power and sees **government as the way to solve the problem** they themselves have created.

When church and state are fully joined together in **unholy matrimony**, and I believe this is transpiring before our very eyes, then the only and final court of appeal for the saints will be God.

## **The Perspective of Revelation 17**

Revelation 17 presents a vivid portrayal of the time when the prophecy of Revelation 13:11-18 will be fulfilled. The chapter portrays a **harlot woman** who sits on **many waters**, that is, she rules over nations, multitudes, tongues and people (17:1, 15). She fornicates with the **kings of the earth** (17:2) and is garbed in **purple and scarlet** and decked with **gold, precious stones and pearls** (17:4). The kings of the world gladly drink her **fermented wine** of false doctrine (17:2). She has **daughters** that were born from her at some point because she is called the 'mother of harlots' (17:5). Along with her daughters **she sheds the blood** of the saints and the martyrs of Jesus (17:6). Even the merchants of the earth become rich by the relations that they keep with her (Revelation 18:6-24). Thus the church, the state, the merchants and the people will unite to persecute those who do not agree with this New World Order.

Prophecy tells us that **for a while** the kings of the earth will do the bidding of the mother and her daughters. But at the **climactic moment** when God's faithful people are about to be slain, the kings of the earth will turn on her for we are told that they "will hate the harlot, make her desolate and naked, eat her flesh and burn her with fire." (17:16, 17). Thus, the very same sword that the harlot used to slay the saints of the Most High will be used to give her a definitive deadly wound.

Ellen White describes this **climactic moment** when the **political rulers and the multitudes** will withdraw their support from their religious leaders:

*"The people see that they have been deluded. They accuse one another of having led them to destruction; but all unite in heaping their **bitterest condemnation upon the ministers. Unfaithful pastors** have prophesied smooth things; they have led their hearers to make void the law of God and to persecute those who would keep it holy. Now, in their despair, these teachers confess before the world their work of deception. **The multitudes are filled with fury**. "We are lost!" they cry, "and you are the cause of our ruin;" and they turn upon the **false shepherds**. The very ones that once admired them most will pronounce the most dreadful curses upon them. The very hands that once crowned them with laurels will be raised for their destruction. **The swords** that were to slay God's people are now employed to destroy their enemies. Everywhere there is strife and bloodshed." GC, p. 655*

## Another French Revolution

It will be remembered that when the Pope was taken captive in **1798 AD** the **handcuffs that had fallen off** the papacy in **508 AD** were **slapped on again** and the sword was removed from her hand; thus she went into **captivity** and could **no longer use the political powers** and the masses to accomplish her purposes.

But the **United States** will be the power to **unlock the cuffs** and give the papacy her **freedom again**. And the United States will **put the sword of civil power in her hand** once more.

**For a while** the papacy, allied with Protestants, will seem to have the **upper hand**. But in the end Jesus will deliver His faithful people as he did the three young Hebrews and Daniel.

**Daniel 12:1-3** describes this period of **jeopardy** for God's people and their final **deliverance** by God:

*"At that time Michael shall stand up, the great prince who stands watch over the sons of your people; and there shall be a **time of trouble**, such as never was since there was a nation even to that time. And at that time your people **shall be delivered**, every one who is found written in the book and many of those who sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake some to everlasting life, some to shame and everlasting contempt. 3 Those who are wise shall shine like the brightness of the firmament and those who turn many to righteousness like the stars forever and ever."*

Impressive will be the moment when the **kings of the earth** and their subjects **will turn on the Mother of harlots** and her daughters. A French Revolution of **global proportions** will ensue and this time the deadly wound will **never heal again!**

## The Story of Esther

The ancient story of **Esther** is a vivid illustration of what will soon transpire with God's faithful and obedient remnant on a global scale.

In this story we are told that the **civil ruler**, king Ahasuerus, gave a **decree** that all should bow and pay homage to Haman (3:2). When **Mordecai** refused to do so (3:2) **Haman** was filled with wrath to such a degree that he was able to **persuade the king** to write a **death decree** against Mordecai and all the Jews (3:8). **Haman's wife** even suggested that he build a **gallows** for Mordecai to hang in (5:14). The reasons Haman gave for the decree are fascinating:

*"Then Haman said to King Ahasuerus: "There is a certain people scattered and dispersed among the people in all the provinces of your kingdom; **their laws are different** from all*

other peoples and they **do not keep the king's laws**. Therefore it is **not fitting** for the king to let them remain.”

Haman argued before the king that for the **survival of the nation** Mordecai and the Jews had to be eradicated. After all, disobedience to the laws of a nation would lead **only to anarchy and dissolution** of the empire. A **death decree** was written by Haman and **enforced by the authority of the king**.

All seemed to be going according to plan until the plot was unmasked by **Queen Esther**. By the providence of God the evil **triumvirate was broken up** and the king turned on **Haman and his wife** and the very gallows that were raised to slay Mordecai were used to slay Haman and his wife.

### **A Recurring Pattern**

- King Darius turned on the **enemies of Daniel**.
- Haman and his wife influenced the king and the **king turned on them**.
- The Jewish leadership influenced the Romans to kill Jesus and the **Romans turned on them**.
- The papacy used the power of the state and the state turned against the papacy in the **French Revolution**.
- Kings of the earth that supported the harlot will **hate the harlot** who has used them to slay the saints of the most high.

Ellen White had this incisive comment about the relationship between the first beast and second beast of Revelation 13:

*“I saw that the two-horned beast had a dragon's mouth, and that his power was in his head, and that the decree would go out of his mouth. Then I saw the Mother of Harlots; that the mother was not the daughters, but **separate and distinct from them**. She has had her day, and it is past, and her daughters, the Protestant sects, were the next to come on the stage and **act out the same mind that the mother had when she persecuted the saints**. I saw that as the mother has been declining in power, the daughters had been growing, and soon they will **exercise the power once exercised by the mother**. I saw the nominal church and nominal Adventists, like Judas, would betray us to the Catholics to obtain their influence to come against the truth. The saints then will be an obscure people, little known to the Catholics; but the churches and nominal Adventists who know of our faith and customs (for they hated us on account of the Sabbath, for they could not refute it) will betray the saints and report them to the Catholics as those who disregard the institutions of the people; that is, that they keep the Sabbath and disregard Sunday. Then the **Catholics bid the Protestants to go forward**, and **issue a decree** that all who will not observe the first day of the week, instead of the seventh*

day, shall be slain. And the **Catholics, whose numbers are large, will stand by the Protestants.** The **Catholics will give** their power to the image of the beast. And the **Protestants will work as their mother** worked before them to destroy the saints. But before their decree bring or bear fruit, the saints will be delivered by the Voice of God.” Ellen G. White, Spaulding-Magan Collection, pp. 1, 2





## “The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”

by Pastor Stephen Bohr

### LESSON #8 – THE NUMBER OF THE BEAST: 666

#### Introduction

For as long as I can remember, Seventh-day Adventist evangelists have applied the number 666 to one of the Latin titles of the Pope, namely, *Vicarius Filii Dei*. They have claimed that this title (which means ‘Vicar of the Son of God’) is one of the official titles that have traditionally been used by the popes. Some of our evangelists have also affirmed that the title is (or has been) inscribed on the pope’s tiara or on his miter.

Have our evangelists been correct in their assessment? Is this really one of the official titles that have been traditionally claimed by a succession of popes? Was this title really on the papal tiara or miter in times past?

Recently several of our ablest scholars have answered “no” to these questions. A new view has appeared on the horizon with defenders of the caliber of Dr. William G. Johnsson, Dr. Beatrice Neall, Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi, Dr. Jon Paulien, Dr. Ranko Stefanovic and Dr. Angel M. Rodriguez. These theologians have **challenged the traditional view** and have proposed a new one.

The traditional view is very specific. It applies the name and number of the beast directly to a succession of Roman Catholic popes. The new view has removed this specific meaning from the Roman Catholic papacy and has applied it in **general terms** to an end-time **alienation** of man from God.

Several years ago **Dr. Beatrice Neall** articulated the new view:

*“Six is legitimate when it leads to seven; it represents man on the first evening of his existence entering into the celebration of God’s creative power. The glory of the creature is right if it leads to the glory of God. Six hundred sixty-six, however, represents the **refusal of man to proceed to seven**, to give glory to God as Creator and Redeemer. It represents man’s fixation with himself, man seeking glory in himself and his own creations. It speaks of the fullness of*

creation and all creative powers without God—the practice of the **absence of God**. It demonstrates that unregenerate man is persistently evil.” Beatrice Neall, The Concept of Character in the Apocalypse with Implications for Character Education, pp. 153-155.

This rather philosophical, conjectural, if not speculative definition of the number six has been picked up and simplified by **Dr. Angel M. Rodriguez**:

“. . . the Greek phrase translated ‘It is a man’s number’ (Revelation 13:18) could be also rendered ‘it is the **number of humanity**.’ In that case, it is not referring to a particular person but to a characteristic of **humanity separated from God**. Since God created humans during the sixth day, it could stand as a **symbol of humanity**, but a **humanity** not yet at rest with God and without the joy of a harmonious relationship with God during the seventh day. The number reveals the rebellious nature of the enemies of God and His remnant. That seems to be the best available interpretation.” Angel M. Rodriguez, Future Glory, p. 122. Bold type is mine.

This change has upset some in the church who feel that the traditional view is more than adequate to explain the mystery of the number 666. Many feel that the new view has taken what is definite and clear and made it indefinite and fuzzy. Others have gone so far as to believe that the Seventh-day Adventist Church has been infiltrated by Jesuits who have the **hidden agenda** of destroying our distinctive prophetic roots with a view to ultimately destroy the Seventh-day Adventist Church itself.

This later fear has been fed in recent years by **Adventist college teachers** who have stated that we should build bridges of understanding with Rome rather than criticizing her. The conspiracy flames have been further fanned when **a medal** was given to the Pope by the religious liberty department of the General Conference and also when **the flag** of the Holy See was paraded on stage at the 2005 General Conference session in St. Louis during the March of Nations.

## **A Blasphemous Name**

In this article I would like to take a closer look at the number 666 as it relates to the name of the beast. As we begin, there are several **Biblical facts** that will help us understand this enigmatic number and the system to which it applies.

First, a very important fact that has been overlooked more frequently than not is that the name of the beast is a **blasphemous** name. This is stated explicitly in Revelation 13:1:

*“Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads **a blasphemous name**.”*

Now that we know that the name (whose number is 666) is blasphemous, we must discover the **Biblical definition** of blasphemy. Is there such a definition? The answer is an emphatic yes!



## **Biblical Definition of Blasphemy**

The Scriptures clearly define blasphemy as man's attempt to **occupy the place** of God and as such to exercise the power and prerogatives of God. When Jesus affirmed: "*I and my Father are one*" (John 10:30) the Jews went ballistic. They picked up stones to execute the death penalty required by the Law (Leviticus 24:16). When Jesus asked them what evil work He had done to merit stoning, they responded:

*"For a good work we do not stone You, but for blasphemy, and because You, being a **Man**, make Yourself **God**."* (John 10:33)

The terminology of the accusation is significant. Jesus was reprimanded for blasphemy because He, in their view, being a **man**, made himself **God**. In fact, Jesus not only claimed **to be God**, He also claimed to work the **works of God**! (John 10: 28, 37, 38)

In the thinking of the Jewish leaders, Jesus was guilty of blasphemy when He claimed to be the Son of God (Matthew 26:64; 10:36, 37; John 19:7). All the Jews claimed to be sons of God in a **general sense** but it is clear that Jesus did not claim to be **a** Son of God in a general sense but in the strictest sense of being the **representative** of God on earth! He was the **spokesman for God** on earth—His vicar, if you please! This is the reason why Jesus could say: "*He who has seen me has seen the Father.*" Jesus undoubtedly claimed to be *Vicarius Dei*, and rightfully so.

Blasphemy is also defined as when a mere man claims to have the power to **forgive sins**. This means that any man who claims to have the right to exercise the prerogatives of God is guilty of blasphemy. When Jesus told the paralytic of Capernaum: "*Your sins are forgiven*" the religious leaders murmured saying:

*"Why does this **Man** speak blasphemies like this? Who can forgive sins but **God** alone?"* (Mark 2:7).

The religious leaders were actually thinking: If this man claims to have the right to forgive sins, then he must claim to be God because only God can forgive sins.

### **In the Temple of God**

2 Thessalonians 2:3, 4 has similar terminology. Here we are told that the **man** of sin sits in the temple of God (the church) proclaiming himself to be **God**. Once again we notice that this power is **human** and yet it seeks to occupy the place of **God**. Later on in the passage we are told that this power also claims to perform the works that Jesus Himself performed while He was on earth (2 Thessalonians 2:9; Acts 2:22). 2 Thessalonians 2:3, 4 actually paraphrases the language from Daniel 11:36 where we are told that the king of the north "*shall do according to his will; and he shall exalt himself, and magnify himself above every god, and shall **speak marvelous things** against the God of gods.*" It will be noticed that the exaltation of the king of the north to the level of God is linked with the **great words** that He

speaks against the God of gods. The use of the word “man” in these verses does not require that we find one particular person as the fulfillment. Adventists have understood the word “man” in this passage to refer, not to an individual, but rather to a succession of persons, namely, the popes of Rome.

In this context it is worthy of note that the little horn of Daniel 7 (that symbolizes the same power as the beast of Revelation 13:1-10 and the man of sin of II Thessalonians 2) has a mouth that speaks “*pompous words against the Most High*” (Daniel 7:25). These great words are identified as **blasphemies** in Revelation 13:5 where we are told that the beast was given a mouth that speaks “*great things and blasphemies.*” This little horn/beast not only claims to be God but also claims to have the power to exercise the prerogatives of God even to the point of changing God’s prophetic times and His Law! (Daniel 7:25) Thus, in a very specific sense, the little horn (or the beast) claims the right to occupy the **place of God** and to exercise the **power and prerogatives of God**.

In what sense does this little horn/beast speak blasphemies against God? Daniel 8 provides the indisputable answer. In Daniel 8 (in distinction to Daniel 7) we are **not** told that the little horn speaks blasphemies against the Most High. Rather, we are told that the little horn attempted to **supplant** or **take the place** of the Prince of the host by taking away the daily ministration from Him (Daniel 8:11). Thus the little horn’s blasphemy consists in the act of trying to supplant or **take the place** of the Prince of the host and to **carry on His work**.

In the light of this overwhelming Biblical evidence, it would seem that the blasphemous name of the beast must be linked with his attempt to supplant or occupy **the place of God** and to exercise the **power and prerogatives of God**.

There can be no doubt that the power represented by the little horn, the beast and the man of sin is the Roman Catholic Papacy. The little horn (and the beast) does not appear in a vacuum. There is a clear sequence of powers which precede the horn’s arrival on the scene. The kingdoms of Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greece, Rome and divided Rome must rule before the little horn comes on the scene.

### **Testimony of Church Historians**

Numerous quotations could be provided from Roman Catholic writers to the effect that the Pope claims to occupy the place of God on earth. Space limitations will allow for only a few examples.

“... *the pope can modify divine law, since his power is not of man, but of God, and he acts in **the place of God upon earth**, with the fullest power of binding and losing his sheep.*” (Lucius Ferraris, Prompta Bibliotheca, vol. 2, article ‘Papa’, bold is mine)

**Pope Nicholas I** (who ruled from 858-867 A. D.) once said:

*“It is evident that the popes can neither be bound nor unbound by any earthly power, nor even by that of the apostle [Peter], if he should return upon the earth; since Constantine the Great has recognized that the pontiffs **held the place of God upon earth, divinity not being able to be judged by any living man.** We are, then, infallible, and whatever may be our acts, we are not accountable for them but to ourselves.”* (Cormenin, History of the Popes, p. 243, as cited in R. W. Thompson, The Papacy and the Civil Power, p. 248, bold is mine).

**Pope Leo XIII** in an Encyclical Letter (‘On the Chief Duties of Christians as Citizens’) dated January 10, 1890 affirmed:

*“But the supreme teacher in the Church is the Roman Pontiff. Union of minds, therefore, requires, together with a perfect accord in the one faith, complete submission and obedience of will to the Church and to the Roman Pontiff, **as to God Himself.**”* (The Great Encyclical Letters of Leo XIII, p. 193, bold is mine)

**Leo XIII** in an encyclical letter dated June 20, 1894 further stated:

*“We hold upon this earth **the place of God Almighty.**”* (The Great Encyclical Letters of Leo XIII, p. 304, bold is mine)

Repeatedly Roman Catholic sources refer to the popes as vicars of Christ, vice-regents of Christ, representatives of Christ, and, yes, Vicars of the Son of God (proof to be provided later in this article).

## **The Prerogatives of God**

Furthermore, the popes have claimed the right to exercise the power and prerogatives that belong only to God. They claim to have the right to **forgive sins** (cf. Mark 2:7), to set up and **remove kings** (cf. Daniel 2:21), to be **bowed down to** (cf. Revelation 19:10), to be called **Holy Father** (cf. Matthew 23:9), to execute the **death penalty** upon dissenters (cf. Daniel 7:21), to **change the Sabbath** (cf. Daniel 2:21; 7:25), to change **God’s prophetic calendar** (cf. Daniel 7:25), to be the **supreme judges** of heaven, earth and hell whose decision cannot be appealed (cf. John 5:22, 27) and to be **infallible** expositors in matters of faith and morals (cf. James 1:17).

## **The Number of the Name**

Second, besides the name of the beast being blasphemous, the name also has a **number** (Revelation 13:17). The critical question at this point is this: How do we get a number from a name? The answer lies in the fact that in ancient times numbers were written with the letters of the alphabet. This practice, referred to as *gematria*, was used in Hebrew, Greek and Latin. This means that when the letters of the beast’s blasphemous name are given their respective numerical value the total will be 666.

The **Living Bible** paraphrase captures well the meaning of Revelation 13:18:

*“Here is a puzzle that calls for careful thought to solve it. Let those who are able, interpret this code: **the numerical values of the letters** in his name add to 666!”*

The **New English Bible** translates Revelation 13:18 in a similar fashion:

*“The number represents a man’s name, and the **numerical value of its letters** is six hundred and sixty-six.”*

Even the Roman Catholic **Douay Version** adds a footnote to Revelation 13:18 which states: *“The numeral letters of his name shall make up this number.”*

Recently, Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi has argued that the text of Revelation 13:18 requires a name rather than a title. After all, the text says that 666 is the number of the beast’s **name** and not the number of his **title**. Dr. Bacchiocchi therefore states that *Vicarius Filii Dei*, being a title rather than a name, cannot fulfill the specifications of the text (**Endtime Issues**, Online Newsletter, *“The Saga of the Adventist Papal Tiara,”* part 2). This argument is superficial and can be disposed of quite readily by noting that in Revelation 19:16 Jesus is described as one who has **a name** written on his vesture and on his thigh. But the name is not a personal name but rather a title: *“King of kings and Lord of lords.”* So the word “name” can refer to a title rather than to a proper name.

### **The Number of a Man**

Third, we are told in Revelation 13:18 that number 666 is the number of a **man**. It is important to realize that the noun “man” has no definite article. This means that qualitatively the beast is a system that is centered in man. It is noteworthy that the little horn has **eyes** like a man, the apostate one of II Thessalonians 2 is called the **man** of sin and here the beast has the number of a **man**. This is certainly a system that is based on the power and prowess of **man**.

Some of our scholars have recently attempted to say that the expression “the number of a man” should really be translated “the number of humanity.” But the book of Revelation does not use the word *anthropos* in this sense. To translate the word *anthropos* in this manner denotes the art of **interpretation** rather than of **translation**. I checked several of the better known versions of the Bible (New International, Jerusalem, New English, New American Standard, King James, New King James, New American, Weymouth, Phillips, RSV) to ascertain how they translate the expression: *“arithmós gár anthróopou estín”* (“it is the number of a man”). Interestingly, only the RSV with its liberal gender inclusive slant translates: “it is a **human** number.” Not one of the major versions translates “for it is the number of **humanity**.”

Is the text of Revelation 13:18 really telling us that the number 666 applies to humanity in general rather than to the beast specifically? A careful study of Revelation 13:1-10 (and

also of Daniel 7 and 2 Thessalonians 2) reveals unmistakably that the beast represents the Roman Catholic papacy as a system, not humanity in general. If the number is the number of the beast, and the beast is a symbol of the papacy, then the number cannot apply to humanity in general but rather specifically to the papacy.

A parallel text would be II Thessalonians 2 where the same system is referred to as the **man** of sin. The word “man” here is not referring to a specific individual but rather to a succession of rulers who make man the measure of all things rather than God. Would any serious Biblical scholar say that the expression “man [*anthropos*] of sin” should be translated “the humanity of sin”? Would it be proper to translate the “eyes of a man” in Daniel 7:8 as “the eyes of humanity”? This would be absurd. The simple fact is that the system represented by the little horn/man of sin/beast is based on the wisdom and prowess of **man** while claiming to have the right to exercise the power and prerogatives of God. In other words, it is a system that is man-centered rather than God-centered. In this sense there is a grain of truth in the idea that the number six represents a system which is centered in man while the number 7 represents a system that is based on God.

### **The Language of the Name**

A very important question comes to the fore at this point: In which language should we look for the name or title? Should the name be sought in Hebrew, Greek, Latin or perhaps even English? Angel Manuel Rodriguez has advised caution at this point. He states that “*we confront the problem of determining which language to use. The biblical text does not specify any particular language; therefore, any that we selected would be a matter of personal opinion.*” (Angel Manuel Rodriguez, Future Glory, p. 122)

But is Dr. Rodriguez’ statement accurate? I believe that we can **definitely** know **from the Bible itself** which language to use! And which language is that? There is persuasive evidence that the name and number must be found in the Latin language.

You are probably wondering why the name and number should be in Latin. The answer is actually quite simple. The beast is clearly a **Roman** power and the official language of Rome was **Latin** (that Latin was the Roman language of New Testament times can be proved from John 19:20).

Notice that according to Revelation 13:2 the beast received his “power, his throne, and great authority” (Revelation 13:2) from the dragon. Though the dragon primarily represents Satan (Revelation 12:9), it also represents the kingdom through which Satan attempted to slay the man child and this kingdom was **Rome** (Matthew 2:16; Revelation 12:1-5) It is not coincidental that the Catholic Church is officially called the **Roman** Catholic Church.

Now, if the beast represents the **Roman** Catholic papacy, then we should look for his name in **Latin**, the official language of ancient Rome and Papal Rome! And if the name is in Latin

then we should use **Roman** numerals to ascertain the number of his name! In short, both the name and the respective numerical equivalents of its letters must be sought in the Latin language.

### **Summary of the Main Points**

Let's summarize what the **Bible** tells us about this number: **First**, it must be a blasphemous name. That is to say, it must be a name whose bearer claims to represent God and to exercise the power and prerogatives of God. **Second**, the name must be in Latin, the language of Rome. **Third**, the numerical equivalents of the letters of the name must be found in Roman numerals. **Fourth**, the number must be that of a man. It will be noticed that the title *Vicarius Filii Dei* fits all of these criteria.

But two critically important questions remain to be answered. But before we do, allow me to digress for just a moment.

### **Roman Numerals**

It is noteworthy that the Latin poets who originally devised the system of Roman numerals broke with the norm of the day and instead of using all the letters of the alphabet to represent numbers they chose **only six** characters to represent all numbers: I, V, X, L, C and D (the M was not part of the original numerical system. Before the advent of the M, the number 1,000 was written by placing two D's side by side). When the six Roman numerals are added, the total is 666. This strongly suggests that the number 666 is linked in some manner with Rome.

### **Is Vicarius Filii Dei an Official Title?**

Now to the two questions: Is the name *Vicarius Filii Dei* a title which has been given to the Pope by Roman Catholics themselves or is it a Protestant fabrication? And, was this title ever inscribed on the papal tiara or miter? Let's wrestle with the first question.

The historical evidence indicates that the answer to the first question is yes. Some, such as Roman Catholic apologist Patrick Madrid, have claimed that the name *Vicarius Filii Dei* has never been used as a title for the Pope (though later he revised his statement to say that it was never an **official** title). Says Madrid: "*Vicarius Filii Dei*, or 'Vicar of the Son of God,' is not now, nor has it ever been, a title of the bishop of Rome." (*Envoy Magazine*, March/April, 1998) An examination of the historical records clearly reveals that this is an inaccurate statement.

### **Donation of Constantine**

The **Donation of Constantine** which was used by at least ten popes to justify their claims to temporal power contains this very title:

“... as the Blessed Peter is seen to have been constituted **vicar of the Son of God** [**Vicarius Filii Dei in the original Latin**] on the earth, so the Pontiffs who are the representatives of that same chief of the apostles, should obtain from us and our empire the power of a supremacy greater than the clemency of our earthly imperial serenity is seen to have conceded to it.”

The **Donation** was purportedly a letter written by Constantine the Great to **Pope Sylvester I**. In the letter Constantine supposedly gave temporal power to the Pope. We know for certain that the **Donation** was in existence as early as the ninth century but was used beginning in the eleventh century to justify the outrageous temporal claims of the papacy.

The authenticity of the **Donation of Constantine** was first questioned in the fifteenth century with the advent of historical criticism. **Nicholas of Cusa** had serious reservations about the **Donation** and around **1450** AD it was proved to be a forgery and a fraud by the scholarly work of **Laurentius Valla**. Notably, the Vatican did not appreciate Valla's work as can be seen by the fact that the Office of the Inquisition officially placed his work on its index of forbidden books in **1559**.

Roman Catholic apologist, **Patrick Madrid**, has brushed aside this evidence by stating the obvious, that the **Donation of Constantine** was a forgery. Madrid therefore concludes that it cannot be used as an official and authorized statement of the Roman Catholic Church.

Though it is true that the **Donation** was a forgery, it is also beyond dispute that the **Donation** was panned off as **authentic** and **official** by various popes and Roman Catholic theologians for hundreds of years to sustain the temporal power of the papacy. Though a forgery, it was used as an **official** document by these popes to sustain their claims to temporal power. If they used it knowing full well that it was a forgery, then they were guilty of deception. On the other hand, if they did not know that the **Donation** was a forgery, what does this say about their infallibility?

It is significant that Gratian's **Decretals** (published in 1140 AD and deemed official by the Roman Catholic Church) incorporated the papal title from the **Donation** into Roman Catholic canon law. Here are the words:

*“Beatus Petrus in terris **Vicarius Filii Dei** esse uidetur constitutus.”* (Aemilius Friedberg, *Corpus Iuris Canonici*, column 342, emphasis mine)

### **Cardinal Edward Manning**

In more recent times the title has been applied to the Pope by Cardinal Henry Edward Manning in his book **The Temporal Power of the Vicar of Jesus Christ** (1862). In the first statement, Manning indicts the Roman Catholic nations of Europe of his day for their failure to defend the temporal power of the Pope:

*“See this Catholic Church, this Church of God, feeble and weak, rejected even by the very nations called Catholic. There is Catholic France, and Catholic Germany, and Catholic Italy giving up this exploded figment of the temporal power of the Vicar of Jesus Christ.’ And so, because the Church seems weak, and the **Vicar of the Son of God** is renewing the Passion of his Master upon earth, therefore we are scandalized, therefore we turn our faces from him.”* (pp. 140, 141, emphasis mine)

After mentioning the growing temporal power of the papacy under Gregory I, Leo III, Gregory VII and Alexander III Manning elevates the idea of the temporal power of the Pope to the level of ‘a dogma,’ ‘a law of conscience,’ ‘an axiom of the reason,’ and a ‘theological certainty’:

*“So that I may say there never was a time when the temporal power of the **Vicar of the Son of God**, though assailed as we see it, was more firmly rooted throughout the whole unity of the Catholic Church and convictions of its members. . .”* (p. 231)

Manning explained why European nations enjoyed stability in the past as compared with the disarray of Europe in the times when he wrote:

*“It was a dignified obedience to bow to the **Vicar of the Son of God**, and to remit the arbitration of their griefs to one whom all wills consented to obey.”* (p. 232, emphasis mine)

### **Additional Evidence**

**Lucii Ferraris** in his prestigious encyclopedia, **Prompta Bibliotheca**, also applied the title *Vicarius Filii Dei* to the Pope (1890 edition volume 6, p. 43, Column 2)

In his immensely popular book, **Crossing the Threshold of Hope**, p. 3, Pope John Paul II explained what he understood to be the source of the power of his office:

*“The leader of the Catholic Church is defined by the faith as the **Vicar of Jesus Christ** (and is accepted as such by believers). The Pope is considered the man on earth who **represents the Son of God**, who **takes the place**’ of the Second Person of the omnipotent God of the Trinity.”*

Notice that John Paul II not only affirmed that the Pope is the **Vicar** of Jesus Christ who **represents** the Son of God,” but he also explained what he meant by the word “represents” when he said that he **takes the place**” of the Second Person of the omnipotent God of the Trinity.” The expression “takes the place” is the exact English equivalent of the Latin word “Vicarius”

Even Dr. Bacchiocchi has candidly admitted that *Vicarius Filii Dei* has been an official papal title for the course of many centuries:

*‘Madrid’s **denial** [that **Vicarius Filii Dei has been an official papal title**] is absolutely false. We noted earlier that the papal claim to be the *Vicarius Filii Dei* is found in major Catholic historical documents and is acknowledged even by Prof. Johannes Quasten, the leading*



*Catholic Patrologist in the world.*" (Endtime Issues, Online Newsletter, "The Saga of the Adventist Papal Tiara," part 2)

The reference that Dr. Bacchiocchi makes to Professor Johannes Quasten is interesting. There is a notarized affidavit in the General Conference archives signed by Conrad Stoehr and Robert F. Correia where Dr. Quasten, in his own handwriting wrote: "The title *Vicarius Christi*, as well as the title *Vicarius Filii Dei* is very common as the title of the Pope"

### **Samuele Bacchiocchi and the Tiara**

But is this title presently inscribed on the papal tiara or miter? Or even more pointedly, was it ever inscribed there?

Recently, Dr. Bacchiocchi has claimed that he had the opportunity to examine **thirteen** extant papal tiaras (all used after the year 1800). He claims that **only two** of the tiara's have inscriptions and that neither one of them bears this title. To date there have been a total of **266 popes**. It must be recognized that 13 tiaras out of 266 (granted that all the earlier popes probably did not wear the tiara) is a very small percentage indeed! Notably, Dr. Bacchiocchi does not claim to have examined any papal miters. This is significant in the light of the fact that, as we shall see later, Our Sunday Visitor claims that the title *Vicarius Filii Dei* used to be on the miter.

But does the present absence of the inscription on the tiara even prove that it was never there? Should it really surprise us that the title is not presently there? Wouldn't we expect this to be the case? Would the papacy want to display such incriminating evidence? Of course not!

Well do I remember when I was a student at the Andrews University Theological Seminary in the early 70's that Dr. Bacchiocchi had just returned to the United States from the **Pontifical Gregorian University** in Rome. There was great fanfare when he exhibited his regalia, his gold medal, his diplomas and his newly published dissertation on the change of the Sabbath with the Roman Catholic *imprimatur*. I remember thinking: "This is either an incredible miracle of God or it is too good to be true! How is it possible for a Seventh-day Adventist to be the only non-Catholic to be accepted at the Pontifical Gregorian University in over 400 years? How could he have been allowed to do a dissertation on the change of the Sabbath? How could he have received the maximum academic honors and a medal from the very hands of the pope?"

Well, recently we have been told by official Pontifical Gregorian University sources that Dr. Bacchiocchi's story **was** too good to be true! According to **Dr. Barbara Bergami**, the General Secretary of the Pontifical Gregorian University, there is **no record** of Dr. Bacchiocchi ever receiving the academic distinction of *summa cum laude*, of receiving a gold medal from the Pope or of having his dissertation published *in toto* with the *imprimatur*. **The records have vanished from the Gregoriana!**

Dr. Bacchiocchi provides all sorts of documentation to prove that he did indeed graduate *summa cum laude*, that he did receive a medal and that his book did receive the *imprimatur*. But how do we know that the evidence he provides is trustworthy? How can we be sure that his medal and diplomas are genuine and not well crafted forgeries? Why shouldn't we accept the statements of the Roman Catholic Pontifical Gregorian University at face value? In short, why should we believe Dr. Bacchiocchi rather than the Gregoriana?

Obviously I am playing devil's advocate here to make a point. I personally do believe that Dr. Bacchiocchi graduated *summa cum laude*, that he got a medal and that at least a portion of his dissertation was published with the *imprimatur*. But this agonizing personal experience should have taught Dr. Bacchiocchi a lesson about the expunging power of the Roman Catholic papacy. **His educational records have been either expunged or "lost"!**

Dr. Bacchiocchi's seems to want it both ways. On the one hand he complains: "The Papacy 'lost' my educational records because my works on the Sabbath were causing it great damage." But on the other hand, he finds it improbable that the Papacy could have ever expunged or "lost" the title *Vicarius Filii Dei* from the papal tiara and/or miter because of the damage it was causing the papacy!

### **Eye Witnesses?**

There are eyewitnesses that claim to have seen the tiara at various papal ceremonies inscribed with the title *Vicarius Filii Dei*. Were these witnesses lying? Were they seeing visions? Did they have overactive imaginations? Why should Dr. Bacchiocchi impugn their credibility and not that of the Roman Catholic Church? Is it because these individuals didn't have doctoral degrees and therefore in his view they do not meet the scholarly litmus test?

Why does Dr. Bacchiocchi accept the testimony of **W. W. Prescott** (who exhibited less than full confidence in the Spirit of Prophecy at the 1913 Bible Conference), **Charles T. Everson** (who claimed to have examined **one** papal tiara that was used in the coronation of Leo XIII in **1836** and who did not say that the title had never been on the tiara but rather that it was not on the tiara "**at present**") and **L.E. Froom** (notorious for his selective and ecumenical use of Ellen White in Questions on Doctrine) while he brushes aside the testimony of those who claim to have seen the title on the tiara? What makes one group more trustworthy than the other?

Dr. Bacchiocchi argues that if the Papacy found it necessary to expunge the title *Vicarius Filii Dei* from the tiara or miter, it would stand to reason that they would also want to expunge it from all historical documents where it appears. But this argument is weak. It belies the fact that it is **far more incriminating** to have the title on the tiara for everyone to see than it is to have a few references tucked away in the books of scholars and intelligentsia that rarely, if ever, are seen by the layman in the pew. Even Roman Catholic apologist, Patrick Madrid, did not know that the title was used in various Roman Catholic

sources until it was brought to his attention by an Adventist! If a professional apologist didn't know, how would a common layman in the pew know?

## **Roman Catholic Evidence**

Ellen White has stated that the Papacy destroyed many incriminating records that documented its horrific cruelty during the dark ages. Are we to expect less when it comes to the papal tiara or miter?

*“Rome endeavored also to **destroy every record** of her cruelty toward dissenters. Papal councils decreed that books and writings containing **such records should be committed to the flames**. Before the invention of printing, books were few in number, and in a form not favorable for preservation; therefore there was little to prevent the Romanists from carrying out their purpose.” GC, p. 61.*

There is evidence, even from **Roman Catholic sources**, that the title was once on the papal tiara or miter. In the November 15, 1914 edition of Our Sunday Visitor (the official organ of the Archdiocese of Baltimore) the following question was addressed to the Bureau of Information: “Is it true that the words of the Apocalypse in the 13<sup>th</sup> chapter, 18<sup>th</sup> verse refer to the Pope?”

The answer was as follows:

*“The words referred to are these ‘Here is wisdom. He that hath understanding, let him count the number of the beast. For it is the number of a man: and the number of him is six hundred sixty-six.’ The Title of the Pope in Rome is Vicarius Filii Dei. **This is inscribed on his mitre;** and if you take the letters of his title which represent Latin numerals and add them together they come to 666.” (emphasis is mine)*

In the April 18, 1915 edition of Our Sunday Visitor this information was confirmed once again. The question was: “What are the letters supposed to be in the Pope’s crown, and what do they signify, if anything?”

The answer was explicit:

*“The letters inscribed in the **Pope’s mitre** are these: Vicarius Filii Dei, which is the Latin for the **Vicar of the Son of God**. Catholics hold that the church which is a visible society must have a visible head. Christ, before His ascension into heaven, appointed St. Peter to act as His representative. Upon the death of Peter the man who succeeded to the office of Peter as Bishop of Rome, was recognized as the head of the Church. Hence to the Bishop of Rome, as head of the Church, was given the title ‘Vicar of Christ.’”*

## Expunging the Evidence

Roman Catholic apologist Patrick Madrid claims to have contacted Robert Lockwood, the editor of Our Sunday Visitor about this 1915 issue and he was told that **the entire issue** had been expunged from the archives (although I personally have a copy of the column). This is an interesting admission. Even in modern times expunging is used as a method by the Papacy to delete information that is incriminating!

It is true that on **September 16, 1917** (and also again on August 3, 1941) Our Sunday Visitor did an about face and totally changed its tune:

*“The words Vicarius Filii Dei are not the name of the Pope; they do not even constitute his official title.”*

The question is: which of the two versions of Our Sunday Visitor are we to believe? Can we really trust the word of an organization that has majored in deception throughout the centuries?

It must be admitted that we cannot prove beyond any doubt at this time that the title *Vicarius Filii Dei* was ever on the pope’s tiara or miter. The evidence we have at present is mixed at best. Perhaps only when the judgment sits and the books are opened in God’s heavenly tribunal will we be able to see whether the name was there or not. One thing is crystal clear, however, and that is that the name *Vicarius Filii Dei* is an official title which has been assumed by the popes and the name is in perfect accordance with their blasphemous claims. It is important to remember that the prophecy of Revelation 13:18 does not require that the title or name of the beast be found on the papal crown or tiara.

Various other names and titles have been suggested as fulfillments for the name and number of the beast of Revelation 13:18. Some have suggested *dux cleri* (head of the clergy), *lateinos* (Latin man) or *ludovicus* (chief of the court of Rome). The problem with all of these suggestions is that none of them is particularly blasphemous. But there is a name which has been **officially** assumed by the bishops of Rome that is clearly and unmistakably blasphemous: *Vicarius Filii Dei*.

### **Who is *Vicarius Filii Dei*?**

The Bible makes it crystal clear that the **Holy Spirit is the Vicar of the Son of God**. Before Jesus left He promised His disciples:

*“And I will pray the Father, and He will give you another Helper, that He may abide with you forever--the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it neither sees Him nor knows Him; but you know Him, for He dwells with you and will be in you. I will not leave you orphans; **I will come to you**.” (John 14:16-18).*

Jesus made it very clear that the visible Head of the church (Jesus) would be in heaven while the invisible Head of the church (the Holy Spirit) would **take his place** on earth. Roman Catholic theology has changed this around. They affirm that the visible head of the church (the Pope) is on earth while the invisible head (Jesus) is in heaven. Thus the popes not only usurp the place of Jesus but they also usurp the place of the Holy Spirit! This is the epitome of blasphemy!!

### **Vicarius Filii Dei and the Antichrist**

Amazingly, the Greek word *antichristos* has the same basic meaning in Greek as does *Vicarius Filii Dei* in Latin. Most people assume that the word antichrist means ‘one who is against Christ.’ It is true that in Greek the preposition *anti* can mean ‘against.’ But it is equally true that this preposition, when it is used as a prefix to a noun means ‘instead of,’ or ‘in place of.’ In classical Greek, for example, the word ***antibasileus*** means ‘one who occupies the place of the king.’ In the New Testament, the name Herod ***Antipas*** means that Herod ruled ‘in place of his father.’ (Revelation 2:13) The word ***antitype*** means ‘that which takes the place of the type.’ Christ is spoken of as having given His life as a ransom ***in place of*** (*antilutron*) all (I Timothy 2:6). Thus the word *antichristos* in Greek and *Vicarius Filii Dei* in Latin bear a very similar meaning!

Though I disagree with Dave Hunt’s futuristic interpretation of the antichrist, I believe that he has given an accurate description of what the Biblical antichrist will be like:

*“While the Greek prefix ‘anti’ generally means ‘against’ or ‘opposed to,’ it can also mean ‘in the place of’ or ‘a substitute for.’ The Antichrist will embody both meanings. He will oppose Christ while ***pretending to be Christ***. . . When the time has come for his ascension to power—it will be in the midst of an ***unprecedented global crisis***--he will be hailed as the world’s savior, and so he will appear to be . . . Instead of a frontal assault against Christianity, the evil one will ***pervert the church from within*** by posing as its founder. He will cunningly misrepresent Christ while ***pretending to be Christ***. And by that process of ***substitution*** he will undermine and pervert all that Christ truly is. . . If the Antichrist will indeed pretend to be the Christ, then his ***followers must be ‘Christians’!*** The church of that day will without dissenting voice, hail him as its leader.” Dave Hunt, *Global Peace*, pp. 7-8, 45, 200. (Bold is mine and italics are his)*

### **Ellen White and the Number 666**

In closing I would like to make a few remarks about the name of Ellen G. White. Roman Catholic apologist Patrick Madrid (and others before him) has claimed that the name Ellen Gould White also totals 666 (L+L+L+D+W+I). On the surface this appears persuasive; however, there are several insurmountable problems with this view.

**First**, a little **cheating** must take place in order for this identification to work out. The “W” in White has to be converted into two V’s. Needless to say, this was never done in the Latin manner of reckoning numbers. In fact, the “W” does not even exist in the Latin language!

**Second**, and more devastating, the name Ellen Gould White is **not a blasphemous name**.

**Third**, there is no justification for using the **Latin number system** for a name which is in English. If Ellen White’s name was in Latin, then we would be justified in using the Latin numbering system.

**Finally**, and most importantly, we must remember that the number 666 is the **number of the beast**. Ellen White **does not fit any of the other specifications** of the beast. She arose in the United States, not Rome, she did not uproot three kingdoms, she did not think to change times and laws (rather she upheld the law including the Sabbath!), she did not persecute the saints, she did not speak blasphemies against God, she did not rule for 1260 years (she lived a long life but not this long!), she did not exercise dominion over every nation, kindred and tongue, she did not receive a deadly wound which was healed and the whole world did not marvel after her. Even if the name Ellen Gould White totaled 666, which it does not, the number is only one of the specifications of the beast and none of the other characteristics of the beast fit Ellen White.

I once heard someone say: But Ellen White received a deadly wound when a classmate hit her with a stone on the bridge of her nose when she was 9 years old and though her doctors said she was going to die, she recovered from her wound! It never ceases to amaze me to what lengths people will go in order to sustain their preconceived notions! There are two glaring problems with this scenario. First of all, Ellen White was wounded while she was a child but the beast was wounded at the end of its career. Second, Ellen White was wounded with a stone while the beast was wounded with a sword! (Revelation 13:10, 14)

In the light of the Biblical and historical evidence that we have at our disposal, I believe that it is not unreasonable to believe that the title *Vicarius Filii Dei* is an adequate explanation of the number 666. This is an official title of the popes even though at present there is no way of proving beyond any doubt that the title was on the tiara or the miter in times past. I therefore agree with the Seventh-day Adventist Bible Commentary:

*“Whether the inscription Vicarius Filii Dei appears on the tiara or mitre is really beside the point. The title is admittedly applied to the pope, and that is sufficient for the purposes of this prophecy.”* Seventh-day Adventist Bible Commentary, vol. 7, page 823-824

In 2007 Roman Catholic priest, Edward L. Beck was invited by Shawn Hannity to discuss the meaning of the number 666. The interview is fascinating in the fact that Beck gave the identical explanation of the number 666 as do some of the ablest scholars of the Seventh-day Adventist church!! Here is the transcript of the interview where I have highlighted the significant portions.

## **Fox News Network Interview**

SHOW: HANNITY'S AMERICA 9:30 PM EST

November 4, 2007 Sunday

110401cb.268

NEWS: International

(Note: EDWARD L. BECK, C.P., is a Roman Catholic priest of the Passionist Community. In addition to conducting workshops nationally and internationally, Father Beck is an author and develops mainstream television and film projects. He also is a commentator on religious and faith issues for various media outlets. Yellow highlighting of one of his responses is added.)

Beyond Belief: The Mysterious Nature of Three Numbers That Nobody Wants to Repeat; Stay tuned as we return to "Hannity's America" right here on FOX News channel.

SEAN HANNITY, FOX HOST: Welcome back to "Hannity's America." 666, you have seen these terrifying digits, but do you know what they stand for? Tonight, we look at the demonic numbers in the "Beyond Belief" segment.

(BEGIN VIDEOTAPE)

HANNITY (voice-over): 666, you have seen these numbers everywhere, road signs, bar codes, tattoos, dates on the calendar, Hollywood films. For many, the number is nothing short of terrifying. They believe it is the devil's number. Three digits that personify unspeakable evil foreshadowing the end of time. Is 666 really all we have come to believe it is?

FR. EDWARD L. BECK, C.P., AUTHOR, "SOUL PROVIDER": 666, because they say the beast and the force of evil, a lot of people have equated that with the devil, because traditionally Satan has been the force of evil.

HANNITY: In the final book of the New Testament, the Book of Revelation, it tells of impending doom, the end of time when a great war between the forces of good and evil will be fought. Ultimately, God will triumph, but the personification of evil comes at this time and in the form of the Antichrist or the Beast, bearing the number 666. Revelation's chapter 13, mentions that the people will receive the mark of the beast in their right hand or forehead. The Bible is not clear what the mark will be. Many avoid speculation since the Bible specifically doesn't give detailed information about the nature of this mark.

BECK: There's always caution when you speculate on what the Bible means because everybody is going to interpret it in a different way. It's a religious imagery of poetry almost that tries to explain a deeper truth about goodness and evil.

HANNITY: For church followers, 6 is seen as representing that which is short of perfection and a representation of sin. Repeated three times, such a number is made complete. It is also argued that 666 might represent an unholy trinity. The Bible is full of 7's to symbolize completeness. Six could symbolize the incomplete power of evil.

Why is 666 the number assigned to, quote, "the beast"?

BECK: **In the scripture, God is related to the perfect number 7. In the Book of Revelation, it says that the beast is man, the beast is human kind. We are 666. And there's the potential for evil in all of us. We will always be less than 7.**

HANNITY: Many use numerology to try to explain this diabolical number. For almost 2,000 years, people have been adding, subtracting, permeating and slicing numbers to come up with why 666 and who the beast bearing the digits might be.

BECK: This evil may be the Roman emperor, Nero. Some say it referred to. If you put Caesar, Nero and take the numerology of that name, the Roman numerals, it is 666. That is a veiled way of talking about Nero.

HANNITY: Some have even linked the number to the holiest of Catholic institutions.

BECK: Actually, it was Pope John Paul II. If you look at his Latin name, Ioannes Paulus Secundo, and you take the Roman numerals from that name, guess what they add up to? 666. **If you take the Latin name that refers to all popes, Vicarius Filii Dei, which means vicar of the Son of God, if you take the Roman numerals out of these, guess what they add up to? 666.**

HANNITY: Other numerical hypothesis argue that if you number the English alphabet, A equals 100, B equals 101, C equals 102, and so on. Using that theory, Adolph Hitler equals 666. Even the worldwide web has been acquainted by some as the beast.

BECK: In Hebrew, there aren't characters for numbers they are letters. The letter W is VA, which number equivalent is 6. So if you have worldwide web (www), it's 666. So some would attribute some of our downfall, our modern down fall or decadence, if you will, to the Internet.

HANNITY: There are no shortage of theories when it comes to the number 666 or what or who it may represent. In fact, no consensus exists in the ecclesiastical world. We know is that these three numbers have been fueled by centuries of human fear and fascination with evil, between Hollywood movies that capitalize on our demonic exceptions and conspiracy theorists who manipulate math and language to push people into believing the apocalypse is finally upon us.



But putting the crazy fringe theories aside and abandoning literal interpretations of the Book of Revelation, perhaps this nefarious number that's evaded our every day vernacular is meant to serve a bigger purpose.

BECK: The deeply important lesson of the Book of Revelation and the whole notion of 666 is that evil is a force. I think what this lesson is, from the Book of Revelation, is that good will over come it, but we have to be vigilant about it.

HANNITY: So is 666 nothing more than a symbolic warning of evil in all of us? Or are the numbers truly the embodiment of the devil himself or maybe the mark of the beast is just "Beyond Belief."





## **“The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”**

**by Pastor Stephen Bohr**

# **LESSON #9 – THE BEAST, HIS IMAGE AND HIS NUMBER: THE OLD TESTAMENT BACKGROUND**

### **Connection between Daniel 2 and 3**

- God had delineated in Daniel 2 the sequence of kingdoms that would arise between the days of Nebuchadnezzar and the second coming of Jesus
- Nebuchadnezzar did not like the scenario that God had presented and he attempted to change God’s prophetic scenario
- This idea came from the religious leaders (PK, pp. 504-505)
- The word “gold” in Daniel 2 and 3 links the chapters
- The word “image” is identical in both chapters
- The expression “set up” is repeatedly used in the chapter
- Remember that in Daniel 2 God had stated that He was going to “set up” his indestructible kingdom (3:1, 2, 3, 7, 12, 14, 15, 18)

**Babylon** was the ruling power in the world of the time (3:1)

*“Nebuchadnezzar the king made an image of gold, whose height was sixty cubits and its width six cubits. He set it up in the plain of Dura, in the province of Babylon.”*

**God’s people** were captive in Babylon (Jeremiah 51:45)

*“My people, go out of the midst of her! And let everyone deliver himself from the fierce anger of the Lord.”*

**Nebuchadnezzar** for a time lived as a beast (Daniel 4:16)

*“Let his heart be changed from that of a man, let him be given the heart of a beast, and let seven times pass over him.”*

Nebuchadnezzar set up an image **in his honor**. Repeatedly Daniel 3 quotes Nebuchadnezzar using the expression ‘*which I have set up*’

## **Dimensions of the Image**

The **dimensions of the image** were **60 x 6** (3:1)

*“Nebuchadnezzar the king made an image of gold, whose height was **sixty cubits** and its width **six cubits**. He set it up in the plain of Dura, in the province of Babylon.”*

*“Babylonian mathematics was based on the sexagesimal system, in which the basic counting units were the numbers 6 and 60. (The sexagesimal system has been accepted universally for the measurement of arcs and angles and for divisions of time.” Ranko Stefanovic, Revelation of Jesus Christ, p. 417*

- If what **Herodotus** says is correct, the image weighed **800 talents of gold** which would be equivalent to over **30 tons** (3:1).
- **Sexagesimal** system originated in **Babylon** (60 seconds, 60 minutes, 24 hours, 360 days, 360 degrees).
- If we multiply **60 x 6** the total is **360** which was a very **sacred number** in Babylon.
- **360 degrees** and **360 days** represent the **full cycle of time** and the **full circle of space**.
- Each of **36 gods** of the pantheon ruled each over **10 degrees of space** and **10 degrees of time**.
- The **sum** of the numbers **1-36 is 666** and the number 666 was known as “**the great number of the sun**.” **All the gods** were thus included in this one summary number. In Babylon the sun god was called **Marduk**. He was thought of as the **absolute ruler** of **all time** and **all space**.
- The Babylonian **priestly system** expressed this concept by wearing **amulets** or **medallions** around their necks.
- The medallions were made of **pure gold** because gold is the **color of the sun**. In fact the ancients called gold “**the dew of the sun**.” It is no coincidence that in **Isaiah 14:4** Babylon is called the **golden kingdom** and that in **Daniel 2** Babylon is

represented by the **head of gold**. The medallions or amulets were **circular** (like the sun) and had a **hexagon within the amulet**.

- On the **obverse (front)** side of the amulet there was a **large square** with **36 smaller squares** within. In each square there was a number from **1-36** and beneath the large square was the **number 666**.
- On the **reverse side** of the seal or amulet there was a **raging lion with wings** (**yellow** in color like the sun) whose **mane** is portrayed as the **rays of the sun**. Babylon is portrayed as a **lion in Daniel 7** and also in **sphinxes** which were at the main **entrances to the city**.
- In **astrology, Leo**, the lion, rules over the **hottest period** of the year (**July 23-August 22**).
- The **Romans acquired much of their religious system from Babylon** but they established a **different number system**. They chose **six letters** from their **Latin alphabet** and gave each a numerical value. The sum total of all six numbers is **666**.
- Thus the number **666** is to be identified with **Babylon** and with **Rome** (also called Babylon in I Peter 5:13).
- Thus those who worshipped the image would be **honoring Babylon** and worshiping the **sun god** whose **number is 666**.

### **The Primary Issue: Worship**

- The question was **who will you worship**: the image or the true God (3:28)  
*"Nebuchadnezzar spoke, saying, "Blessed be the God of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego, who sent His Angel and delivered His servants who trusted in Him, and they have frustrated the king's word, and yielded their bodies, that they should not serve nor worship any god except their own God!"*
- This word is used **10 times** in the chapter (3:5-7, 10-12, 14, 15, 18, 28).
- The **law of God** is also involved, primarily the **first table** which has to do with **worship to the true God**.
- We worship God because He is the **Creator** (Psalm 95:6) and the **sign** of worship to the Creator is the **Sabbath** (Revelation 14:7).

## **There Was a Union of Church and State (3:2)**

- Notice all the **political rulers** who were present in **order of rank**. All the **civil powers** of the Babylonian **world** were present there.
- The **government** was enforcing a **religious decree**. To not worship is **treason against the government**.
- If I have time, talk about the **establishment clause** and the **free exercise** clauses of the Constitution as revealed in **Daniel 3 and Daniel 6**.

## **Universal, Music and Death Decree**

The decree to worship was **universal** (3:4).

**Music** played a significant role in connection with false worship (3:5, 7, 10, 15).

A **death decree** against those who do not worship the image of the beast (3:6, 11, 15, 19).

## **Remnant and Shaking**

A faithful, **insignificant remnant** stood on the Lord's side. If the king could eradicate them his triumph would be complete (3:12).

The **religious leaders** accused the three young men to the civil power (2:2, 4, 5, 10, 12; 3:9-12).

There was a **shaking** in the Valley of Dura (Daniel 1:3).

- When Nebuchadnezzar took Daniel and his three friends captive he left **Zedekiah** (II Kings 24:14-17) to rule in Jerusalem.
- In the year **594 AD** (Jeremiah 51:59) King **Zedekiah** made a **trip to Babylon**. It is **inconceivable** that he was not there.

## **Intimidation**

Nebuchadnezzar attempted to intimidate the remnant who kept the commandments of God and worshipped only Him (3:15)

- **Three steps**: Fascination, intimidation, annihilation
- Ellen White makes a very **insightful remark**. She says that the king spoke the words in the first part of **Daniel 3:15** and then "*with hand stretched upward in defiance*" (Signs of the Times, May 6, 1897) he pronounced the last words of the verse.

The **answer** of the faithful **remnant** (Daniel 3:16-18)

## The King's Rage and Time of Trouble (Daniel 3:19)

- **Time of trouble** for the three young men (Daniel 3:20-23).
- Ellen White vividly describes the **face of Nebuchadnezzar** after the young men spoke:  
*"Satanic attributes made his countenance appear as the countenance of a demon."* (4BC 1169).
- **God** would **shortly answer** this charge: *"I will deliver them."* (husband/wife; sovereign/subject; body/head; shepherd/sheep).
- The same mistake that **Pharaoh** made at the **Red Sea**—stand still and see the salvation of the Lord. The **Lord fights for Israel**.
- They **faced** the **beast**, his **image** and the **civil rulers without flinching**. There was no human way to survive.

## The Fiery Furnace and Deliverance

The furnace heated **seven times hotter** (3:19)

- The **maximum heat**. Seven represents totality.
- The **furnace represents affliction** by which God **purifies his people** (Isaiah 48:10; 13:12; Job 23:10; Malachi 3:2, 3).
- The young men **claimed the promise** of **Isaiah 43:2**.

Their **tormentors** died instead (3:22).

**Christ Himself stood up** to deliver His faithful remnant in the midst of the time of trouble.

- Notice that the **Son of God is the Angel** (3:25, 28).
- They **went through the tribulation** but were **shielded** by divine power (3:24-27).
- **Christ is the Hero**, not the three young men!!

The key word in this passage is **deliver** which is used **four times** (3:15, 17, 28, 29).

- If you are with Him He will be with you.
- He requires **full and complete allegiance** not half-hearted service!

## Principles for the End Time Application of Daniel 3

**Literal Israel** was **literally captive** in **literal Babylon**, the **literal king** behaves like a **literal beast**, sets up a **literal image**, in a **literal valley** commanding everyone to **literally bow** and **worship** it, **literal Jews** refuse to literally bowed and therefore were thrown into a **literal fiery furnace** and are delivered from the **literal flames**.

The power which will rule the world in the end-time will be **Babylon** (Revelation 17:1, 2, 5).

Babylon will present a **false prophetic scenario** wanting to establish a **new world order different** than the new world order which Jesus will bring.

God's people will once again be **captive in Babylon** (Revelation 18:4).

There will be a power described as **the beast** (Revelation 13:1-2).

The beast will raise up **an image** (Revelation 13:11-18).

The **mark of the beast** will be imposed by **force**.

- It is the **opposite of the seal of God**. The **seal** of God is the **Sabbath** so the **mark** of the beast must be a **contrary day**.
- **Revelation 14:7** calls us to **worship the creator** in contrast to **worshipping the beast** and his image (Revelation 14:9-11)

Ellen White remarks:

*"An **idol sabbath** has been set up, **as** the **golden image** was set up in the plains of Dura. And as Nebuchadnezzar, the king of Babylon, issued **a decree** that all who would **not bow down** and worship this image should **be killed**, **so** a proclamation will be made that all who will **not reverence the Sunday** institution will be punished with **imprisonment and death**." *Manuscript Releases*, volume 14, p. 91*

The **number** of the beast is **666**:

- The beast has a name of **blasphemy** (Revelation 13:1)
- What is blasphemy? (Mark 2; John 10)
- Name has a **number** (Revelation 13:17)
- **How do you get** a number from a name?
- In ancient times numbers were **written with letters**
- **What language** do we employ?
- It must be in **Latin** because this is a **Roman power** (Revelation 13:2)

The image and mark must have something to do with the sun.

- Is it the **same to worship the sun** as it is to **worship on Sunday**?
- **Vicarius Filii Dei** and **Antichrist** have the same basic meaning: One who takes the place of Christ.

Ellen White makes the parallel:



*“History will be repeated. False religion will be exalted. The first day of the week, a common working day, possessing no sanctity whatever, will be **set up as was the image at Babylon**. All nations and tongues and peoples will be commanded to worship this spurious sabbath. This is Satan's plan to make of no account the day instituted by God, and given to the world as a memorial of creation. ZBC, p. 976*

Once again **worship** will be the **central issue** and it will be **worldwide** (Revelation 13:4, 8, 12, 15; 14:7, 9).

*“The decree enforcing the worship of this day is to go forth to all the world.” ZBC, p. 967*

But the **commandments** will also be an issue, especially the **first table** of the law (Revelation 12:17).

There will be a union of **church and state** (Revelation 17:2; 18:3).

A **death decree** will be proclaimed against God's **faithful remnant** (Revelation 13:15).

*“This argument [the one based on John 11:51ff] will appear conclusive; and a decree will finally be issued against those who hallow the Sabbath of the fourth commandment, denouncing them as deserving of the severest punishment and giving the people liberty, after a certain time, to put them to death. Romanism in the Old World and apostate Protestantism in the New will pursue a similar course toward those who honor all the divine precepts.” GC, p. 615*

*“Fearful is the issue to which the world is to be brought. The powers of earth, uniting to war against the commandments of God, will decree that “all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond” (Revelation 13:16), shall conform to the customs of the church by the observance of the false sabbath. All who refuse compliance will be visited with civil penalties, and it will finally be declared that they are deserving of death.” GC, p. 604*

The death decree will be **universal** (Revelation 3:15, 16)

*“As the Sabbath has become the special point of controversy throughout Christendom, and religious and secular authorities have combined to enforce the observance of the Sunday, the persistent refusal of a small minority to yield to the popular demand will make them objects of universal execration.” GC, p. 615*

**Music and external display** will play a significant role in the end time (Revelation 18:22).

Satan knows **what type of music** to use to **dull our spiritual senses** and make us **more susceptible** to his temptations.

*“Many Protestants suppose that the Catholic religion is unattractive and that its worship is a dull, meaningless round of ceremony. Here they mistake. While Romanism is based upon deception, it is not a coarse and clumsy imposture. The religious service of the Roman Church is a most impressive ceremonial. Its gorgeous display and solemn rites fascinate the senses of*

*the people and silence the voice of reason and of conscience. The eye is charmed. Magnificent churches, imposing processions, golden altars, jeweled shrines, choice paintings, and exquisite sculpture appeal to the love of beauty. The ear also is captivated. The music is unsurpassed. The rich notes of the deep-toned organ, blending with the melody of many voices as it swells through the lofty domes and pillared aisles of her grand cathedrals, cannot fail to impress the mind with awe and reverence. This outward splendor, pomp, and ceremony, that only mocks the longings of the sin-sick soul, is an evidence of inward corruption. The religion of Christ needs not such attractions to recommend it. In the light shining from the cross, true Christianity appears so pure and lovely that no external decorations can enhance its true worth. It is the beauty of holiness, a meek and quiet spirit, which is of value with God. GC, pp. 566, 567*

God will have a **faithful remnant** who will refuse to worship the image to the beast (Revelation 12:17; 14:12; 15:2-4).

There will be a **shaking** among God's people (Matthew 24:10-12).

*"To stand in defense of truth and righteousness when the majority forsakes us, to fight the battles of the Lord when champions are few--this will be our test. At this time, we must gather warmth from the coldness of others, courage from their cowardice, and loyalty from their treason. The nation will be on the side of the great rebel leader." 5T, p. 136*

*"As the storm approaches, a **large class who has professed faith in the third angel's message**, but has not been **sanctified through obedience to the truth**, abandon their position and join the **ranks of the opposition**. By uniting with the world and partaking of its spirit, they have come to view matters in nearly the same light; and when the test is brought, they are prepared to choose the easy, popular side. Men of talent and pleasing address, who once rejoiced in the truth, employ their powers to deceive and mislead souls. They become the most bitter enemies of their former brethren. When Sabbath keepers are brought before the courts to answer for their faith, these apostates are the most efficient agents of Satan to misrepresent and accuse them, and by false reports and insinuations to stir up the rulers against them." GC, p. 608*

Religious leaders will be the foremost to accuse the remnant of God just like in the days of Elijah, John the Baptist, Jesus and the church in the Middle Ages:

*"Those who honor the Bible Sabbath will be denounced as enemies of law and order, as breaking down the moral restraints of society, causing anarchy and corruption, and calling down the judgments of God upon the earth. Their conscientious scruples will be pronounced obstinacy, stubbornness, and contempt of authority. They will be accused of disaffection toward the government. Ministers who deny the obligation of the divine law will present from the pulpit the duty of yielding obedience to the civil authorities as ordained of God. In legislative halls and courts of justice, commandment keepers will be misrepresented and*

condemned. A false coloring will be given to their words; the worst construction will be put upon their motives." GC, p. 592

*"As the controversy extends into new fields and the minds of the people are called to God's downtrodden law, Satan is astir. The power attending the message will only madden those who oppose it. The clergy will put forth almost superhuman efforts to shut away the light lest it should shine upon their flocks. By every means at their command they will endeavor to suppress the discussion of these vital questions." GC, p. 607*

Satan will manifest **his wrath** (Revelation 12:17)

There will be a **similar question** as was asked by Nebuchadnezzar (Revelation 13:3, 4)

There will be a severe **time of trouble** and God's people will appear doomed:

- Daniel 11 has the sequence: **King of the north** goes out to **annihilate** many then **Michael stands up** to defend his people, then they are **delivered**.

*"He numbers the world as his subjects; but the little company who keep the commandments of God are resisting his supremacy. If he could blot them from the earth, his triumph would be complete." GC, p. 618*

The **fiery furnace** is the seven last plagues where the totality of God's wrath is to be poured out. The **wicked will be destroyed** but not the righteous:

*"Their affliction is great, the flames of the furnace seem about to consume them; but the Refiner will bring them forth as gold tried in the fire. God's love for His children during the period of their severest trial is as strong and tender as in the days of their sunniest prosperity; but it is needful for them to be placed in the furnace of fire; their earthliness must be consumed, that the image of Christ may be perfectly reflected." GC, p. 621*

Jesus will **personally intervene** to deliver His people

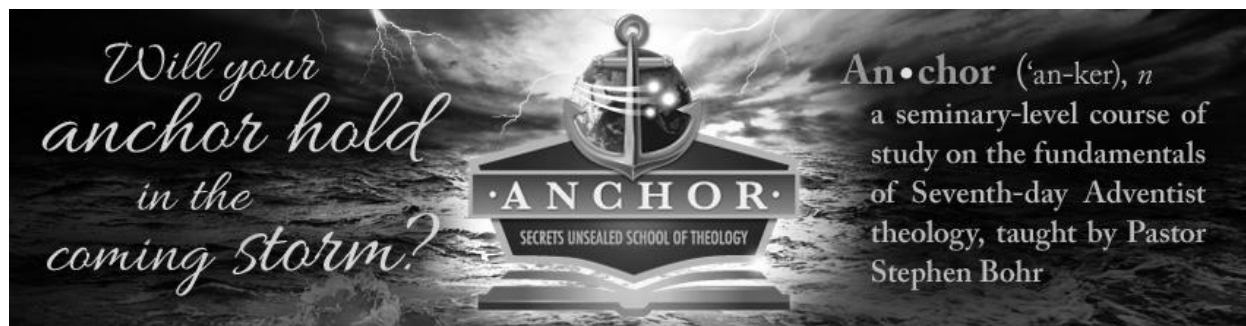
*"When the protection of human laws shall be withdrawn from those who honor the law of God, there will be, in different lands, a simultaneous movement for their destruction. As the time appointed in the decree draws near, the people will conspire to root out the hated sect. It will be determined to strike in one night a decisive blow, which shall utterly silence the voice of dissent and reproof. The people of God--some in prison cells, some hidden in solitary retreats in the forests and the mountains--still plead for divine protection, while in every quarter companies of armed men, urged on by hosts of evil angels, are preparing for the work of death. It is now, in the hour of utmost extremity that the God of Israel will interpose for the deliverance of His chosen." GC, p. 635*

God will demand unswerving loyalty:

*“The season of distress before God's people will call for a faith that will not falter. His children must make it manifest that He is the only object of their worship, and that no consideration, not even that of life itself, can induce them to make the least concession to false worship. To the loyal heart the commands of sinful, finite men will sink into insignificance beside the word of the eternal God. Truth will be obeyed though the result be imprisonment or exile or death. PK, pp. 512, 513*

**A fireproof character**

- Isaiah 33:14-16. We must have a sterling character. Be faithful in the small things (Luke 16:10; Jeremiah 12:5)



## “The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”

by Pastor Stephen Bohr

# LESSON #10 – THE MARK OF THE BEAST

## Introduction

As we begin, let's imagine throwing a stone into a lake causing three ripples—larger, smaller and smallest. The smallest ripple broadens into a large one and the larger into the largest. Now I want you to imagine **three concentric circles**:

- The Ten Commandments would be the **largest circle**
- The **first table** of the law would be the medium circle
- One **specific commandment** in the first table would be the smallest circle

## The Largest Circle

**Ripple 1**: The largest circle represents the final conflict over the **Law of God**.

**Point #1**: At the very end Satan **hates** the **commandments** of God.

### **Revelation 12:17**:

*“And the dragon **was enraged** with the woman, and he went to make war with the rest of her offspring, who keep the **commandments of God** and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.”*

**Point #2**: God's people at the end will have a **seal** on their foreheads and it is **the law** that is written on the **mind** and in the heart.

### **Revelation 7:3**:

*“Do not harm the earth, the sea, or the trees till we have sealed the servants of our God on their **foreheads**.”*

### **Hebrews 8:10:**

*“For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the Lord: I will put My **laws** in their **mind** and write them on their **hearts**; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people.”*

**Point #3:** It is the **law** that is **sealed** among God’s disciples

### **Isaiah 8:16:**

*“Bind up the testimony, **seal the law** among my disciples.”*

**Point #4:** Those who have the seal of God **depart from iniquity**. It is the Law that defines good and evil (**Ecclesiastes 12:13** where the law is linked with good and evil).

**Matthew 7:23** and **Luke 13:27** are parallel verses. But while **Matthew 7:23** uses the word *anomias* (lawlessness) **Luke 13:27** uses the word *adikia*. Even in English sometimes when you add an ‘a’ at the beginning of a noun it means the opposite of what the word means without the ‘a.’ For example, the word amorphous.

### **II Timothy 2:19:**

*“Nevertheless the solid foundation of God stands, having this **seal**: “The Lord knows those who are His,” and, “Let everyone who names the name of Christ depart from **iniquity** [adikia].”*

### **Matthew 7:23:**

*“And then I will declare to them, ‘I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice **lawlessness** [anomias]!’”*

**Note:** The word *anomias* is translated ‘transgression of the law’ in **First John 3:4**.

### **Luke 13:27:**

*“But He will say, ‘I tell you I do not know you, where you are from. Depart from Me, all you workers of iniquity [adikia].’”*

**Point #5:** A comparison between **Revelation 14:9-11** and **14:12** reveals that there is a **contrast** between those who worship the beast and those who keep the commandments of God.

### **Revelation 14:11:**

*“And the smoke of their torment ascends forever and ever; and they have no rest day or night, **who worship the beast** and his image, and whoever receives the mark of his name.”*

### **Revelation 14:12:**

*"Here is the patience of the saints; here are those who keep the **commandments of God** and the faith of Jesus."*

### **The Smaller Circle: Conflict Over the First Table of the Law**

**Point #1: Deuteronomy 6:4** summarizes the first table of the law (the first four commandments) and then **verses 5-8** command Israel to write them on the **forehead and** the **hand**.

### **Deuteronomy 6:4:**

*"Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God, the Lord is one! 5 You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your strength [summary of the first table]. 6 "And these words which I command you today shall be in your **heart**. 7 You shall teach them diligently to your children, and shall talk of them when you sit in your house, when you walk by the way, when you lie down, and when you rise up. 8 You shall bind them as **a sign** on your **hand**, and they shall be as **frontlets between your eyes**."*

**Point #2:** The issue at the end time has to do with **worship** (Daniel 3 [11 times]). The **last six commandments** have to do with the **horizontal** relationships between human beings while the **first four commandments** describe their **vertical** relationship with God

### **Revelation 13:4:**

*"So they **worshiped** the dragon who gave authority to the beast; and they **worshiped** the beast, saying: "Who is like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?"*

### **Revelation 13:8, 12, 15:**

*"All who dwell on the earth will **worship** him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. 12 And he exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence, and causes the earth and those who dwell in it to **worship** the first beast whose deadly wound was healed. 15 He was granted power to give breath to the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak and cause as many as would not **worship** the image of the beast to be killed."*

### **Revelation 14:9, 11:**

*"Then a third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice: "If anyone **worships** the beast and his image, and receives his mark on his forehead or on his hand. . . and they have no rest day or night, who **worship** the beast and his image, and whoever receives the mark of his name."*

**Third Point:** Chapter 13 speaks of **false worship** to the **beast** and his **image** and receiving the **mark**. In contrast, **Chapter 14:6, 7** commands God's people to **worship God the Creator**. If a person does not worship the Creator, he will end up worshipping the beast.

*"Then I saw another angel flying in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach to those who dwell on the earth—to every nation, tribe, tongue, and people—7 saying with a loud voice: "Fear God and give glory to Him, for the hour of His judgment has come; and **worship Him who made heaven and earth, the sea and springs of water.**"*

- Beast is **worshipped** [first commandment] (**Revelation 13:4**)
- **Image** is worshiped [second commandment] (**Revelation 13:14**)
- Name is **blasphemed** [third commandment] (**Revelation 13:6**)
- Attack on the **Creator** [fourth commandment] (**Revelation 14:7 with 14:9**)

### **The Smallest Circle: An Attack on the Fourth Commandment**

**First Point: Testimony of Scripture:** We **worship** God because He is our **Creator** and the **memorial sign** of the Creator is the Sabbath

#### **Psalm 95:6:**

*"Oh come, let us **worship** and bow down; let us kneel before the Lord **our Maker.**"*

#### **Nehemiah 9:6:**

*"You alone are the Lord. **You have made** heaven, the heaven of heavens with all their host, the earth and everything on it, the seas and all that is in them, and You preserve them all. The host of heaven **worships You.**"*

**Revelation 14:6, 7** calls upon us to worship the Creator and strongly alludes to the **Sabbath commandment** in Exodus 20:8-11 and the creation story in Genesis 2:2, 3.

*"Then I saw another angel flying in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach to those who dwell on the earth—to every nation, tribe, tongue, and people—7 saying with a loud voice: "Fear God and give glory to Him, for the hour of His judgment has come; and **worship Him who made** heaven and earth, the sea and springs of water."*

#### **Exodus 20:11:**

*"For in six days the Lord made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, and rested the seventh day. Therefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day and hallowed it."*

All flesh will come to worship on the Sabbath because God created a **new heavens and a new earth.**



### **Isaiah 66:22, 23:**

*"For as the new heavens and the new earth which I will make shall remain before Me," says the Lord, "So shall your descendants and your name remain. 23 And it shall come to pass that from one New Moon to another and from **one Sabbath to another** all flesh shall **come to worship** before Me," says the Lord."*

**Genesis 2:2, 3: God's placed His signature** on creation week by resting on the Sabbath. The motivation clause in the fourth commandment explains that the Sabbath identifies who made the world and everything in it.

Describe the **artist** and how he signs the linen at the end of his work. It **identifies the artist**.

### **Genesis 2:2, 3:**

*"And on the seventh day God ended His work which He had done, and He **rested** on the seventh day from all His work which He had done. 3 **Then** God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it, **because** in it He **rested** from all His work which God had created and made."*

Did God **bless** and **sanctify** the Sabbath **for Himself**? God is the **fountain** of all blessing and he is the **personification** of all holiness

In the Bible the words "**sign**" and "**seal**" are used **interchangeably**.

### **Romans 4:11:**

*"And he received the **sign** of circumcision, a **seal** of the righteousness of the faith which he had while still uncircumcised. . ."*

In **Exodus 31:17** the Sabbath is described as a sign between God and Israel

### **Exodus 31:17:**

*"It is a **sign** between Me and the children of Israel forever; **for [because]** in six days the Lord made the heavens and the earth, and on the seventh day He rested and was refreshed."*

### **Ezekiel 20:12:**

*". . . hallow My Sabbaths, and they will be a **sign** between Me and you, that you may know that **I am the Lord your God**."*

**Ezekiel 8:16, 17** is in contrast to **Ezekiel 9:4**

- The **greatest abomination** was that the religious leaders were **worshipping the sun** toward the east.
- In contrast were those who **sighed and cried** because of those **abominations** received the **seal on their forehead**.

- Jerusalem was destroyed because the Sabbath was **desecrated** (made unholy).

**Ezekiel 8:16, 17:**

*“So He brought me into the **inner court of the Lord's house [among God's own people];** and there, at the door of the temple of the Lord, between the porch and the altar, were about **twenty-five men** [the leaders of the people] with their backs toward the temple of the Lord and their faces **toward the east**, and they were **worshipping the sun toward the east.** 17 And He said to me, "Have you seen this, O son of man? Is it a trivial thing to the house of Judah to commit the **abominations [key word in Revelation 17]** which they commit here? For they have filled the land with **violence**; then they have returned to provoke Me to **anger [God's wrath in Revelation]**, indeed they put the branch to their nose.”*

**Ezekiel 9:4:**

*“. . . and the Lord said to him, "Go through the midst of the city, through the midst of Jerusalem, and put a **mark on the foreheads** of the men who sigh and cry over all the abominations that are done within it."*

**Jeremiah 17:27:**

*"But if you will **not heed Me to hallow the Sabbath day**, such as not carrying a burden when entering the gates of Jerusalem on the Sabbath day, then I will kindle a fire in its gates, and it shall devour the palaces of Jerusalem, and it shall not be quenched.""*

- Revelation picks up on this in **Chapter 7** and chapter **13:16, 17** with **14:1** where the contrast is once again seen between those who have the seal of God and those who have the mark of the beast.
- How **Sunday** came into the Christian church from **Paganism through Constantine**.
- It is the **same day** of the sun as in Ezekiel. Is it the same to **worship the sun** as to worship on the **day of the sun**?

*“The **seal of God's law** is found in the fourth commandment. This only, of all the ten, brings to view both the **name and the title** of the Lawgiver. It declares Him to be the **Creator** of the heavens and the earth, and thus shows His claim to **reverence and worship** above all others. Aside from this precept, there is nothing in the Decalogue to show by whose authority the law is given. When the **Sabbath was changed** by the papal power, **the seal was taken** from the law. The disciples of Jesus are called upon to restore it by exalting the Sabbath of the fourth commandment to its rightful position as the Creator's memorial and the sign of His authority.” GC, p. 452*

## **Second Point: The Testimony of Analogy**

The **presidential seal** of the United States contains three elements: **Name, office, territory.**

*“The fourth commandment is **the only one** of all the ten in which are found both the **name** and the **title** of the Lawgiver. It is **the only one** that shows by **whose authority** [the creator] the law is given. Thus it contains the seal of God, affixed to His law as evidence of its **authenticity** and **binding force.**” PP, p. 307*

## **Third Point: The Testimony of Archeology**

Characteristics of the Middle Eastern seals at **Ugarit:**

- They were **covenants** between a sovereign and vassal.
- They were written on **tablets** of clay.
- The tablets were written on **both sides.**
- The **seal** was in the **middle** of the tablet.
- The seal contained the **name, title** and **territory** of the sovereign king.

The Ten Commandments given in the same way that ancient covenants were given:

**Deuteronomy 4:13:** The Ten Commandments were the **covenant.**

*“So He declared to you His **covenant** which He commanded you to perform, the Ten Commandments; and He wrote them on two tablets of stone.”*

**Deuteronomy 4:13:** The Ten Commandments were written on **tables of stone.**

*“So He declared to you His that He commanded you to perform, the Ten Commandments; and He wrote them on two **tablets of stone.**”*

**Exodus 32:15, 16:** The Ten Commandments were written on both sides.

*“And Moses turned and went down from the mountain, and the two tablets of the Testimony were in his hand. The tablets were **written on both sides;** on the one side and on the other they were written. 16 Now the tablets were the work of God, and the writing was the writing of God engraved on the tablets.”*

**Exodus 20:8-11:** The Fourth Commandment contains the seal.

*“Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. 9 Six days you shall labor and do all your work, 10 but the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord your God. In it you shall do no work: you, nor your son, nor your daughter, nor your male servant, nor your female servant, nor your cattle, nor your stranger who is within your gates, **for** in six days **the Lord** [name] **made** [office] **the heavens and the earth, the sea** [territory], and all that is in them, and rested the seventh day. Therefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day and hallowed it.”*

#### **Fourth Point: The Testimony of Prophecy and History**

The little horn thought that it could **change the Law**. We have already identified the **little horn** or the beast as the Roman Catholic **papacy**. The question is: Does the **Papacy claim to have changed** God's holy law?

#### **Daniel 7:25:**

*"He shall speak pompous words against the Most High, shall persecute the saints of the Most High and shall intend to **change times and law**. Then the saints shall be given into his hand for a time and times and half a time."*

**John Gilmary Shea** (1824-1892) who was an important Roman Catholic **historian of his time:**

*"For ages **all Christian nations** looked to the Catholic Church, and, as we have seen, the various **states enforced by law** her ordinances as to worship and cessation of labor on Sunday. Protestantism, in discarding the authority of the Church, has no good reason for its Sunday theory, and ought logically, to keep Saturday as the Sabbath. **The State in passing laws for the due Sanctification of Sunday, is unwittingly acknowledging the authority of the Catholic Church**, and carrying out more or less faithfully its prescription. The Sunday as a day of the week set apart for the obligatory public worship of Almighty God is **purely a creation of the Catholic Church**." John Gilmary Shea (who was an important Roman Catholic historian of his time), in The American Catholic Quarterly Review, January 1883, p. 139*

**Our Sunday Visitor**, perhaps the most important and influential Roman Catholic journal in the United States:

*"Protestants . . . accept Sunday rather than Saturday as the day for public worship after the **Catholic Church made the change** . . . But the Protestant mind does not seem to realize that in accepting the Bible, **in observing the Sunday, they are accepting the authority of the spokesman for the church, the Pope**." Our Sunday Visitor, Feb. 5, 1950*

**Louis G. Segur** (1820-1881) who was a French Roman Catholic prelate and apologist, and later a diplomatic and judicial official at Rome:

*"Question: What Bible authority is there for **changing** the Sabbath from the seventh to the first day of the week? Who gave **the Pope the authority** to change a command of God?" Answer: It was the Catholic Church which, by the authority of Jesus Christ, has **transferred this rest** to the Sunday. Thus the observance of Sunday by the Protestants is an **homage they pay**, in spite of themselves, **to the authority of the [Catholic] Church**." Monsignor Louis Segur, Plain Talk About the Protestantism of Today, 1868, p. 213*

## The Catholic Encyclopedia:

"Question: What is the Third Commandment? [**the fourth commandment in Protestant Bibles, because the Roman Catholic Church removed the Second Commandment--Exodus20:4-6**] "**Answer:** The Third Commandment is: 'Remember that thou keep holy the Sabbath day.'" **Question:** Which is the Sabbath day?' Answer: Saturday is the Sabbath day." **Question:** Why do we observe Sunday instead of Saturday?" **Answer:** The Catholic Church, after **changing the day of rest from Saturday**, the seventh day of the week, to Sunday, the first day, **made the third commandment refer to Sunday** as the day to be kept as the Lord's Day." Catholic Encyclopedia, vol. 4, p. 153.

**Priest Thomas Enright**, CSSR, who was for many years the president of Redemptorist College in Kansas City, Missouri in a lecture at Hartford, Kansas on February 18, 1884:

"Prove to me from the Bible alone that I am bound to keep Sunday holy. There is no such law in the Bible. **It is a law of the holy Catholic Church alone.** The **Bible** says 'Remember the Sabbath day to keep it holy.' The **Catholic Church** says: No. **By my divine power I abolish the Sabbath day** and command you to keep holy the first day of the week. And lo! The entire civilized world **bows down in reverent obedience** to the command of the Holy Catholic Church." Printed in The Hartford Kansas Weekly Call, February 22, 1884, and the American Sentinel, a New York Roman Catholic journal in June 1893, page 173

From the office of **James Cardinal Gibbons** of Baltimore:

"Of course the Catholic Church claims that the change was her act . . . **AND THE ACT IS A MARK** of her ecclesiastical power." From the office of Cardinal Gibbons, through Chancellor H.F. Thomas, November 11, 1895

Roman Catholic theologian **Henry T. Cafferata**:

"A word about Sunday. God said: 'Remember that thou keep holy the Sabbath day!' The Sabbath was Saturday, not Sunday; why, then, do we keep Sunday holy instead of Saturday? The **Church altered** the observance of the Sabbath to the observance of Sunday. . . Protestants who say that they go by the Bible and the Bible only, and that they do not believe anything that is not in the Bible, must be rather puzzled by the keeping of Sunday when God distinctly said, 'Keep holy the Sabbath day.' The word Sunday does not come anywhere in the Bible so, without knowing it, they are **obeying the authority of the Catholic Church.**" Henry T. Cafferata, The Catechism Simply Explained (London: Burns Oates & Washbourne Ltd., 1938), p. 89

But someone might object: Doesn't the Apostle Paul tell us that the **seal of God is the Holy Spirit**? How do you reconcile this with the idea that the Sabbath is God's seal? This will be the subject of our next study.





## **“The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”**

**by Pastor Stephen Bohr**

### **LESSON #11 – THE SEAL OF THE LIVING GOD**

#### **Ellen White and the Seal of God**

Since early in our history, the Seventh-day Adventist Church has consistently taught that the Seal of God is the Sabbath. As far as we know, the first person to discover this in scripture was Captain Joseph Bates who in 1846 published a booklet titled The Seventh-day Sabbath a Perpetual Sign.

With the passing of time, Ellen White came to agree with Bates and she unequivocally and repeatedly identified the Sabbath as the Seal of God. Notice the following examples:

*“The Sabbath was placed in the Decalogue as the seal of the living God, pointing out the Lawgiver, and making known his right to rule. It was a sign between God and his people, a test of their loyalty to him.” Signs of the Times, May 13, 1886*

*“The fourth commandment is the only one of all the ten in which are found both the name and the title of the Lawgiver. It is the only one that shows by whose authority the law is given. Thus it contains the seal of God, affixed to His law as evidence of its authenticity and binding force.” PP, p. 307*

*“The Sabbath of the fourth commandment is the seal of the living God. It points to God as the Creator, and is the sign of His rightful authority over the beings He has made.” Signs of the Times, November 1, 1899*

*“The sign or seal of God is the observance of the seventh-day Sabbath, and the Lord's memorial of his work of creation.” Special Testimony to Battle Creek, 1898, p. 6*

*“The truth in regard to the Sabbath of the Lord is to be proclaimed. The seventh-day is to be shown to be the seal of the living God.” Manuscript Releases, volume 4, p. 425*

Yet there appears to be a discrepancy between the Bible and Ellen White on this topic. The Bible affirms that the seal of God is the **Holy Spirit**. Why, then, does Ellen White affirm that the Sabbath is the seal?

## **The Bible: The Seal is the Internal Work of the Holy Spirit**

### **Ephesians 1:13-14**

*“In Him you also trusted, after you heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation; in whom also, having believed, you **were sealed** with the **Holy Spirit** of promise, who is the guarantee of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, to the praise of His glory.”*

### **Ephesians 4:30**

*“And do not grieve the **Holy Spirit of God**, by whom you **were sealed** for the day of redemption.”*

### **2 Corinthians 1:21, 22**

*“Now He who establishes us with you in Christ and has anointed us is God, who also **has sealed us** and given us the **Spirit** in our hearts as a guarantee.”*

## **Solving the Apparent Discrepancy**

Is there **really** a contradiction between the Bible and Ellen G. White on what constitutes the Seal of God? In this study we shall find that Ellen White and the Bible are describing **two different sides** of one reality. The Bible is describing the **invisible, internal** work of the Holy Spirit while Ellen White is describing the **external, visible** manifestation of that very work.

## **The Example of Circumcision**

In order to better understand the relationship between the internal work of the Holy Spirit and the Sabbath, let's take the analogous case of **circumcision**.

### **The external act:**

**Leviticus 12:3:** God explicitly **commanded** the **external act** of circumcision.

*“And in the eighth day the flesh of his foreskin **shall be** circumcised.”*

**Genesis 17:14:** The **external sign** was of **great importance**.

*“And the uncircumcised male child, who is not circumcised in the flesh of his foreskin, that person **shall be cut off** from his people; he has **broken** My covenant.”*



In **Exodus 4:24-26** we even find that this rite was of such great importance that God **threatened to kill Moses** for the failure to circumcise his son.

### **The deeper spiritual meaning:**

Yet circumcision had a **far deeper meaning** than the literal removal of the flesh of the foreskin. We find this deeper meaning exemplified in the experience of **Abraham**.

**Genesis 15:6**: God promised Abraham a son from his own loins when he was about **84 years old**. Abraham trusted God and it was **accounted to him for righteousness**:

*“And he **believed** in the Lord; and He counted it to him for righteousness.”*

According to **Genesis 17:24** about **fifteen years after** Abraham was justified by faith he was **circumcised**. He was **99 years old** at this time.

The crucial question is this: Did the **external act** of circumcision save or justify Abraham? In the days of the apostle Paul, the Jews made external circumcision the **litmus test salvation** and **belonging to God’s people**. The **external sign** was considered all important. Notice how Paul underlines the importance of the **external act** while at the same time underlining its **deep spiritual meaning**:

**Romans 4:9, 10**: According to Paul, Abraham was **justified by faith** when he was 84 years old!

**Romans 4:11-12**: Circumcision when he was **99 years old** was the **external, visible sign** of justification.

*“And he received the **sign** of circumcision, a **seal** of the righteousness of the faith which he had **while still uncircumcised**, that he might be the father of all those who believe, though they are uncircumcised, that righteousness might be imputed to them also, 12 and the father of circumcision to those who not only are of the circumcision, but who also walk in the **steps of the faith** which our father Abraham had while still uncircumcised.”*

Significantly, this **deeper dimension** of circumcision was already found in the **Old Testament**:

**Deuteronomy 30:6**: External sign of an **internal experience**

*“And the Lord your God will circumcise your **heart** and the heart of your descendants, **to love the Lord** your God with all your heart and with all your soul that you may live.”*

**Deuteronomy 10:16-17**: External sign of an **internal experience**.

*“Therefore circumcise **the foreskin of your heart**, and be stiff-necked no longer.”*

The Apostle Paul was **merely confirming** what was already taught in the Old Testament:

### **Philippians 3:3:**

*“For we are the circumcision who **worship God** in the Spirit, **rejoice** in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh”.*

### **Romans 2:28-29**

*“For he is not a Jew who is one **outwardly**, nor is circumcision that which is **outward** in the flesh; <sup>29</sup> but he is a Jew who is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the **Spirit**, not in the **letter**; whose praise is not from men but from God.”*

**Point of Clarification:** At this juncture, a point of clarification is needed:

- Circumcision was clearly established as a **Jewish** institution.
- It was established **after sin**.
- In the New Testament it was clearly **replaced by baptism**.
- According to the **explicit teaching** of the Jerusalem Council its observance is **no longer required**.

### **Colossians 2:11, 12:**

*“In Him you were also circumcised with the circumcision made **without hands**, by putting off the body of the **sins of the flesh**, by the circumcision of Christ, **12 buried with Him in baptism**, in which you also were **raised with Him** through faith in the working of God, who raised Him from the dead.”*

The **Sabbath** is in contrast to this:

- It was established **before sin** and it part of God’s original plan.
- It was established for **all people**.
- There is no indication in the New Testament that it was **replaced**.

### **The Example of Baptism**

As we have seen in the New Testament, baptism **takes the place** of circumcision (Colossians 2:11-13). Is the **external act** of baptism necessary and important or is it **simply enough to accept** Jesus in your **heart**?

The New Testament makes the **external rite** of baptism **a condition for salvation**. But when we carefully read the Bible texts on baptism we see that the **external ceremony**, though very important, is not sufficient without the internal work of the Holy Spirit:

**Mark 16:15-17:** A person **must first believe** in order for baptism to be valid:

*“And He said to them, “Go into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature. 16 He who [1] **believes** and is [2] **baptized will be saved**; but he who does not believe will be condemned.”*

## **1 Peter 3:21-22**

*“There is also an antitype which **now saves us** — baptism (not the removal of the filth of the flesh [**external**], but the answer of a good conscience toward God [**internal**]), through the resurrection of Jesus Christ.”*

**Ellen White** concurs with the Bible testimony. She clearly teaches that the **external rite of baptism** is indispensable but is **worthless without the internal work** of the Holy Spirit:

*“Christ made **baptism the entrance** to His spiritual kingdom. He made this a **positive condition with which all must comply** who wish to be acknowledged as under the authority of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost. Those who **receive the ordinance of baptism** thereby make a **public declaration** that they **have renounced [before baptism]** the world, and **have become [before baptism]** members of the royal family, children of the heavenly King.” Seventh-day Adventist Bible Commentary, volume 6, p. 1075*

Concerning the words that the Father spoke to Jesus at His baptism, we are told:

*“Let those who received the **imprint** of God by baptism heed these words, remembering that upon them the Lord has placed **His signature**, declaring them to be His sons and daughters. The Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, powers infinite and omniscient, receive those who **truly enter** into covenant relation with God. They are present at every baptism, to receive the candidates who **have renounced** the world and **have received** Christ into the soul temple. These candidates **have entered** into the family of God, and their **names are inscribed** in the Lamb's book of life.” God's Amazing Grace, p. 143*

*“The **new birth** is a rare experience in this age of the world. This is the reason why there are so many **perplexities** in the churches. Many, **so many**, who assume the name of Christ are **unsanctified and unholy**. They have been baptized, but they were **buried alive**. Self did not die, and therefore they **did not rise** to newness of life in Christ (MS 148, 1897).” The Seventh-day Adventist Bible Commentary, volume 6, p. 1075*

*“It is the **grace of Christ** that gives life to the soul. **Apart from Christ**, baptism, like any other service, is a **worthless form**.” The Desire of Ages, p. 181*

*“Baptism **does not make** children Christians; neither does it **convert** them; it is but an **outward sign**, showing that they are sensible that they should be children of God by acknowledging that **they believe** in Jesus Christ as their Savior and will henceforth live for Christ.” CG, p. 499*

## **The Example of Communion**

Let's take another example, Communion. Partaking of the bread and grape juice at Communion is only valid when they are partaken of in faith:

*“The gift of Christ to the marriage feast was a **symbol**. The water represented baptism into **His death**; the wine, the shedding of His blood for the sins of the world. The water to fill the jars was brought by human hands, but the word of Christ alone could impart to it life-giving virtue. So with the rites which point to the Savior’s death. It is only by the power of Christ, **working through faith**, that they **have efficacy to nourish the soul**.” DA, pp. 148, 149*

## **God Commands Sabbath Observance**

**God commands** us to keep the Sabbath **outwardly** by abstaining from work on it. God commanded the observance of a **specific, external** day and prescribed **exactly how** to keep it:

### **Exodus 20:8-11**

*“Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. 9 Six days you shall labor and do all your work, 10 but the **seventh day** is the Sabbath of the Lord your God. In it **you shall do no work**: you, nor your son, nor your daughter, nor your male servant, nor your female servant, nor your cattle, nor your stranger who is within your gates. 11 For in six days the Lord made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, and rested the seventh day. Therefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day and hallowed it.”*

## **The Deeper Dimension of the Sabbath**

The **external observance** of the Sabbath is **required** by God but it is **only acceptable** as an external sign of an internal relationship.

Although **Deuteronomy 6:6-8** is not dealing specifically with the Sabbath, it will help us understand the importance of harmony between the internal and the external:

*“And these words which I command you today shall be in your **heart [in the heart before they are placed on the hand, the forehead and the doorposts]**. 7 You shall **teach them [after they are in the heart]** diligently to your children, and shall **talk of them [after they are in the heart]** when you sit in your house, when you walk by the way, when you lie down, and when you rise up. 8 You shall bind them **as a sign [external behavior is to reveal that they are in the heart first]** on your **hand [they should guide what you do]**, and they shall be as **frontlets** between your eyes [they should guide what you think]. 9 You shall write them on the **doorposts** of your house and on your **gates**.”*

The **Jews of Christ’s day** were very strict in **literally and externally** fulfilling the commands in these verses but they totally missed the deep spiritual meaning:

*“These words have a **deep meaning**. As the word of God is meditated upon and practiced, the whole man will be ennobled. In righteous and merciful dealing, the hands will reveal, as a signet, the principles of God’s law. They will be kept clean from bribes, and from all that is corrupt and deceptive. They will be active in works of love and compassion. The eyes, directed*

toward a noble purpose, will be clear and true. The expressive countenance, the speaking eye, will testify to the blameless character of him who loves and honors the word of God. But by the Jews of Christ's day all this was undiscerned. The command given to Moses was construed into a direction that the precepts of Scripture should be **worn upon the person**. They were accordingly written upon strips of parchment, and bound in a **conspicuous manner** about the head and wrists. But this did not cause the law of God to take a firmer hold of the mind and heart. These parchments were **worn merely as badges**, to attract attention. They were thought to give the wearers an **air of devotion** which would command the reverence of the people." *DA pp. 612, 613*

The Jews did the same in the observance of the Sabbath. They were meticulously careful to obey the very letter of the Sabbath commandment, and then some, but totally lost its deep spiritual meaning. The Sabbath was not an end in itself but rather an **external sign of internal sanctification**:

### **Exodus 31:12-13**

*"And the Lord spoke to Moses, saying, 13 "Speak also to the children of Israel, saying: 'Surely My Sabbaths you shall keep, for it is a **sign** between Me and you throughout your generations, **that you may know** that I am the Lord who **sanctifies** you.'"*

### **Ezekiel 20:12, 20**

*"Moreover I also gave them My Sabbaths, to be a **sign** between them and Me, that they might know that **I am the Lord who sanctifies** them. 20 hallow My Sabbaths, and they will be a **sign** between Me and you, **that you may know** that I am the Lord your God.'*

The Sabbath did **not confer holiness** on Israel but rather was an **external sign that they had been made holy** or set apart among all peoples for the Lord. Expressed another way, the **external observance** of the Sabbath did not **make Israel holy** but rather was to announce that God **had already made them holy** by setting them apart for Himself. The **external observance** of the Sabbath was an announcement to the world that they had **an internal holy relationship** with their Creator.

## **The Creator of the Internal Relationship**

And **who** is it that creates in us this internal relationship with the Lord? Who **writes** the law in the heart so that it is **exhibited** in the life? Who is it that makes our **hearts holy**? Of course it is the **Holy Spirit**. It was the Spirit that wrote the Ten Commandments on tables of stone and writes them on the human heart. The Ten Commandments were written by the finger of God and the finger of God is the Holy Spirit:

- **Matthew 12:28**: Jesus cast out demons by the **Spirit of God**.
- **Luke 11:20**: Jesus cast out demons by the **finger of God** and the Ten Commandments were written by the finger of God.

## **2 Thessalonians 2:13:**

*“But we are bound to give thanks to God always for you, brethren beloved by the Lord, because God from the beginning chose you for salvation through **sanctification by the Spirit** and belief in the truth.”*

The Holy Spirit’s sword is the Word of God. Observance of the Sabbath is an external sign that our hearts have been made holy by the internal work of the Holy Spirit.

**John 17:17:** We are sanctified by the truth.

*“**Sanctify** them by Your truth. Your word is truth.”*

**John 16:13:** The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of Truth.

*“However, when He, the Spirit of truth, has come, He will guide you into all truth; for He will not speak on His own authority, but whatever He hears He will speak; and He will tell you things to come.”*

## **Ezekiel 36:26, 27**

*“I will give you a **new heart** and put a **new spirit** within you; I will take the heart of stone out of your flesh and give you a heart of flesh. 27 I will put **My Spirit within you** and cause you to **walk in My statutes**, and you will **keep My judgments** and do them.”*

The wind is **invisible** to human eyes but its **effects** can be seen. So the work of the Holy Spirit on the human heart is **unseen** but the visible effect can be seen in the observance of the holy Sabbath.

Ellen White says that the Holy Spirit is the sealing agent:

*“Would you impress **the seal** to obtain a **clear impression** upon the wax, you do not dash it on by a violent action, but you place the seal carefully and firmly and press it down until the wax receives the mold. **Just so** the Lord is dealing with our souls . . . Not now and then, but constantly the **new life is implanted** by the **Holy Spirit** after Christ's likeness.” *In Heavenly Places*, p. 66*

*“As **wax** takes the **impression** of the **seal**, so the soul is to take the **impression** of the **Spirit of God** and retain the image of Christ.” *1SM*, p. 336*

## **Ellen White on the Internal and External Meaning of the Sabbath**

Contrary to what many detractors believe, Ellen White did not teach that Sabbath observance is **an end** in itself. Its observance does **not confer holiness** nor does it **earn us salvation**.

She has several statements where she explains that the Sabbath is an **outward sign** of an **inward experience** produced by the **Holy Spirit**:

*“Pointing to God as the Maker of the heavens and the earth, it [the Sabbath] distinguishes the true God from all false gods. All who keep the seventh day **signify** by this act that they are worshipers of Jehovah. Thus the Sabbath is the [visible] **sign** of man's allegiance to God as long as there are any upon the earth to serve Him.”* PP, p. 307

*“The Sabbath will be the great **test of loyalty**, for it is the point of truth especially controverted. When the final test shall be brought to bear upon men, then the line of distinction will be drawn between those who serve God and those who serve Him not. While the observance of the false sabbath in compliance with the law of the state, contrary to the fourth commandment, will be an **avowal** of allegiance [just like your vow of allegiance to the United States is exhibited by your pledge of allegiance to the flag] to a power that is in opposition to God, the keeping of the true Sabbath, in obedience to God's law, is an **evidence** of loyalty to the Creator. While one class, by accepting the **sign** of submission to earthly powers, receive the mark of the beast, the other choosing the **token** of allegiance to divine authority, receive the seal of God.”* GC, p. 605

Let's take the example of patriotism. Patriotism is an **abstract concept**; it is something you feel deep in your heart. Pledging allegiance to the **flag** while the Star Spangled Banner is being played allows you to **externalize** your patriotism. Pledging your allegiance to the flag is the **externalization** of your patriotism or the **visible sign** of your patriotism. Is it proper to pledge allegiance to the United States by using a Russian flag? Does it really make any difference? What would you think of someone who says: “I am a red blooded American, I love this country” and then pledges allegiance to the Russian flag? Does the external flag make a difference?

*“Those who would have the seal of God in their foreheads **must keep the Sabbath of the fourth commandment**. This is what **distinguishes them** from the disloyal, who have accepted a man-made institution in the place of the true Sabbath. The observance of God's rest day is the **mark of distinction** between him that serveth God and him that serveth Him not.”* Seventh-day Adventist Bible Commentary, volume 7, p. 970

*“The keeping of the Sabbath is a **sign** of loyalty to the true God.”* GC, p. 438

*“The Sabbath is a pledge given by God to man--a **sign** of the relation existing between the Creator and His created beings. By observing the memorial of the creation of the world in six days and the rest of the Creator on the seventh day, by keeping the Sabbath holy, according to His directions, the Israelites were to **declare to the world [particularly important in a polytheistic world] their loyalty** to the only true and living God, the Sovereign of the universe.”* 3SM, p. 256

*“Let us reverence God's institution, the Sabbath day; for it is the **sign** of our relationship to God, the **sign** by which we are **demonstrated** as His people.” 5MR, p. 86*

*“To the **obedient**, it is a **sign** of their loyalty to God.” 11MR, p. 18*

*“**True** observance of the Sabbath is the **sign** of loyalty to God.” 15MR, p. 32*

*“Nothing so distinguished the Jews from surrounding nations, and designated them as true worshipers of the Creator, as the institution of the Sabbath. Its observance was a continual **visible token** of their **connection with God**, and separation from other people.” 2SP, p. 193*

## **The Sabbath as a Deeper Spiritual Experience**

*“The quiet, consistent, godly life is a living epistle, known and read of all men. **Holiness is not shaped from without or put on; it radiates from within.** If goodness, purity, meekness, lowliness, and integrity **dwelt in the heart**, they will **shine forth in the character**; and such a character is **full of power**. Not the instrument, but the great Worker in whose hand the instrument is used, **receives the glory**. The heart filled with the Savior's love, daily **receives grace to impart**. The life **reveals** the redeeming power of the truth.” In Heavenly Places, p. 237*

*“Just as soon as the people of God are sealed in their foreheads--it is not any seal or mark that can be seen, but a **settling into the truth, both intellectually and spiritually**, so they cannot be moved--just as soon as **God's people are sealed** and prepared for the shaking, it will come.” Manuscript 173, 1902, pp. 1-6. (“Medical Missionary Work in Southern California,” Interview held in Los Angeles, California, September 15, 1902 found in 10 MR, p. 252*

*“The Sabbath is a **test** to this generation. In obeying the fourth commandment in **spirit and truth**, men will obey all the precepts of the Decalogue. To fulfill this commandment one must **love God supremely**, and **exercise love toward all the creatures** that he has made.” Signs of the Times, February 13, 1896*

*“The **seal of the living God** will be placed upon those only who bear a **likeness to Christ in character**.” Review and Herald, May 21, 1895*

## **Internal Sign Revealed**

*“The **sign**, or **seal**, of God is **revealed** in the observance of the seventh-day Sabbath, the Lord's memorial of creation.” 8T, p. 117*

## **Back to the Times of Jesus**

The best way to understand the relationship between the internal work of the Holy Spirit and the external observance of the Sabbath is by comparing **how Jesus and the Pharisees** kept the Sabbath.



The problem of the Pharisees: **Outward behavior** without the **internal work** of the Holy Spirit on the heart = Legalism.

### **Matthew 23:25-28**

*"Woe to you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you cleanse the **outside** of the cup and dish, but **inside** they are full of extortion and self-indulgence. 26 Blind Pharisee, first cleanse the **inside** of the cup and dish, that the **outside** of them may be clean also. 27 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like whitewashed tombs which indeed appear beautiful **outwardly**, but **inside** are full of dead men's bones and all uncleanness. 28 Even so you also **outwardly** appear righteous to men, but **inside** you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness"*

All of the healings of Jesus on Sabbath were **chronic cases**. Jesus especially chose the Sabbath to **reveal that He had the Spirit of God in His heart.**

### **Mark 3:1-7**

*"And He entered the synagogue again, and a man was there who had a withered hand. 2 So they **watched Him closely**, whether He would heal him on the Sabbath, so that they might **accuse Him**. 3 And He said to the man who had the withered hand, "**Step forward**." 4 Then He said to them, "Is it **lawful** on the Sabbath to do good or to do evil, to **save life** or to **kill**?" But they kept silent. 5 And when He had looked around at them with **anger**, being grieved by the **hardness of their hearts** [**kept** the Sabbath but had an internal heart problem], He said to the man, "Stretch out your hand." And he stretched it out, and his hand was restored as whole as the other. 6 Then the Pharisees went out and immediately plotted with the Herodians against Him, how they might **destroy Him**."*

*"Its [**observance of the Sabbath**] mere **outward observance** was a mockery." DA, p. 286*

The Pharisees kept the **Sabbath externally** but did not have the work of the **Holy Spirit upon the heart**. The one who has the Holy Spirit in the heart will **truly keep the Sabbath** as Jesus did because Jesus was sealed with the Holy Spirit and His Sabbath observance revealed it.

*"As the Jews departed from God, and failed to make the **righteousness of Christ their own by faith**, the Sabbath **lost its significance** [meaning] to them. Satan was seeking to exalt himself and to draw men away from Christ, and he worked to pervert the Sabbath, because it is the **sign** of the power of Christ. The Jewish leaders accomplished the will of Satan by surrounding God's rest day with burdensome requirements. In the days of Christ, the Sabbath had become so perverted that its observance reflected the character of selfish and arbitrary men rather than the character of the loving heavenly Father. The rabbis virtually represented God as giving laws which it was impossible for men to obey. They led the people to look upon God as a tyrant, and to think that the observance of the Sabbath, as He required it, made men **hard-hearted and cruel**. It was the work of Christ to clear away these misconceptions.*

Although the rabbis followed Him with merciless hostility, He did not even appear to conform to their requirements, but went straight forward, **keeping the Sabbath according to the law of God.**" DA, pp. 283, 284)

"No other institution which was committed to the Jews tended so fully to distinguish them from surrounding nations as did the Sabbath. God designed that its observance should **designate them** as His worshipers. It was to be a **token** of their separation from idolatry, and their connection with the true God. But in order to keep the Sabbath holy, **men must themselves be holy.** Through faith they must become partakers of the **righteousness of Christ.** When the command was given to Israel, "Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy," the Lord said also to them, "Ye shall be holy men unto Me." Ex. 20:8; 22:31. **Only thus** could the Sabbath distinguish Israel as the worshipers of God." DA, p. 284

From a sign of **Christ's righteousness** in the life to **glorify Him** it became a sign of their **own righteousness** and **glory for them.** It made them **intolerant, mean spirited, judgmental and arrogant.** The Sabbath makes **no one holy;** it is the sign of holiness or **sanctification worked out by the Holy Spirit** upon the heart.

Some enemies of the Sabbath such as **Dale Ratzlaff** say that Jesus is our Sabbath rest and that we need only rest in Him. After all, didn't Jesus say?

*"Come to Me all you who labor and are heavy laden, and **I will give you rest.**"*

But does resting in Jesus **exonerate us** from the need to observe the Sabbath as an external expression of an internal experience of rest with Jesus?

Would these same enemies of the Sabbath affirm that we **don't need to be baptized** because it is enough to accept Jesus as our Savior in our hearts? Would they say that it is not necessary to partake of the **literal bread and wine** in the Lord's Supper because we already believe internally what these symbols represent? Would anyone contend that it is unnecessary to **get married** in an official legal ceremony simply because love is **already in the heart?**

Works are the **outward manifestation** of faith and faith is the **inward motivation** for works.

### **External Sabbath Keepers**

Ellen White always kept the **proper balance** in her view of the Sabbath. She taught that an internal relationship with Jesus will lead to an external observance of the Sabbath. She also taught that an external observance of the Sabbath without the internal work of the Holy Spirit in the heart is of no value before God:

*"I was shown that **merely** observing the Sabbath and praying morning and evening are **not** positive evidences that we are Christians. These **outward forms** [external] may all be strictly observed, and yet **true godliness** [internal] be lacking." Spiritual Gifts, volume 4, p. 95*

*"An **outward observance** of the Sabbath will not save the soul. The principles interwoven with every one of the Ten Commandments are to be honored and obeyed in the individual, **practical life**. The law, God requires, shall be written on the **tablets of every soul**." Letter 191, 1899, pp. 3, 4 (Found in 6MR 396, 397)*

*"All who keep the Sabbath **in truth** bear the mark of loyalty to God. They are representatives of His kingdom. Their light is to shine forth to others in **good works**. We are not merely to observe the Sabbath as a **legal matter**; we are to be intelligent in regard to **its spiritual bearing** upon all the transactions of life. God says, "Verily, my sabbaths ye shall keep: for it is a sign between Me and you throughout your generations; that ye may know that I am the Lord that doth sanctify you." Ex. 31:13. **This is sanctification through the truth**." 3MR, p. 424*

### **Some "Sabbath keepers" Will Be Lost**

*"Not all who **profess** to keep the Sabbath will be sealed. There are many even among those who **teach the truth to others** who will not receive the seal of God in their foreheads. They had the light of truth, they knew their Master's will, they understood every point of our faith, but they had not **corresponding works**. These who were so familiar with prophecy and the treasures of divine wisdom, should have acted their faith. They should have commanded their households after them, that by a well-ordered family they might present to the world the influence of the truth upon the human heart." Christian Experience and Teaching, p. 189*

*"The law of God, which is perfect holiness, is the only true standard of character. Love is expressed in obedience, and perfect love casteth out all fear. Those who **love God, have the seal of God in their foreheads**, and work the works of God. Would that all who **profess** Christianity knew what it means to love God **practically**. . . . They would have some realization of the infinite holiness of God, knowing that He is high and lifted up, and the train of His glory fills the temple. They would have a powerful influence upon the life and character of those around them, which would work as leaven amid the mass of humanity, transforming others through the power of Jesus Christ. Connected with the Source of power, they would never lose their vital influence, but would ever increase in efficiency." Sons and Daughters of God, p. 51*

*"The quiet, consistent, godly life is a living epistle, known and read of all men. **Holiness** is not shaped from **without or put on**; it **radiates from within**. If goodness, purity, meekness, lowliness, and integrity dwell in the heart, they will **shine forth in the character**; and such a character is full of power. Not the instrument, but the great Worker in whose hand the instrument is used, receives the glory. The heart filled with the Savior's love, daily receives*

grace to impart. The life reveals the redeeming power of the truth.” In Heavenly Places, p. 237

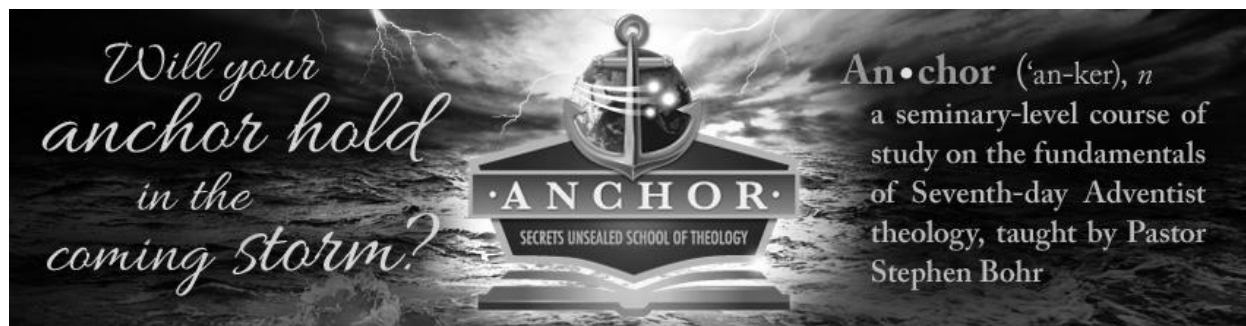
We have focused so much on what we should **not do** on the Sabbath that we have forgotten what **we should be doing**. If we love Jesus we will do what Jesus did on the Sabbath. **And what did Jesus do** on the Sabbath? Isaiah 58 has the answer.

### **The Issue: The Seal of God and the Mark of the Beast**

Am I saying that we should be **lax** in our Sabbath observance? Absolutely not! What I am saying is that our **strict observance** of the Sabbath should come from the **right motivation**. At the end two distinct days will be **external signs of allegiance**. The issue will be: Are my loyalties with God or with the beast?

I am not willing to **die for the Sabbath** but I am willing to **die for the Lord of the Sabbath**. There is no better sign of obedience in the end time than this. The two opposite days will be the **token, sign, avowal or allegiance** to one power of the other. But we will only be willing to die because we have the **inward relationship** with Jesus. The Sabbath is an **outward sign of inward obedience** just like the tree in the Garden.

*“The image of the beast will be formed before probation closes; for it is to be the great test for the people of God, by which their eternal destiny will be decided. . . This is the test that the people of God must have **before** they are sealed. All who **prove** their loyalty to God by observing His law, and refusing to accept a spurious sabbath, will rank under the banner of the Lord God Jehovah, and **will receive** the seal of the living God. Those who yield the truth of heavenly origin, and accept the Sunday sabbath, will receive the mark of the beast.”*  
Maranatha, p. 164



## “The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”

by Pastor Stephen Bohr

# LESSON #12 – CHANGING THE ORDINANCE

### Introduction

Some Old Testament scholars have referred to Isaiah 24-27 as the little Apocalypse of the Old Testament because it has many elements in common with the book of Revelation. This morning we want to take a look some elements from Isaiah 24

### Review Isaiah 24 Briefly

#### Isaiah 24:17-23

*“Fear and the pit and the snare are upon you, O inhabitant of the earth. **18** And it shall be that he who flees from the noise of the fear shall fall into the pit, and he who comes up from the midst of the pit shall be caught in the snare; for the windows from on high are open, and the foundations of the earth are shaken. **19** The earth is violently broken, the earth is split open, the earth is shaken exceedingly. **20** The earth shall reel to and fro like a drunkard, and shall totter like a hut; its transgression shall be heavy upon it, and it will fall, and not rise again. **21** It shall come to pass in that day that the LORD will punish on high the host of exalted ones, and on the earth the kings of the earth. **22** They will be gathered together, as prisoners are gathered in the pit, and will be shut up in the prison; after many days they will be punished. **23** Then the moon will be disgraced and the sun ashamed; for the LORD of hosts will reign on Mount Zion and in Jerusalem and before His elders, gloriously.”*

- A global catastrophe or cataclysm—the Second Coming of Christ
- Satan and his angels and the wicked kings of the earth punished by being thrown into prison
- Many days are equal to 1000 years
- After the 1000 years they are punished

- The **New Jerusalem** and Mt. Zion come to view
- The **sun and moon** ashamed
- God **reigns** in Zion and **Jerusalem** before **His ancients** (elders) gloriously.

This whole scene is describing events that take place at the **Second Coming** of Christ, **during and after the 1000 years**. This does **not apply to the Jews** but to the very end of time.

### **Three Reasons for Earth Defiled**

The critical question is: **Why** were the **wicked** punished and **why** were the **righteous** saved?

Let's take a look at Isaiah 24, **verses 5 and 6**:

*“The earth mourns and fades away, the world languishes and fades away; the haughty people of the earth languish. The earth is also **defiled under its inhabitants, because they have [1] transgressed the laws, [2] changed the ordinance, [3] broken the everlasting covenant.**”*

**Why** is the earth **defiled** under its inhabitants?

**Three parallel reasons** are given:

- The inhabitants have **transgressed the laws**
- **Changed the ordinance**
- **Broken the everlasting covenant**

### **Consequences of the Three Reasons**

What are the **consequences** of this? The answer is given by the word **‘therefore’** in verse 6:

*“**Therefore** the **curse** has **devoured** the earth, and those who dwell in it are **desolate, therefore** the inhabitants of the earth are **burned**, and few men are **left**.”*

Let's take a closer look at the **three reasons** for the defilement of the earth by its inhabitants. The Hebrew word **‘defiled’** means ‘to soil, corrupt, defile, pollute **morally**’ (Jeremiah 3:9; Jeremiah 23:11).

### **Transgressed the Laws**

There is no doubt about **which laws** are being spoken. The same word is used in **Nehemiah 9:13-14** where **Mt. Sinai, the law and the Sabbath** are linked. See also Exodus 24:12 where the tables of stone contain a law and commandments that God wrote! Which law did God write? Exodus 31:18 has the answer.

## Nehemiah 9:13-15

*“You **came down** also on **Mount Sinai** and **spoke with them** from heaven, and gave them just **ordinances** and **true laws [torah]**, good statutes and commandments. 14 You made known to them Your **holy Sabbath** and commanded them precepts, statutes and **laws [torah]** by the hand of Moses Your servant.”*

The Hebrew word *Torah* is also used to describe prescriptions of the **ceremonial law**. But Isaiah 24:5 **cannot be referring to this law** because it was done away with when Jesus **died on the cross**. God would **not punish** the world for breaking laws that were no longer binding! So these must be **perpetual laws**. It is possible that the word *Torah* should be singular because the **Syriac**, the **LXX (nomon)** and the **Chaldee** all have the word *Torah* in singular.

**The New Testament** supports the Old Testament meaning of Isaiah 24:5. In fact, the **LXX of Isaiah 24:5** employs the word *anomias*.

**1 John 3:4: Sin is the transgression of the law (anomias).**

*“Whoever commits sin also commits **lawlessness**, and sin is **lawlessness**.”*

**Matthew 24:12: The final generation will be a lawless one. The Greek word anomias is one who is a transgressor of the law.** Why would God **condemn** the world for lawlessness if the law were **nailed to the cross**?

*“And because **lawlessness will abound**, the love of many will grow cold.”*

**Matthew 7:23:** Those who claim the **name of Jesus** will be **lawless**, not only the **secular humanists**. They even performed **signs and wonders** but they were **transgressors** of the Law

*“And then I will declare to them, ‘I never knew you; depart from Me, you who **practice lawlessness!**’*

**Hebrews 1:8:** The end time generation will **contrast** with Jesus who **hated lawlessness** because the law was in His heart (Psalm 40:7, 8)

*“But to the Son He says: “Your throne, O God, is forever and ever; a scepter of righteousness is the scepter of Your Kingdom. You have **loved righteousness** and **hated lawlessness**; therefore God, Your God, has anointed You with the oil of gladness more than Your companions.”*

It is the same word that is used in **2 Thessalonians 2**: The mystery of lawlessness.

## **Changed the Ordinance (singular: There is a particular one)**

- The word ‘**change**’ is employed of **Laban** changing Jacob’s **salary** ten times (Genesis 31:7).
- **Joseph** changing is **garments** when he was brought forth from prison (Genesis 41:14).
- The Hebrew word is also translated ‘**abolish**’ (Isaiah 2:18) and ‘**alter**’ (Leviticus 27:10).

What about the word ‘**ordinance**’?

**Hebrew lexicographers** explain that the original root word **choq** means ‘*to scratch or engrave cutting in or engraving in stone.*’

According to the best **Hebrew scholars** the original root meaning is ‘*to engrave laws upon **slabs of stone or metal** to set them in a **public place.***’ Jack P. Lewis, *Theological Wordbook of the Old Testament*, volume 1, p. 317.

According to **Brown-Driver-Briggs Hebrew Lexicon** it means:

*“. . . to cut in, to cut upon, to engrave, to inscribe, to trace and to mark out”.*

The word appears frequently in the **company of other words** for law in the Old Testament such as “**word**”, “**testimony**”, “**law**”, “**judgment**” and “**commandment**”.

*“The word’s synonyms are mitswah, “commandment”; mishpat, “judgment”; berit, “covenant”; torah, “law”; and `edut, “testimony.” It is not easy to distinguish between these synonyms, as they are often found in conjunction with each other.” *Vine’s Expository Dictionary of Biblical Words*, Copyright (c) 1985, Thomas Nelson Publishers)*

It is used to describe **unchangeable decrees** established by God **at creation**:

- The creation decree which keeps **the sea** contained within its bounds.

### **Proverbs 8:29: The boundaries of the oceans**

*NIV: “. . . when he gave the sea its **boundary** [**choq**: decree, KJV] so the waters would not overstep his **command**, and when he **marked out** the foundations of the earth.”*

### **Job 38:8-11: Boundaries for the oceans**

*NIV: “Who **shut up** the sea behind doors when it burst forth from the womb [**at creation the world was filled with water**], when I made the clouds its garment and wrapped it in thick **darkness**, when I **fixed limits** [**choq**] for it and set its **doors and***



**bars** in place, when I said, 'This far you may come and **no farther**; here is where your proud waves halt?'

- The decree which keeps the **heavenly bodies** in their orbits.

**Psalm 148:3, 6**

*NKJV: "Praise ye him, **sun** and **moon**: praise him, all you **stars** of light . . . Praise him, you highest heavens and you waters above the skies. Let them praise the name of the LORD for he commanded and **they were created**. He **set them in place** for ever and ever; he gave a **decree** [choq] that will never pass away."*

- The decree which causes the **rain to fall** in its due season.

**Job 28:25, 26**

*NIV: "When he **established** the force of the wind and **measured out** the waters, when he made a **decree** [choq] for the rain and a **path** for the thunderstorm."*

- God's decree which guarantees the **regularity of the seasons** of harvest.

**Jeremiah 5:24**

*NIV: "They do not say to themselves, 'Let us fear the LORD our God, who gives autumn and spring rains in season, who assures us of the **regular** [choq] weeks of harvest.'*

- **I Chronicles 16:17** describes how God made an **everlasting covenant** with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, an **oath** that could **not be changed**.

*NIV: "The covenant he made with Abraham, the oath he swore to Isaac. He confirmed it to Jacob as **a decree** [choq], to Israel as an **everlasting covenant**."*

**Psalms 89:34**: Later God promised to **David**:

*NKJV: "My **covenant** I will not **break**, nor alter the word that has gone out of My lips."*

The **Ten Commandments** were engraved upon **tables of stone** to indicate their permanence and the fact that they **cannot be changed**. They were given **as decrees** of God to man.

Yet **Daniel 7:25** describes a little horn which would think it could change God's times and law. This is what **Isaiah 24:5** is describing. What change has been made in what God **originally marked off for man?**

## **Exodus 32:16-17**

"Now the **tablets** were the **work of God**, and the writing was the writing of God **engraved** on the tablets."

The first is **marriage**:

"God gave only one cause why a wife should leave her husband, or the husband leave his wife, which was adultery. Let this ground be prayerfully considered. Marriage was from the creation constituted by God **a divine ordinance**. The marriage institution was made in Eden. The Sabbath of the fourth commandment was instituted in Eden, when the foundations of the world were laid, when the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy. Then let this, **God's institution of marriage**, stand before you **as firm as the Sabbath** of the fourth commandment." *Testimonies on Sexual Behavior, Adultery and Divorce*, p. 159

"The Sabbath was hallowed at the creation. As **ordained [key word]** for man, it had its origin when "the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy" Job 38:7. *DA*, p. 281

"I was shown that the law of God would stand fast forever, and exist in the new earth to all eternity. At the creation, when the **foundations of the earth were laid**, the sons of God looked with admiration upon the work of the Creator, and all the heavenly host shouted for joy [Job 38:4-7]. It was then that the **foundation of the Sabbath was laid** . . . I saw that the Sabbath never will be done away; but that the redeemed saints and all the angelic host, will observe it in honor of the great Creator **to all eternity**." *EW*, p. 217

"Like the Sabbath, **the week** originated at creation, and it has been preserved and brought down to us through Bible history. God Himself **measured off [God not only measured the geography of the earth but also the chronology]** the first week as a **sample** for successive weeks to the close of time. Like every other, it consisted of seven literal days. Six days were employed in the work of creation; upon the seventh, God rested, and He then blessed this day and set it apart as a day of rest for man. *PP*, p. 111

"All those who hold the beginning of their confidence firm unto the end will keep the seventh-day Sabbath, which comes to us as **marked by the sun**." *3SM*, pp. 318,319

"The Creator of the heavens and the earth commanded, "The seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God; in it thou shalt not do any work." This command was **enforced by the example** of its Author, **proclaimed with his own voice**, and placed in the very **bosom** of the Decalogue. But the **papal power** has **removed [or changed]** this **divine ordinance [key word]** and **substituted** a day that God has not sanctified, and upon which he did not rest, the festival so long adored by heathens as the "venerable day of the sun." *ST*, September 14, 1882

"The prophet thus points out **the ordinance [key word]** which has been forsaken: "Thou shalt raise up the foundations of many generations; and thou shalt be called, the repairer of the

*breach, the restorer of paths to dwell in. If thou turn away thy foot from the Sabbath, from doing thy pleasure on My holy day; and call the Sabbath a delight, the holy of the Lord, honorable; and shalt honor Him, not doing thine own ways, nor finding thine own pleasure, nor speaking thine own words: then shalt thou delight thyself in the Lord." Verses 12-14. This prophecy also applies in our time. The breach was made in the law of God when the **Sabbath was changed [notice the terminology]** by the **Roman power**. But the time has come for that divine institution to be **restored**. The breach is to be repaired and the foundation of many generations to be raised up. GC, pp. 452, 453*

**Evangelicals and Catholics** today are **fighting tooth and nail** to maintain marriage as God ordained it **at creation** and this is good. There is an **outcry** against the attempt of **liberals to change** the marriage institution from **heterosexual to homosexual**.

But Evangelicals and Catholics **must be consistent**. They cannot **restore one** creation ordinance and **trample on the other**. They cannot say that man **cannot** change the marriage institution but that he **can** change the Sabbath! This kind of **double talk** must stop. I **challenge** Evangelicals and Catholics to **restore both** creation institutions as God originally made them. After all, both of these institutions **are symbols** of the **relationship** between God and His people! If marriage is still a symbol of that relationship, why not the Sabbath?

### **Broken the Everlasting Covenant**

There is only **one everlasting covenant** between the Father and the Son. The **agreement** was that if man sinned, God would **provide a substitute** to restore man to his original condition.

The covenant had **two aspects**: [1] Covenant law and [2] covenant sacrifice. The violation of **covenant law** made the **covenant sacrifice** necessary.

Notice **Deuteronomy 4:12-13** for covenant law.

*"And the LORD spoke to you out of the midst of the fire. You heard the sound of the words, but saw no form; you only heard a voice. 13 So He declared to you His **covenant** which He commanded you to perform, that is, the **Ten Commandments**; and He **wrote** them on two **tablets of stone**."*

Notice how **Hebrews 8:10-12** puts the **two ideas together**: **Forgiveness** and **obedience**. Explain how sadness over what sin did with Jesus, cleanses our garments in His blood.

*"For this is the **covenant** that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the LORD: I will put My laws **in their mind** and write them **on their hearts**; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people. 11 None of them shall teach his neighbor, and none his brother, saying, 'Know the LORD,' for all shall know Me, from the least of them to the greatest*

of them. 12 For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their **sins** and their **lawless deeds** I will **remember no more.**"

**Isaiah 26:12:** God works in us

"LORD, You will establish peace for us, for **You have also done all our works in us.**"

**Philippians 2:12-13**

"Therefore, my beloved, as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling; 13 for it is **God who works in you** both to will and to do for **His good pleasure.**"

**Ephesians 2:8-10**

"For **by grace** you have been saved through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God, 9 **not of works**, lest anyone should boast. 10 For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus [redemption] **for good works**, which **God prepared** beforehand that we should **walk in them.**"

**Hebrews 13:20, 21:**

"Now may the God of peace who brought up our Lord Jesus from the dead, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the **blood of the everlasting covenant**, 21 make you complete in every **good work to do His will**, working in you what is **well pleasing** in His sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory forever and ever. Amen."

## **How Can This Be Done?**

**Isaiah 26:1-3** and emphasize the word '**stayed**' or fastened to:

"In that day this song will be sung in the land of Judah: "We have a **strong city**; God will appoint salvation for walls and bulwarks. Open **the gates** that the righteous nation that **keeps the truth** may enter in. You will keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is **stayed** on You, because he **trusts** in You."

Our mind must be stayed on Him. We do not become like Jesus by merely **glimpsing** or **glancing** at Him once in a while but by **lingering** and **dwelling** on Him.

**2 Corinthians 3:18**

"But we all, with unveiled face, beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are being transformed into the same image from glory to glory, just as by the Spirit of the Lord."

"By beholding Christ, by talking of Him, by beholding the loveliness of His character we become changed. Changed from glory to glory. And what is glory? Character—and he

*becomes changed from character to character. Thus we see that there is a work of purification that goes on by beholding Jesus.” Sons and Daughters of God, p. 337*

**Revelation 22:14, 15:**

*“Blessed are those who **do His commandments** [Revelation 12:17; 14:12], that they may have the right to the tree of life, and may enter through the gates into the city. **15** But outside are dogs and sorcerers and sexually immoral and murderers and idolaters, and whoever loves and practices a lie.”*





## **“The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”**

**by Pastor Stephen Bohr**

# **LESSON #13 – A DAY TO REMEMBER: THE SABBATH FROM EDEN TO EDEN**

### **Introduction**

During the first six days of creation week God made everything perfect, beautiful and harmonious. At the conclusion of the sixth day God looked upon everything that He had made and it was very good.

### **Genesis 1:31-2:1**

*“Then God saw everything that He had made, and indeed it was very good. So the evening and the morning were the sixth day. Thus the heavens and the earth, and all the host of them, were finished.”*

### **Literal Days**

According to the Biblical story, creation took place in six literal days and had no defects with no taint of sin or death. The Bible clearly indicates that creation did not take place over millions of years but rather in six literal 24-hour days, as we know them today. There are several reasons we believe this:

Jesus and the New Testament writers unanimously testify that creation took place in space and time just as it is described in Genesis (for example, **Matthew 19:1-6**). To question a literal creation account is to impugn the integrity of the New Testament writers, including Jesus Himself!

**Psalm 33** describes the immediacy and rapidity of the events of creation week:

*“By the word of the Lord the heavens were made and all the host of them by the breath of His mouth. For He spoke and it was done; He commanded, and it stood fast.”*

**Genesis 1:4, 5:** describes the daily cycle of day and night, or **evening and morning**. It would not make any sense to say that each day had an 'evening and morning' if the days of creation were **millions of years** in length.

The expression "**and it was so**" that is used several times in Genesis 1 indicates **immediacy** and **rapidity (1:7, 9, 11, 15, 24)**.

It is a fact that in the Old Testament, **every single time** that the word "day" appears in the **singular** with an **ordinal number** (day one, day two, etc.) it means a 24-hour day. There are **no exceptions** to this rule.

**Exodus 20:11:** The Sabbath commandment offers **definitive proof** that the days of creation week were **literal, consecutive and contiguous**. Think about it. God instructed man to **work six** days and **rest on the seventh** just **like He had** during creation week. How could God tell man to work six days as He had worked and to rest on the seventh as He had if the **days were millions of years in length?**

Clearly, the Bible portrays a creation scenario and **not an evolutionary one**. In Scripture, God is portrayed as **a person who is outside** of and **distinct** from creation. Nature **is not** God (pantheism), God is not **in** nature (panentheism); nature **belongs** to God. In other words, we are to care for nature, not because **nature is God** but because it **is God's**.

## **Days Numbered / Evening and Morning**

Man has changed three things that God established during creation week. First, he has given the days of the week **planetary names** rather than numbers. Second, he has changed the **time to begin the day** from sundown to midnight. Third, he has changed the **commemorative day** of creation from Sabbath to Sunday.

**Genesis 1:31-2:1:** The Genesis record indicates that each day of creation week was **numbered** rather than named and that the days were marked by the expression **evening** (sunset) and **morning** (sunrise):

*"Then God saw everything that He had made, and indeed it was very good. So the **evening and the morning** were the **sixth** day."*

**Note:** At creation the days **were numbered** sequentially, not named. The practice of numbering the days is not totally unknown today because in **Brazil**, for example, **only two days are named**—Sabbath and Sunday while the rest of the other days are numbered with reference to the Sabbath.

**Genesis 1:5:** The day begins **at evening**

*"God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. So the **evening and the morning** were the first day."*



**Mark 1:32:** The Sabbath begins and ends when **the sun sets**.

*“At **evening**, when the **sun had set**, they brought to Him all who were sick and those who were demon-possessed.”*

## **God is the Subject of Creation**

God was the **central actor** or **subject** of the first **six days** of creation week. At the beginning of the creation story we are told in no uncertain terms: “in the beginning **God created** the heavens and the earth” (Genesis 1:1) and at the conclusion we are told that “God saw **everything** that **He had made**, and indeed it was very good” (Genesis 1:31)

Some **30 times** in chapters 1 and 2 God is described as the sole **active agent** with expressions such as: ‘God **created**,’ ‘God **said**,’ ‘God **saw**,’ ‘God **called**,’ ‘God **made**,’ ‘God **set them**,’ and ‘God **blessed**.’

## **God the Subject of the Seventh Day**

God is also at the center of the seventh day of creation week. It was God who **rested**, **blessed** and **sanctified** the seventh day:

### **Genesis 2:2, 3**

*“And on the **seventh day** God ended **His** work that **He** had done, and **He rested** on the **seventh day** from all **His** work that **He** had done. Then **God** blessed the **seventh day** and sanctified it, **because** in it **He rested** from all **His** work which **God** had created and made.”*

- Repeatedly we are told in these verses that it was **God who worked six** days and **God who rested on the seventh**. There is no record of man **creating** during the first six days or **ceasing** on the seventh day. Of course it would be impossible for man to cease from an activity that he did not perform!
- The word ‘rested’ (shabbat) should be translated ‘ceased’.
- God **created** the first week of seven days and then gave it to man, therefore the first week of history is what I call **‘God’s Week’**. **He** worked six and **He** ceased on the seventh!
- The **seventh day** of the week was **blessed** and set apart by God as **holy**. All days are **not** holy or blessed. **Three times** in the text we are told that God ceased, blessed and made holy **THE SEVENTH DAY**. It is obvious that God did not bless the day and make it holy for Himself because God is the source of all blessing and holiness!
- It was **God’s ceasing** that made the **Sabbath holy**—because God **ceased** on the seventh day, the day is holy.
- Why did God work six, cease on the seventh, and make it holy when He could have created everything instantly? **The Fourth Commandment** of God’s holy law has the answer:

**"Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is the Sabbath of the LORD your God. In it you shall do no work: you, nor your son, nor your daughter, nor your male servant, nor your female servant, nor your cattle, nor your stranger who is within your gates. For **[because]** in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, and He rested the seventh day, therefore the LORD blessed the Sabbath day and hallowed it."**

God worked six days and ceased on the seventh to give man **an example** of working six and ceasing on the seventh as a perpetual reminder of the Creator.

- God did not command man to cease on the first Sabbath because it was not made holy until God has ceased the entire day. The twenty-four hours of the Sabbath became holy when God had ceased 24 hours. The **Fourth Commandment** of God's holy law applies to man beginning with the **second week**. The first week God worked six and ceased on the seventh and then He told man to follow His example in working six and ceasing on the seventh.

## **The Second Sabbath**

- It was **God who ceased on** that **first** Sabbath.
- Adam and Eve could not keep that first Sabbath holy because it was not made holy by God until it ended. The Sabbath, like the rest of the week, were **made for man**. Certainly an **eternal God** did not need a seven-day week for Himself!!
- Adam and Eve could not follow God's **example** until He had **first given it**.

*"God made man in His own image and then **gave him an example** of observing the seventh day, which He sanctified and made holy." Lift Him Up, p. 38*

*"**After resting** upon the seventh day, God sanctified it, or **set it apart**, as a day of rest for man. **Following the example** of the Creator, **man was to rest** upon this sacred day, that as he should look upon the heavens and the earth, he might reflect upon God's great work of creation; and that as he should behold the evidences of God's wisdom and goodness, his heart might be filled with love and reverence for his Maker." PP, p. 47*

Like a **parent showing** his child how to build something with Lego's. God did **not tell them** to keep it until he **showed them** how to keep it.

- The **fourth commandment** applies to Adam and Eve beginning with the second week of human history. They had to **work six** first and then rest on the seventh in order to keep the **fourth commandment**.

## Details about the Sabbath

- There was **no Jew** when God established the Sabbath. Adam and Eve were the **father and mother** of the **entire human race**, not just the Jews.
- There was **no sin** when God established the Sabbath so it is part of God's **original plan** for the **entire human race**. In its initial function it was **not a shadow** of redemption because there was no need of redemption when it was established.
- According to the Genesis account, God finished his work **twice** (Genesis 2:1, 2). You might ask: How can something be finished **twice**? Let's Imagine an **artist** who finishes a work of art and then places his **signature** upon it. During the first six days God painted a living work of art and the Sabbath was **God's signature** upon His work of creation. The Sabbath thus identified **who painted the work of art** and to whom **it belonged**.
- God gave **man dominion** at the end of the sixth day but the seventh day indicates that Man is **accountable to God**. After the sixth day God was telling man: "You are the Lord of what I created" (Genesis 1:26, 27) but the seventh day God was saying to man: "I am your Lord because I created you."
- God created everyday **common things** the first six days but the seventh day He made **holy time**. God did not make a holy shrine **in space** but rather in time. Man did not have to go to the shrine to worship, the **shrine came to him!!**
- A week of seven days appears to be totally arbitrary. Other measurements of time have an **astronomical explanation**. The **day** is the amount of time it takes for the earth to make one complete turn on its axis. The **month** is the period between one new moon and another. The **year** is the amount of time it takes for our earth to make one complete revolution around the sun. But the **week of seven days** is arbitrary. The week could have contained **six days** or five or eight or nine. The reason for a seven-day week is that God created the week of seven days!!

## God Delighted

God did not rest because **He was tired**. **Speaking things** into existence certainly does not cause exhaustion:

### **Isaiah 40:28:**

*"Have you not known? Have you not heard? The everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth, neither **faints** nor is **weary**."*

The Bible tells us that God **saw everything** that He had made and it was very good! In **Exodus 31:17** we are told that He was refreshed, a word that means that He **took a breath**! He **delighted** in the works of His hands. The seventh day was a day on which God and all the heavenly universe delighted in the work of His hands (**Job 38:4-7**). This is the reason Isaiah 58 refers to the Sabbath as a delight.

## **Patriarchs and Prophets, p. 47:**

*“After resting upon the seventh day, God **sanctified it**, or set it **apart, as a day of rest for man**. Following **the example** of the Creator, man was to rest upon this sacred day, that **[the purpose]** as he should look upon the heavens and the earth, he might **reflect** upon God's great work of creation; and that as he should **behold** the evidences of God's wisdom and goodness, his heart might be filled with **love and reverence** for his Maker.”*

## **God Owns Creation and the Sabbath**

**Psalm 24:1, 2:** Creation is **God's property** because He **made it in six days**. Thus, the **environment belongs** to Him and must be **cared for** because it is not ours!

*“The **earth is the LORD's**, and all its fullness, the **world and those who dwell therein** for **[because]** He has founded it upon the seas, and established it upon the waters.”*

But God created the Sabbath as well, so the Sabbath **must also be His** because He made it. If the **world and everything** in it is His because He made it then the **Sabbath is also His** because He made it. This is the reason why the Bible always refers to the Sabbath as the **Lord's Day**. It belongs to Him because He made it. In fact, we shall find in **Isaiah 58** that He explicitly calls it **'MY HOLY DAY'**.

## **The Sabbath and Redemption: The Manna**

### **Exodus 16:4:**

*“Then the LORD said to Moses, “Behold, I will rain bread from heaven for you. And the people shall go out and gather a certain quota every day, that I may **test them**, whether they will **walk in My law or not.**”*

- Israel was in the **wilderness** on the move so God gave them Manna from heaven to feed them
- For **40 years** God performed this miracle teaching them that the **seventh day** is the Sabbath.
- God gave the Sabbath **to test** Israel to see if they would obey His law.
- But God also gave the Manna to teach Israel that they should live spiritually by every words that proceeds out of the mouth of God (Deuteronomy 8:3).

**Exodus 16:19, 20:** When the Manna was saved from **one day to the next** (except on the Sabbath), the Manna bred **worms and stank**. It is a **decomposing body** that breeds worms and stinks. This was **not normal bread**. God wanted to teach a very important lesson.

*“And Moses said, **“Let no one leave** any of it till morning.” **20** Notwithstanding, they did not heed Moses but some of them left part of it until morning, and it **bred worms and stank**. And Moses was angry with them.”*

**Exodus 16:23, 24:** When Israel picked up a **double portion** of Manna on Friday for the Sabbath it **did not breed worms or stink**—it was as fresh as it had been of Friday!

*“Then he said to them, “This is what the LORD has said: ‘Tomorrow is a **Sabbath rest**, a **holy Sabbath to the LORD**. Bake what you will bake today, and boil what you will boil; and lay up for yourselves all that remains, to be kept until morning.’” **24** So they laid it up till morning, as Moses commanded; and it **did not stink**, nor were there **any worms in it**.”*

**John 6:51:** The manna symbolized the **flesh of Jesus**.

*“I am the **living bread** which came down from heaven. If anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever; and the bread that I shall give is **My flesh**, which I shall give for the life of the world.”*

**Acts 2:25-27, 31:** The body of Jesus **saw no corruption** in the tomb on the Sabbath.

*“For David says concerning Him: ‘I foresaw the LORD always before my face, for He is at my right hand, that I may not be shaken. **26** Therefore my heart rejoiced, and my tongue was glad; moreover **my flesh also will rest** in hope, for You will not leave my soul in **Hades**, nor will You allow Your Holy One **to see corruption**.”*

## **The Ten Commandments**

**Exodus 20:8-11:**

*“**Remember** the Sabbath day, to **keep it holy**. **Six days** you shall labor and do all your work, but **the seventh day** is the **Sabbath of the LORD your God**. In it you shall do no work: you, nor your son, nor your daughter, nor your male servant, nor your female servant, nor your cattle, nor your stranger who is within your gates. For **[because]** in six days the **LORD made** the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, and **He rested** the **seventh day**. **Therefore** the LORD blessed the Sabbath day and **hallowed it**.”*

- The Ten Commandments is the **only thing** in the Bible that God wrote with **His own finger**. The rest of the Bible was given to a prophet and then the prophet wrote it.
- God worked six, **rested** the seventh and then **blessed** the day and made it **holy**.
- After God created the week, he commanded Adam and Eve to **follow His example** in working six and resting on the seventh to remember that He was the Creator.

## The Purpose of Memorials

- The word 'remember' in the Fourth Commandment indicates that the Sabbath was meant to be a memorial. Memorials are built so that people **do not forget** something very important that occurred in the past. Examples of memorials are the **Oklahoma City Memorial** that commemorates the bombing of the Federal Building on April 19, 1995, and the **World Trade Center Memorial** that commemorates an event that occurred on September 11, 2001. The **Jefferson Memorial** was built to remind us of **the principles** upon which our nation was established—**civil and religious** liberty.
- The Sabbath is a memorial in time so **it comes to us**. If the memorial of creation had been established in a certain place, then those who lived close by would have an advantage. But with a memorial in time, **no one has a monopoly**. And the memorial will last as long **as time shall last!!**
- The Sabbath cannot be changed from the seventh to another day just like you cannot change the date of your birthday because it is anchored in time.
- Would it make sense to change the celebration of Independence Day from July 4 to July 5? We cannot change the **day of the week that commemorates creation** because it is rooted in history.
- There are **three elements** that a seal must have in order to be authentic. These three elements are contained in the ancient seals discovered in the Canaanite city of **Ugarit**:

**Name** of the authority

**Office** or function of the authority

**Territory** over which he has authority

## Exodus 31:12-18: The Sabbath a Sign

### Exodus 31:14-18:

*"You shall keep **the Sabbath**, therefore, for it is holy to you. Everyone who profanes it shall surely be **put to death**; for whoever does any work on it, that person shall be cut off from among his people. Work shall be done for six days, but **the seventh** is the **Sabbath of rest, holy to the LORD**. Whoever does any work on the **Sabbath Day**, he shall surely be **put to death**. Therefore the children of Israel shall keep **the Sabbath**, to observe **the Sabbath** throughout their generations as a perpetual covenant. It is **a sign** between Me and the children of Israel forever; for **[because]** in **six days** the LORD made the heavens and the earth, and on the **seventh day He rested** and was refreshed." And when He had made an end of speaking with him on Mount Sinai, He gave Moses two tablets of the Testimony, tablets of stone, **written with the finger of God.**"*

- Someone might object: *“The text clearly states that the Sabbath is a sign between God and the children of Israel and therefore it is not a sign for us”*. Let’s reflect on that objection. God gave **all** of the **Ten Commandments to Israel** on Mt. Sinai. Does this mean that the Ten Commandments were given **only for Israel**? To answer this question with a yes would be absurd!
- Idolatry, disrespect of parents, adultery, killing, stealing, lying and coveting are **wrong in every culture** and apply to the **entire human race** at **all times**. We cannot pick and choose which commandments apply to us and which don’t.
- We can approach this from another angle. The Sabbath **is a sign** of the relationship between God and Israel. And who is Israel today? Those who have joined Christ in baptism are God’s true Israel so if we are Israel we must keep the Sabbath!

**Galatians 3:28, 29:**

*“There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one in Christ Jesus. And **if you are Christ’s**, then you are **Abraham’s seed**, and heirs according to the promise.”*

**Isaiah the Gospel Prophet**

**Isaiah 58:12-14:** God calls the Sabbath **HIS** holy day and commands us to keep it. Contrary to what many Christians believe, the Sabbath is a **delight** and **honorable**:

*“If you turn away your foot from the Sabbath, from doing **your pleasure** on **My holy day**, and call the Sabbath **a delight**, the **holy day of the LORD honorable**, and shall honor Him, not doing your **own ways**, nor finding your **own pleasure**, nor speaking your **own words**, **14** Then you shall **delight yourself** in the LORD; and I will cause you to ride on the high hills of the earth, and feed you with the heritage of Jacob your father. The mouth of the LORD has spoken.”*

**Isaiah 56:6-7:** The Sabbath was meant for **all people from all nations**:

*“Also the sons of the foreigner who join themselves to the LORD, to serve Him, and to love the name of the LORD, to be His servants—everyone who keeps **from defiling the Sabbath**, and holds fast My covenant—even them I will bring to My holy mountain, and make them joyful in My house of prayer. Their burnt offerings and their sacrifices will be accepted on My altar; for My house shall be called a house of prayer **for all nations**.”*

**Isaiah 58:6, 7**

**Immediately before** the passage that we just read we are told that the Sabbath is linked with the idea of helping those who are **less fortunate** than us.

*"Is this not the fast that I have chosen: to **loose the bonds** of wickedness, to undo the **heavy burdens**, to let the **oppressed** go free, and that you **break every yoke**? Is it not to **share your bread** with the hungry, and that you bring to your house **the poor** who are cast out; when you see **the naked**, that you cover him, and not hide yourself from your own flesh?"*

**Exodus 23:12:** The Sabbath was given as a day to give rest even to the **domestic beasts** and the **less fortunate** of society. For Israel life was not to be an **endless cycle of work**. They needed a day to connect with their **spiritual roots**, help the **weak** and to **enjoy family**. The day was not Sunday but rather the **seventh day Sabbath!!**

*"Six days you shall do your work, and on the seventh day **you** shall rest, that your **ox** and your **donkey** may rest, and the son of your female **servant** and the **stranger** may be refreshed."*

## **Destruction of Jerusalem**

**Jeremiah 17:24-27:** God promised that Jerusalem would **stand forever** if Israel kept the Sabbath. But He also told them that the city would be destroyed if they desecrated the Sabbath:

*"And it shall be, if you **heed Me carefully**," says the LORD, "to bring no burden through the gates of this city on **the Sabbath day**, but **hallow the Sabbath day**, to do **no work** in it, **then** shall enter the gates of this city kings and princes sitting on the throne of David, riding in chariots and on horses, they and their princes, accompanied by the men of Judah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and **this city shall remain forever**. And they shall come from the cities of Judah and from the places around Jerusalem, from the land of Benjamin and from the lowland, from the mountains and from the South, bringing burnt offerings and sacrifices, grain offerings and incense, bringing sacrifices of praise to the house of the LORD. "But **if you will not heed Me to hallow the Sabbath day**, such as not carrying a burden when entering the gates of Jerusalem on **the Sabbath day**, then I will **kindle a fire** in its gates, and it shall devour the palaces of Jerusalem, and it shall not be quenched.""*

## **A Sign or Seal**

**Ezekiel 20:12, 20:** Ezekiel indicates that Israel fell into **idolatry** because she failed to keep the Sabbath. The Sabbath is **a sign** that the Lord is our **creator God** and that we are **His people**.

*"Moreover I also gave them **My Sabbaths**, to be **a sign** between them and Me, that they might know that I am the LORD who **sanctifies them** . . . hallow **My Sabbaths**, and they will be **a sign** between Me and you, **that** you may know that **I am the LORD your God.**"*

## **After the Babylonian Captivity**

**Nehemiah 13:15-22:** The **gates of Jerusalem** were to be closed before sundown on Friday:



*"In those days I saw people in Judah treading wine presses on **the Sabbath**, and bringing in sheaves, and loading donkeys with wine, grapes, figs, and all kinds of burdens, which they brought into Jerusalem on **the Sabbath day**. And **I warned them about the day** on which they were selling provisions. Men of Tyre dwelt there also, who brought in fish and all kinds of goods, and sold them on **the Sabbath** to the children of Judah, and in Jerusalem. Then **I contended with the nobles** of Judah, and said to them, "What **evil thing** is this that you do, by which you **profane the Sabbath day**? **Did not your fathers** do thus, and did not our God bring all this disaster on us and on this city? Yet you bring **added wrath** on Israel by **profaning the Sabbath**." So it was, at the gates of Jerusalem, as it **began to be dark before** the Sabbath, that I commanded the gates to be shut, and charged that they must **not be opened till after the Sabbath**. Then I posted some of my servants at the gates, so that no burdens would be brought in on **the Sabbath day**. Now the merchants and sellers of all kinds of wares lodged outside Jerusalem once or twice. Then I warned them, and said to them, "Why do you spend the night around the wall? If you do so again, I will lay hands on you!" From that time on they came no more on **the Sabbath**.*

## **The Little Horn**

**Daniel 7:25**: This verse describes the attempt by the little horn to change God's Law:

*"He shall speak pompous words against the Most High, shall persecute the saints of the Most High, and shall intend to **change times and law**. Then the saints shall be given into his hand for a time and times and half a time."*

## **Jesus and the Sabbath**

**Mark 2:27, 28**: Jesus taught that the Sabbath was made **for man** just **like everything else** that God made. If Jesus is Lord of the Sabbath, then the Sabbath must be the **Lord's Day**. Some Christians believe that the expression 'Lord's Day' in Revelation 1:10 refers to Sunday. It is true that Sunday was called the Lord's Day in the post-apostolic church but the Bible, **23 times**, refers to the Sabbath as the Lord's Day. It is important to remember that the Sabbath was '**made**'—it is part of God's creation (the word 'made' is the same as used in John 1:3). It is rather obvious that Jesus could not give the Sabbath to man until He made it!!

*"And He said to them, "The Sabbath was made **for man**, and not man for the Sabbath, **therefore** the Son of Man is also **Lord of the Sabbath**."*

**Luke 4:16**: It was **the custom** of Jesus to go to church on the Sabbath:

*"So He came to Nazareth, where He had been brought up. And as **His custom was**, He went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up to read."*

## **Matthew 12:11, 12:**

*“Then He said to them, “What man is there among you who has one sheep, and if it falls into a pit on the Sabbath, will not lay hold of it and lift it out? Of how much more value then is **a man than a sheep**? Therefore, **it is lawful** to do good on the Sabbath.”*

Jesus **did not break** the Sabbath that **He created**. If He had broken the Sabbath, he would have **been a sinner** because the Bible says that ‘sin is the transgression of the law’. It was **lawful for Jesus to do good** on the Sabbath. Jesus performed **seven miracles** on the Sabbath and in each case it was to **alleviate the suffering** of the less fortunate. The Sabbath is the day to help the **poor**, the **sick** and the **hungry**:

- A man born **blind**
- A **paralytic** for 38 years
- A woman who had a hemorrhage of blood for **18 years**
- A **demon-possessed** man
- Peter’s **mother in law** who had a fever
- A man with a **withered hand**
- A man with the **dropsy**

The **Pharisees** had added all sorts of **human regulations and traditions** to the Sabbath that made it a **yoke of bondage**. Jesus came to **restore the Sabbath** to its **original meaning**. Some Christian scholars state that Jesus **broke the Sabbath**. In this they become accusers along with the Pharisees. Jesus came **to correct** the **distortion** of the Sabbath like He did the distortion of marriage (Matthew 19:4-6).

## **The Rest of Redemption**

**John 17:4:** In His **intercessory prayer** on the way to Gethsemane Jesus told His Father that He had finished His work:

*“I have glorified You on the earth. I **have finished** the work which You have given Me to do.”*

**John 19:30:** At **three o’clock** on Friday, the **sixth day** of the week, Jesus **finished His work** of redemption and said: *“it is finished”*. It is no coincidence that Jesus also finished His work of **creation** on the sixth day of the week.

*“So when Jesus had received the sour wine, He said, **“It is finished!”** And bowing His head, He gave up His spirit.”*

**Luke 23:54-56:** The **sequence** of days: Jesus died on **Friday**, rested in the tomb on **Sabbath** and resurrected on the **first day** of the week. On the Sabbath, the **women rested** outside the tomb:

*“That day was **the Preparation**, and the **Sabbath drew near**. And the women who had come with Him from Galilee followed after, and they observed the tomb and how His body was laid.*

Then they returned and prepared spices and fragrant oils. And **they rested on the Sabbath according to the commandment.**

**There is not a jot or tittle of evidence** that the Sabbath had been changed. Jesus gave **no inkling** of a change during His ministry. Many European nations have attempted to change the **enumeration** of the days on the calendar. They begin the week on **Monday** as the **first** day and **Sunday** as the **seventh**. This makes it appear like **Sunday** is the seventh day of rest. This is clearly out of harmony with the Bible. The Bible clearly states that Jesus resurrected on the **first day** and it was not **Monday** but rather **Sunday**.

**Acts 2:25, 26**: Not only did the women rest the Sabbath outside the tomb but the body of Jesus **rested in the tomb**. While the women rested outside the tomb, Jesus rested inside:

*“For David says concerning Him: ‘I foresaw the LORD always before my face, for He is at my right hand, that I may not be shaken. Therefore my heart rejoiced, and my tongue was glad; moreover **my flesh** also will **rest** in hope.’”*

**2 Corinthians 5:17**: **Spiritually speaking**, redemption is a **new creation**. When a person repents and receives Christ as Savior, His life and His death stand in the place of the sinner.

It is not possible to **separate redemption from creation**. Jesus **created us and rested** on the Sabbath. Jesus **redeemed us and rested** in the tomb on the Sabbath! Thus the Sabbath is a sign of creation and re-creation:

*“Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a **new creation**; old things have passed away; behold, **all things have become new**.”*

## **The Year 70 AD**

**Matthew 24:20**: There is clear evidence that **forty years after** the resurrection, the Sabbath was still the day of rest. When the **Romans surrounded** the city of Jerusalem the first time and then retreated without apparent reason, the followers of Jesus were to see this as a sign that it was time to flee from the city. Jesus told His disciples:

*“... pray that your flight may not be in winter or **on the Sabbath**.”*

## **The Jerusalem Council**

At the **Jerusalem Council** 49 AD there was a huge debate over whether circumcision was abolished or not but **no debate on the issue of the Sabbath**. The Jewish Christians would have **shouted bloody murder** if there had been any talk about abolishing the Sabbath as Jewish.

## **Practice of the Apostle Paul**

**Acts 13:14**: Paul and his **companions** entered the synagogue in **Antioch in Pisidia**:

*"But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the **synagogue on the Sabbath day** and sat down. And after the reading of the Law and the Prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent to them, saying, "Men and brethren, if you have any word of exhortation for the people, say on."*

**Acts 13:42, 44: Paul and Barnabas** preached the gospel of Jesus in the synagogue in **Antioch of Pisidia** the **next Sabbath** and almost **the entire city** came out to hear them:

*"So when the Jews went out of the synagogue, the Gentiles begged that these words might be preached to them **the next Sabbath** . . . On the **next Sabbath almost the whole city** came together to hear the word of God."*

**Acts 16:13:** Women gathered for worship **next to a riverside** on the Sabbath and **Paul preached a message** to them:

*"And **on the Sabbath day** we went out of the city to the **riverside**, where prayer was **customarily made**; and we sat down and spoke to the women who met there."*

**Acts 17:2:** Paul preached Christ in the synagogue in **Thessalonica** for **three Sabbaths** is a row:

*"Then Paul, as his **custom** was, went in to them, and for **three Sabbaths** reasoned with them from the Scriptures, explaining and demonstrating that the **Christ had to suffer and rise again from the dead**, and saying, "This Jesus whom I preach to you is the Christ."*

**Acts 18:1-4:** Paul stayed in **Corinth** for **three years** and **every Sabbath** he persuaded both **Jews and Greeks:**

*"After these things Paul departed from Athens and went to **Corinth**. And he found a certain Jew named Aquila, born in Pontus, who had recently come from Italy with his wife Priscilla (because Claudius had commanded all the Jews to depart from Rome); and he came to them. So, because he was of the same trade, he stayed with them and worked; for by occupation they were tentmakers. And he reasoned in the synagogue **every Sabbath**, and persuaded both **Jews and Greeks.**"*

## **The End Time**

**Revelation 14:6, 7:** The last message of God to the world has **three parts**. The first angel calls upon us to **worship the creator** and the **sign is the Sabbath** according to the Fourth Commandment.

*"Then I saw another angel flying in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach to those who dwell on the earth—to **every nation, tribe, tongue, and people**--saying with a loud voice, "Fear God and give glory to Him, for the hour of His judgment has come; and **worship Him** who **made heaven and earth, the sea and springs of water.**"*

**Psalm 95:1-6:** Why is God **worthy of our worship**? Simply because He is our **Creator** and the **sign of remembrance** is the seventh day Sabbath:

*“Oh come, let us sing to the LORD! Let us shout joyfully to the Rock of our salvation. Let us come before His presence with thanksgiving; let us shout joyfully to Him with psalms. For the LORD is **the great God**, and **the great King** above all gods. In His hand are the deep places of the earth; the heights of the hills **are His** also. The **sea is His**, for [because] **He made it**; and His hands formed the **dry land**. Oh come, let us **worship and bow down**; let us kneel before the LORD our **Maker**.”*

## **The Sign or Seal**

**Romans 4:11:** The words ‘sign’ and ‘seal’ are used **interchangeably**:

*“And he received the **sign** of circumcision, a **seal** of the righteousness of the faith which he had while still uncircumcised . . .”*

The **sign of seal** that shows that we worship the Creator is the Sabbath. A seal, in order to be **authentic** must have **three elements**:

- The **name**
- The **office**
- The **territory**

**Revelation 14:9-11:** Warning **to not worship** the beast and his followers will have a **mark** of allegiance to him.

If the **Sabbath is the sign** that we **worship the Creator** God, then **another day** must be **the sign** that we worship the beast.

The genuine comes before the counterfeit. If we can discover what the genuine day of worship is, then we will be able to detect the counterfeit.

The mark of God’s name is the Sabbath so the mark of the beast’s name must be a rival day:

*“Then a third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, “If anyone **worships** the beast and his image, and receives **his mark** on his forehead or on his hand, he himself shall also drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out full strength into the cup of His indignation. He shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment ascends forever and ever; and they have no rest day or night, who **worship** the beast and his image, and whoever receives the **mark** of his name.”*

**Revelation 7:1-3:** God’s people will **have a seal**.

*"After these things I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth, **holding the four winds** of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, on the sea, or on any tree. Then I saw another angel ascending from the east, having **the seal of the living God**. And he cried with a loud voice to the four angels to whom it was granted to harm the earth and the sea, saying, "**Do not harm** the earth, the sea, or the trees till we have **sealed the servants of our God on their foreheads**."*

**Isaiah 66:22, 23: Plagues devastate** earth. We will be eyewitnesses.

*"For as the new heavens and the new earth which I will make shall remain before Me," says the LORD, "So shall your descendants and your name remain. And it shall come to pass that from one **New Moon** to another, and from one **Sabbath to another**, all flesh shall **come to worship** before Me," says the LORD.*

**Revelation 21:23: Flashlight** illustration

*"The **city** had **no need** of the sun or of the moon to shine in it, for the glory of God illuminated it. The Lamb is its light."*

**Revelation 22:2**

*"In the middle of its street, and on either side of the river, was the tree of life, which bore twelve fruits, each tree yielding its fruit **every month**. The leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations."*

## **Questions That Come Up**

**Is the Sabbath today the same Sabbath of creation?**

- There is **no evidence** that there has been an **interruption** in the sequence of days of the week.
- The Sabbath is of critical importance to the **Jews** and they would **never have allowed** the sequence of days to be lost.
- If **Sunday today is the same Sunday**, then the Sabbath must be the **same Sabbath!**
- How do we know that the Sabbath of Christ's day is the **same Sabbath as at creation**? Simply because **Jesus was the Creator** and He would not have **kept the wrong day!** If the Sabbath of the days of Christ was not the same day as at creation then Jesus, the creator of the Sabbath, would have kept the wrong day!

**Does specific day make any difference? Isn't it enough to just dedicate one day in seven to the Lord?**

- The Fourth Commandment does not say **one day in seven** or **every seventh** day but rather **THE** seventh day.

- No other day can be a memorial of creation because God did not establish any other day as the memorial. We can't celebrate the fourth of July on the fifth. If your birthday is on the June 26 you should celebrate it on the 26<sup>th</sup>. Dates are rooted in history.
- God is a **particular God** and He expects us to obey in the specific way that He has commanded.
- In the Garden God did not say: **One of the trees**. He pointed out the **specific tree**.
- **Nadab and Abihu** offered an alternate fire and they were consumed.
- There was a specific formula for the sanctuary incense. God expected the priests to follow the formula as He had specified.

### Doesn't the Bible call Sunday the Lord's Day?

- It is true that the early **church fathers** referred to Sunday as the Lord's Day but **never in the Bible** do we find any evidence to this effect.
- **23 times** in the Bible the Sabbath is called the **Sabbath of the LORD** and God even calls it 'MY HOLY DAY'!
- **Jesus** clearly stated that He is the **Lord of the Sabbath**.
- The word '**Sunday**' does **not appear** even once in the Bible.

### Isn't it rather legalistic to keep the Sabbath and isn't it a yoke of bondage?

- **Not if you love Jesus**. If we love the Lord, it will be a delight to suspend all our activities to dedicate the day to strengthen our relationship with Him.
- Imagine a husband telling his wife that she should not be so legalistic when it comes to being faithful to her!
- Isn't it rather legalistic to say that I should not steal or bear false witness or worship idols, or kill, or covet?

### Doesn't the Bible say that no one can judge me if I don't keep the Sabbath?

Here is the text that is used to try and **prove this point**:

*"So let no one judge you in **food or in drink**, or regarding a **festival** or a **new moon** or **sabbaths**, which are a **shadow** of things to come, but the **substance** is of Christ."*

- **Hebrews 9:9, 10:** The **food and drinks** have nothing to do with the food we put on our table. These verses clearly identify the food and drinks as the **meal offering** and the **drink offering** that were part of the ceremonial law in the sanctuary.
- There were also seven **yearly festivals** that pointed forward to events in the life of Jesus: Passover, Unleavened Bread, First-fruits, Pentecost, Trumpets, Day of Atonement, and Feast of Tabernacles.
- And linked with the seven feasts were seven **yearly** ceremonial **Sabbaths**.
- These things were **shadows** of things to come but the **reality is Christ**. The weekly Sabbath is **not a shadow** of **things to come**—it is a memorial of a **past event**—creation!

### Isn't it true that all days belong to God?

- All the money we have belongs to God but **10% is his in a special sense, it is holy**—it is called the tithe.
- It is true that all days belong to God because He made them but the seventh day belongs to Him in a **special way** because it is holy.
- God did not say that **all days are alike**. He **clearly stated** that the Sabbath is holy!

### Didn't Jesus change the day of worship from Sabbath to Sunday?

- **Why** would He want to change a day that He blessed and made holy?
- The Sabbath points to creation and creation is **rooted in the seventh day**.
- There is not a shadow of a hint in the New Testament that He ever changed the day. It was kept by Jesus, by the women who followed Him, by Peter and by Paul.
- Yes, Jesus resurrected on Sunday but there is **no command to keep** it by going **to church** on it and there is no statement that **it is holy**.
- No place are we told that we are to celebrate the resurrection on a **weekly basis**.
- The Bible describes the **Ten Commandments** as God's **covenant** and **Psalm 89:34 explains**: *"My covenant I will **not break, nor alter** the word that has gone out of My lips."*

### Isn't the Sabbath a Jewish?

- It is an **insult** to the Lord to refer to the Sabbath as the Jewish Sabbath when He calls it 'My holy day'.
- The Sabbath does not belong to the Jews because they **did not create it**. The Sabbath belongs to the Lord because He made it.



- **Not even once** in all the Bible is the Sabbath called the Jewish Sabbath.

## Shouldn't we keep Sunday in honor of the resurrection of Jesus?

- **Six texts** simply state that Jesus resurrected on the first day of the week and one of the six states that they were gathered, not to celebrate the resurrection, but rather for fear of the Jews:

### **Mark 16:9:**

*"Now when **He rose** early on the first day of the week, He appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom He had cast seven demons."*

### **Matthew 28:1:**

*"Now **after the Sabbath**, as the first day of the week began to dawn, Mary Magdalene and the other Mary came to see the tomb."*

### **John 20:1:**

*"Now the first day of the week Mary Magdalene went to the tomb early, while it was **still dark**, and saw that the stone had been taken away from the tomb."*

### **Mark 16:1, 2:**

*"Now when the **Sabbath was past**, Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of James, and Salome bought spices, that they might come and anoint Him. Very early in the morning, on the first day of the week, they came to the tomb when the sun had risen."*

### **Luke 24:1, 2:**

*"Now on the **first day of the week**, very early in the morning, they, and certain other women with them, came to the tomb bringing the spices which they had prepared. **2** But they found the stone rolled away from the catacomb."*

### **John 20:19:**

*"Then, the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled, **for fear of the Jews**, Jesus came and stood in the midst, and said to them, "Peace be with you."*

This text clearly gives us **the reason** why they were gathered there. It was not to celebrate the resurrection or the Eucharist but rather '*for **fear of the Jews***'.

At this point in time they **did not even believe** that Jesus had resurrected, so how could they be gathered to celebrate the resurrection? (Luke 24:9-11; Mark 16, 10-13)

The Bible tells us what Jesus ate and it was not Communion bread and wine. He ate some **honey** and a portion of a **broiled fish** (Luke 24:36-43).

Communion announces the **death of Jesus**, not His resurrection (Matthew 26:28; 1Corinthians 11:26).

- There is **no divine command** to keep Sunday in honor of the resurrection. Nowhere are we told that it is **holy** or that we should go **to church** on it.
- The sign of Christ's death and death and resurrection is not Sunday but **baptism**.
- Jesus could not have celebrated communion with the disciples on resurrection Sunday because He had said that he would **not drink the cup** with His disciples until they met in the kingdom (Matthew 26:29).

### **How can so many people who keep Sunday be wrong?**

The simple fact is that the **majority throughout history has been wrong**. Think of Noah, Elijah, even Jesus. Even his own disciples forsook Him. He stated that He tread the **winepress alone** and there was no one with Him.

### **Isn't it enough just to be sincere in keeping Sunday because a person doesn't know any better?**

There are many sincere and loving Christians who in the course of Christian history have kept Sunday as the day of rest. They **loved the Lord** and **served Him the best** that they knew how according to the knowledge they had.

**James 4:17**: *"Therefore, to him who **knows** to do good and does not do it, **to him** it is sin."*

### **Isn't it enough to just love Jesus?**

- It is definitely enough to love Jesus if you define love the way **the Bible does**.
- **John 14:15**: *"If you **love Me**, keep My commandments."*
- **1 John 5:3** *"For **this is the love of God**, that we keep His commandments and His commandments are not burdensome."*
- **1 John 2:3, 4**: *"Now by this we know that we know Him, if we **keep His commandments**. He who says, "I know Him," and does not keep His commandments, **is a liar**, and the truth is not in him."*

## Isn't it enough to have the Holy Spirit in the life?

### Acts 5:32

*"And we are His witnesses to these things, and so also is the Holy Spirit whom God has given to those who obey Him."*

### John 14:15, 16

*"If you love Me, keep My commandments. <sup>16</sup> And I will pray the Father, and He will give you another Helper, that He may abide with you forever."*

## Isn't it true that man came into existence by evolution and therefore we can't trust the Bible story?

- All of the New Testament writers took creation story literally. So at issue is the integrity and credibility of Jesus and all the New Testament writers.
- Matthew 19:4-6: Adam and Eve. The apostle Paul referred to the first Adam who introduced the sin problem and the last who resolves the problem (1 Corinthians 15:45).
- I John 3:12 (also Jesus in Matthew 23:35): Cain and Abel
- Hebrews 11:5: Enoch
- Matthew 24:37-39: The flood
- Luke 17:28-32: Sodom and Gomorrah
- Peter even wrote that some in the last days would mock the idea of the second coming by stating that they would deny creation and the flood.

## Didn't the apostle Paul instruct us to bring our offering to church on Sunday?

I Corinthians 16:1: Here is the text:

*"Now concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given orders to the churches of Galatia, so you must do also. On the first day of the week [regularly or systematically] let each one [individually. personally] of you lay something aside, storing up [privately at home] as he may prosper [according to God's blessings], that there be no collections when I come. <sup>3</sup> And when I come, whomever you approve by your letters I will send to bear your gift to Jerusalem [not a local church offering].*

## Didn't the apostle Paul meet with the church on the first day of the week?

When did this meeting take place? What was the purpose of the meeting?

- It was actually the dark portion of the first day—a **Saturday evening** meeting.
- It was **not a regular meeting** but rather a **farewell** for the Apostle Paul. Because he was going to **leave the next morning**. The meeting in **Quibdo** (Acts 20:13, 14, 37, 38).
- If Sunday was the day of worship, **why didn't Paul stay** and go to Church on Sunday morning? Why did he travel 35 miles to the port city of Assos to board a ship?
- He **broke bread** (used of a common meal) and ate, not the members.

Sunday is the exact opposite as the Sabbath. It stands at the **other extreme** of the calendar. The genuine always comes before the counterfeit.



## **“The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”**

**by Pastor Stephen Bohr**

# **LESSON #14 – REFLECTIONS ON DANIEL 11**

### **Introduction**

There is a passage in the book of Daniel which has always been a subject of lively discussion among Adventist theologians, Daniel 11:40-45. Until recently most agreed that the king of the north represents the papacy and the king of the south represents atheism or secularism. But now a new view has appeared on the horizon that sees **radical Islam** as playing a significant role in the fulfillment of this prophecy. Those who have embraced this view have concluded that the events of 9/11 and the war against Al-Qaeda are so significant that they must be contemplated somewhere in Bible prophecy. This has sparked a new interest in the study of the fifth and sixth trumpets in conjunction with Daniel 11:40-45.

Usually Ellen White has provided valuable guidance in the interpretation of difficult prophetic passages. But unlike other passages in the book of Daniel Ellen White seems to be silent on the meaning of most of chapter eleven, particularly verses 40-45. Nowhere, to my knowledge does she ever **quote** these verses or even **echo** the terminology contained in them.

This seeming silence on verses 40-45 has led some to conclude that Ellen White had nothing to say about them. We therefore ask: Did Ellen White have anything to say about the meaning of these verses or does her apparent silence indicate that their meaning would remain a mystery until long after her death? In this article we will seek to answer this question.

### **Ellen White’s Use of Daniel 11**

To my knowledge there are only **three** primary Ellen G. White references to Daniel 11 (except for the one in *A Word to the Little Flock Scattered Abroad* to which we will make reference later).

One of these references is **indirect**, one is **general** in nature and another is quite **specific**. Only in the specific reference does Ellen White actually quote any verses from the chapter

(verses 30-36). Unfortunately, as stated before, she never quotes nor does she even allude to the language of verses 40-45 so it would seem well-nigh impossible to know if or how Ellen White understood them.

### **Ellen White's Three Quotations**

The first quotation is **indirect** because she does not specifically mention Daniel 11 but only **alludes** to it (all bold type is mine unless specified). In **1896** she wrote:

*"The light that Daniel received from God was given especially for these last days. The visions he saw by the banks of the **Ulai [Daniel 8:2]** and the **Hiddekel [Daniel 10:4 and chapter 11]**, the great rivers of Shinar, are now in **process** of fulfillment, and all the events foretold **will soon come to pass.**" *Testimonies to Ministers*, p. 112*

The second quotation is **general** and was written in **1909**:

*"The world is stirred with the spirit of war. The prophecy of the **eleventh chapter** of Daniel has **nearly reached its complete fulfillment.** Soon the scenes of trouble spoken of in the prophecies will take place." *9T*, p. 14*

The **third quotation** was written in **1904** and is the **only one** where Ellen White actually quotes verses from Daniel 11:

*"We have no time to lose. Troublous times are before us. The world is stirred with the spirit of war. Soon the scenes of trouble spoken of in the prophecies will take place. The prophecy in the **eleventh of Daniel** has **nearly reached its complete fulfillment.** **Much of the history** that has taken place in fulfillment of this prophecy **will be repeated.** In the thirtieth verse a power is spoken of that "shall be grieved, and return, and have indignation against the holy covenant: so shall he do; he shall even return, and have intelligence with them that forsake the holy covenant." [Verses 31-36, quoted] **Scenes similar to those** described in **these words** will take place." *Manuscript Releases*, volume 13, p. 394 (*Letter 103*, 1904)*

### **Analysis of Ellen White's References to Daniel 11**

We must now **examine** more closely the three quotations above:

The quotation from *Testimonies to Ministers*, p. 112 (1896) provides **two key items** of information:

- First, the prophecies of Daniel **eight and eleven** run concurrently and are **parallel**. The prophecy by the Ulai was the one given in chapter 8 (Daniel 8:2) and the one by the Hiddekel was the one given in chapters 10 and 11 (Daniel 10:4).
- Second, both of these prophecies were in the **process of fulfillment** when Ellen White wrote in 1896. Unfortunately, Ellen White does not specify **how much** of the chapter had already been fulfilled when she wrote the statement. She merely stated that these prophecies were in the **process** of fulfillment.

The quotation in Testimonies for the Church, volume 9, p. 14, adds some very valuable information: When Ellen White wrote this testimony in **1909** she stated that the prophecy of Daniel 11 had **nearly reached its complete fulfillment**. Thus we can be certain that in 1909 the process of fulfillment of Daniel 11 was in the **last few verses** of the chapter.

The quotation from Manuscript Releases, volume 13, p. 394 (1904) contains some significant information that is not found in the other two.

In this statement Ellen White explains that **much of the history** that had taken place in the fulfillment of this chapter **will be repeated**. The critical question then is this: Which history was she referring to? Fortunately, we don't have to guess because she immediately quotes verses 30-36. Then, right after she quotes these verses, she again repeats the thought that much of the history that has occurred in fulfillment of their fulfillment will be repeated when she wrote:

***“Scenes similar to those described in these words will take place.”***

Clearly Ellen White understood that **verses 30-36** (as well as verses 37-39 which she does not quote) had already been fulfilled **in the past** when she wrote. If verses 30-39 had already been fulfilled in the past, then the similar future scenes must be described in verses 40-45. Thus verses 30-39 describe events in the **past** while verses 40-45 describe events in the **future**.

It is important to realize that Ellen White is **not** saying that these verses have a **dual fulfillment**, one past and the other future. What she **is** saying is that much of **the history** that fulfilled these verses will be repeated. Stated another way, it is **not the prophecy** in verses 30-39 that will be fulfilled once again but rather much of **the history** that fulfilled the prophecy in the past will be repeated in **similar fashion** in the future.

### **A Repetition of History**

At this juncture in our study we must ask: Why will the historical scenes of the past repeat once again in **similar fashion**? The answer is not hard to find. The arrogant and persecuting power that is described in verses 30-39 is the **Roman Catholic papacy** as it behaved during its 1260-year career. During this period, it joined church and state, **ran loose** and used **the sword** of the state to persecute dissenters.

As is well known, at the end of the 1260 years the papacy received a deadly wound when the state turned against it at the conclusion of the **French Revolution**. But this was not the end of the papacy's career. Prophecy predicts that after a period of convalescence the deadly wound **will be healed** (Revelation 13:3) when the United States will return the sword of civil power into the papacy's hand. Then the papacy will behave once more **as it did in the past**. Thus the history of the past papal oppression will be repeated in the future because the papacy will rise once again to power.

**In summary:** Ellen White believed that Daniel 11:30-36 **was fulfilled** in the past (and as we shall see, also verses 37-39 though she does not specifically quote them). She also

believed that much of **the history** described in these verses would be repeated in **similar** fashion. If verses 30-39 had already been fulfilled in the past in Ellen White's day, then the future repetition of the history of these verses must be found in verses 40-45.

Notice the following three quotations on the **past** and **future** role of the papacy:

*"The influence of Rome in the countries that once acknowledged her dominion is still far from being destroyed. And prophecy foretells a **restoration of her power**. "I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast" Verse 3. GC, p. 579*

*"When our nation [**the United States**] shall so abjure the principles of its government as to enact a Sunday law, Protestantism will in this act join hands with popery; it will be nothing else that **giving life [which means that it must have been dead]** to the tyranny which has long been eagerly watching its opportunity to **spring again [which means that the active despotism that existed before died only to live again]** into **active [which means that for a period the tyranny was inactive]** despotism." 5T, p. 712*

*"When the land which the Lord provided as an asylum for his people, that they might worship him according to the dictates of their own consciences, the land over which for long years the shield of Omnipotence has been spread, the land which God has favored by making it the depository of the pure religion of Christ—when that land shall, through its legislators, abjure the principles of Protestantism, and give countenance to Romish apostasy in tampering with God's law—it is then that the final work of the man of sin will be revealed. Protestants will throw their whole influence and strength on the side of the Papacy; by a national act enforcing the false Sabbath, they will **give life and vigor [which means that the corrupt faith of Rome must have been dead for a period]** to the corrupt faith of Rome, **reviving [which means that her tyranny and oppression of conscience were dead for a while]** her tyranny and oppression of conscience. Then it will be time for God to work in mighty power for the vindication of his truth." ST June 12, 1893*

In the light of the foregoing analysis we can safely conclude that the repetition of the scenes of the past career of the papacy which are described in **verses 30-39** will be repeated once again in similar fashion in **verses 40-45**.

### **Ellen White's View of Daniel 12:1, 2**

But, does Ellen White have anything to say about the events that are described in verses 40-45? Where would we **even begin to look** if she never quotes these verses or even alludes to their terminology? I believe the key that will unlock her understanding of these verses is found in her understanding of Daniel 12:1. Though Ellen White never quoted or even alluded to the language of Daniel 11:40-45 in the book The Great Controversy, she did quote the very next verse, **Daniel 12:1**. I believe that the place where she quotes Daniel 12:1 contains the key that unlocks her understanding of the immediately preceding verses.



## Working Deductively

Because Ellen White did not quote or even allude to the terminology of verses 40-45 in The Great Controversy, we cannot work from verse 40 forwards because we don't know where her comments on verse 40 are found. What we must do then is work **deductively** from Daniel 12:1, 2 backwards.

Let's take a look at Daniel 12:1, 2:

*"At that time [1] **Michael shall stand up**, the great prince who stands watch over the sons of your people; and there shall be a [2] **time of trouble**, such as never was since there was a nation, even to that time. And at that time your people [3] **shall be delivered**, everyone who is found written in the book. And many of those who sleep in the dust of the earth [4] **shall awake**, some to everlasting life, some to shame and everlasting contempt."*

The bold type indicates that there are **four sequential events** in Daniel 12:1, 2:

- The standing up of Michael
- The time of trouble
- The deliverance of God's people
- The special resurrection

Now let's notice how Ellen G. White developed these four events in The Great Controversy but in **reverse order** beginning with the fourth item on the list, the special resurrection and working backwards:

- **GC, p. 637:** Ellen White quotes Daniel 12:2 to describe the **fourth** item on the list, the **special resurrection**.

*"Graves are opened, and "many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth. . . awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt." Daniel 12:2."*

- **GC, p. 635:** Ellen White describes the **third** item on the list. The chapter's title is '**God's People Delivered**'. At the beginning of the chapter she states:

*"The people of God—some in prison cells, some hidden in solitary retreats in the forests and the mountains—still plead for divine protection, while in every quarter companies of armed men, urged on by hosts of evil angels are preparing for the work of death. It is now, in the hour of utmost extremity that the God of Israel will interpose for the **deliverance of His chosen**."*

It will be noticed also that Ellen White concluded the previous chapter ('The Time of Trouble') with a clear allusion to Daniel 12:1 where we are told that those who are written in the book will be delivered:

*"Glorious will be the **deliverance** of those who have patiently waited for His coming and whose **names are written** in the book of life." GC, p. 634*

- **GC, p. 616:** Ellen White describes the **second** item on the list by explaining the time of trouble through which God's people will go:

*“The people of God will then be plunged into those scenes of affliction and distress described by the prophet as the **time of Jacob's trouble**.”*

- **GC, p. 613:** Ellen White begins the chapter on the ‘Time of Trouble’ by quoting Daniel 12:1 and then amplifies the meaning of the standing up of Michael, the **first** item on the list.

*“Then Jesus **ceases His intercession** in the sanctuary above. . . When He leaves the sanctuary, darkness covers the inhabitants of the earth. In that fearful time the righteous must live in the sight of a holy God **without an intercessor**.”*

### **Summary of Ellen White’s Comments on Daniel 12:1, 2**

- **GC, p. 613:** The standing up of Michael
- **GC, p. 616:** The time of trouble
- **GC, p. 635:** God’s people delivered
- **GC, p. 637:** The special resurrection

It will be noticed that Ellen White in The Great Controversy develops the events of Daniel 12:1, 2 in the **precise order** in which they appear in Daniel 12:1, 2.

### **Importance of the Expression ‘at that time’**

It is extremely important to realize that Daniel 12:1, 2 cannot be understood independently of its context. Daniel 12:1, 2 is actually **a continuation** of the flow of events that transpired in the previous verses. This is clearly indicated by the fact that Daniel 12:1 begins with a time reference, “*at that time*” which links Daniel 12:1 with what occurred previously in verses 40-45.

Now the key question is: Where would we expect to find Ellen White’s comments about what takes place before Daniel 12:1? The answer is unmistakable: It must be found in the pages that immediately precede the chapter on the standing up of Michael and the time of trouble.

### **The Literary Structure of Daniel 11:44b-45 and 12:1**

Now let’s carefully consider the literary structure of Daniel 11:44b-45 as it relates to Daniel 12:1 in order to ascertain to what event the expression “at that time” refers to. A comparison of these two passages reveals that they are describing the **same events** in the **same order** but with a **different terminology** and **emphasis**:

#### **Daniel 11:44b-45:**

- A. The King of the North **goes out to destroy** and annihilate many (11:44b).
- B. The King of the North **sets up the tents** of his palace in a strategic place between the sea and the glorious holy mountain to give a final death blow (11:45a).
- C. The King of the North **comes to his end** with none to help him (11:45b).

## Daniel 12:1

- A. Michael stands up **to defend** His people (parallel to 11:44b).
- B. A **time of trouble** such as never was ensues (parallel to 11:45a).
- C. God's people are **delivered** (parallel to 11:45b).

Daniel 11:44b-45 and 12:1 are precisely parallel but they portray a different emphasis. Whereas Daniel 11:44b-45 highlights the activities of the **king of the north** and its destiny for oppressing God's people, Daniel 12:1 focuses on the **jeopardy of God's people** at the hand of the king of the north and their deliverance by God.

This is the way that it works out: When the king of the north goes "*out with great fury to destroy and annihilate many*" (11:44b), Michael will stand up to protect and defend them (12:1a). When the king of the north places the tents of his palace in a strategic location to deliver the final death blow against God's people (11:45a; vividly described in GC 635), they will go through a terrible time of trouble such as never was (12:1b), but the king of the north will "come to his end with none to help him" (11:45b) when God intervenes to deliver His people who are written in the book (12:1c). The expression "*at that time*" thus links Daniel 11:44b-45 with Daniel 12:1. The **actions** of the king of the north against the remnant are answered by counteractions by God in defense of His faithful remnant.

## What About Daniel 11:44A?

But what about Daniel 11:44a? Here we are told that '*tidings from the **north and from the east** will trouble the king of the north*'. This phrase explains **the reason** why the king of the north will go out and attempt to destroy and annihilate many:

*"But news from the east and the north shall trouble [alarm or disturb] him [the king of the north]; therefore, he [the king of the north] shall go out with great fury to destroy and annihilate many."*

What is this news from the east and the north that so infuriates the king of the north that he seeks to destroy 'many'? We must go to the book of Revelation for the answer because we are told that the book of Daniel is unsealed by the book of Revelation:

*"The books of Daniel and the Revelation are **one**. One is a **prophecy**, the other a **revelation**; one a book **sealed**, the other a book **opened**." Christ Triumphant, p. 344*

**Revelation 7:2** describes an angel who ascends **from the east** having **the seal** of the living God. This angel comes to seal the faithful of God upon their foreheads. In contrast, the land beast will impose the mark of the beast on pain of death to those who refuse it (Revelation 13:15, 16)

**Revelation 18:1-5** portrays a powerful angel who descends **from heaven** (the north according to Isaiah 14:13) and gives a clarion call for God's people to reject the mark of the beast and to **get out of Babylon** before she is destroyed.

Thus the tidings from the north and from the east are identified by the book of Revelation as the message of the **sealing** and the **call to come out** of Babylon.

Ellen White concurs with this Biblical view. The chapter immediately preceding the one on the standing up of Michael and the time of trouble is titled “*The Final Warning*.” Ellen White begins this chapter in GC 603 by quoting Revelation 18:1, 2, 4 and 5. In perfect accordance with Revelation 7:2 she then described on **page 605** the issue that will divide the world:

*“While the observance of the false sabbath in compliance with the law of the state, contrary to the fourth commandment, will be an avowal of allegiance to a power that is in opposition to God, the keeping of the true Sabbath, in obedience to God’s law, is an evidence of loyalty to the Creator. While one class, by accepting the sign of submission to earthly powers, receive the **mark of the beast**, the other choosing the token of allegiance to divine authority, receive the **seal of God**.”* GC, p. 605

In the same chapter Ellen White goes on to describe the anger that this message will cause in the religious world:

*“The power attending the message will only **madden** those who oppose it.”* GC, p. 607

And in the next chapter Ellen White flashes back to events that occurred before the time of trouble:

*“The power attending the last warning **has enraged the wicked**; their **anger** is kindled against all who have **received the message**, and Satan will excite to **still greater** intensity the **spirit of hatred** and persecution.”* GC, pp. 614, 615

Thus the news from the north is identified in Revelation 18 as the Loud Cry of the angel who descends from heaven (the north) and the news from the east is the message concerning the seal of God in Revelation 7. This message from the north and the east that is described in Daniel 11:44a fills the king of the north with fury to the point of wanting to destroy God’s remnant as described in Daniel 11:44b.

### **The Beginning Point of Daniel 11:40-45**

We have focused in this article primarily on the events from Daniel 11:44 to Daniel 12:2. But if we continued moving backwards in The Great Controversy (before page 603) we would find, in **reverse order**, that Ellen White expounds upon each phrase of Daniel 11:40-45 ending with the chapter on “*The Bible and the French Revolution*” where the deadly wound of Daniel 11:40a is described (GC 265-288). Though she does not employ the terminology of verses 40-45 the sequence of events clearly reveals that she is discussing these verses.

In Daniel 11:40a we are told that the king of the south would **push** at the king of the north at the **time of the end**. Ellen White clearly identifies the beginning of the time of the end as the year 1798 when France dealt the papacy its deadly wound (GC, p. 356). The word ‘push’ does not adequately portray the idea of the text. The historical event that is described by this word was not a friendly nudge or shove. The NIV translates: “*will engage him in battle*’

while the ESV translates “*shall attack him*’. That is, in the year 1798 some power described as the king of the south would attack the king of the north.

There is a **wide consensus** among students of prophecy in the Seventh-day Adventist Church that the king of the north represents **the papacy** and until recently there was a broad consensus that the king of the south represents **secularism** as it was manifested in the French Revolution. But times have changed and some Adventist preachers, as they look at current events, are reinterpreting the king of the south as a symbol of **militant Islam**.

Literally and geographically speaking the king of the south was **Egypt** because Egypt was the kingdom that was south of Israel (see Daniel 11:5, 8). But in the end time we are not dealing with literal geographical locations but rather with global systems.

Who is the king of the south, symbolically speaking? I believe that **Revelation 11** (which is linked with the fifth and sixth trumpets) clearly identifies **France** as ‘spiritual Egypt’ (verse 8). While **Babylon** represents a global apostate religious system, Egypt symbolizes the secular powers of the world that threw off the yoke of papal Rome beginning with France. **Revelation 17** explains that for a very short while at the end of time the secular powers of the world will once again join together in **unholy wedlock** with the harlot but in the end the kings of the earth will hate the Babylonian harlot and destroy her.

Babylon was the **literal and geographical** king of the north in Biblical times because it was the enemy that invaded literal Israel from the literal north. But today the king of the north is a **global spiritual system** of counterfeit religion—the Roman Catholic papacy. The papacy is certainly not literally north of literal Israel (it is actually west). We must therefore interpret the king of the north and the king of the south symbolically.

And what was the **main characteristic** of France in 1798? The spirit of the French Revolution was atheism but actually Daniel 11:40a involves far **more than atheism**. The genius of the Revolution culminating with the captivity of Pope Pius VI was to secularize the government and separate it from its adulterous relationship with the church. In the course of several decades after the French Revolution country after country in Europe established **secular governments** separate from the dominance of the papacy.

In **1862** Cardinal Henry Edward Manning complained about how the secular governments of Europe had forsaken the papacy:

*“See this Catholic Church, this Church of God, feeble and weak, rejected even by the **very nations called Catholic**. There is Catholic **France**, and Catholic **Germany**, and Catholic **Italy** giving up this exploded figment of the **temporal power** of the Vicar of Jesus Christ.’ And so, because the Church **seems weak**, and the Vicar of the Son of God is renewing the Passion of his Master upon earth, therefore we are scandalized, therefore we **turn our faces from him**.”*  
(*The Temporal Power of the Vicar of Jesus Christ*, pp. 140, 141)

Ellen White has stated why the papacy has not been able to ascend to power once more:

*“Let the restraints now imposed by secular governments be removed and Rome be **reinstated** in her former power, and there would speedily be a **revival** of her tyranny and persecution.”*  
*GC, p. 564*

### **Beginning and Ending Point**

So we have the following beginning and ending points for Daniel 11:40-45 in The Great Controversy:

#### **Daniel 11:40a; GC, pp. 265-288:**

France ‘attacks’ the papacy and inflicts the deadly wound. The illicit love relationship between church and state is severed and thus the papacy is restrained.

#### **Daniel 11:40b-11:43; GC, pp. 289-605:**

These verses describe events that transpire between the infliction of the deadly wound in 1798 and the Loud Cry.

**Daniel 11:44a; GC, p. 605:** The Loud Cry and sealing message trouble and enrage the papacy.

#### **Daniel 11:44b; 12:1a; GC, p. 607 (flashback to the past in GC pp. 614, 615):**

The rage of the wicked increases as the Loud Cry and sealing message is proclaimed. Michael stands up, closing the door of probation and defending His people from the rage of the wicked

#### **Daniel 11:45a; 12:1b; GC, p. 613ff:**

A universal death decree against God’s people is signed as the king of the north sets up his tents in a strategic position to deliver the final death blow against God’s people. This causes a time of trouble for God’s people such as never has been.

#### **Daniel 11:45b; 121c; GC, p. 635ff:**

The king of the north comes to his end with none to help him because his supporters forsake him and as a result God’s people are delivered.

#### **Daniel 12:2; GC, p. 637:**

The special resurrection of those who died in the faith of the third angel’s message.

Thus the two reference points for the beginning and ending of Daniel 11:40-45 are the French Revolution at the beginning as described in GC, pp. 265-288 and the deliverance of God’s people and the special resurrection in GC, pp. 635, 637. In between these two reference points we have the events that Ellen White describes in GC, pp. 289-604. A careful study of these pages will reveal that Ellen White comments on all the details in verses 40b-43 without actually using the language.

## Ellen G. White and Islam

It is simply amazing how Ellen White vividly describes the events of Daniel 11:40-45 without ever quoting the verses or alluding to the language. Why didn't she just come out and quote the verses and then comment on them? There is a clear historical reason.

The original view of the pioneers was that the king of the north represents the Roman Catholic papacy. This is the clear view expressed in the pamphlet [A Word to the Little Flock Scattered Abroad](#), **coauthored** by James and Ellen White in 1847. But in the early **1870's** **Uriah Smith** (who was the highly respected editor of the [Advent Review and Sabbath Herald](#)) changed the view of the pioneers by reinterpreting the king of the north as **Turkey**. You see, in Smith's day Turkey was prominent in the news so he changed the traditional view to fit current events.

James White was flabbergasted by Smith's new view and accused him of removing one of the landmarks of the Advent Movement. Things started getting nasty and members began taking sides. In this context, Ellen White instructed her husband to desist of his criticism. She knew that an understanding of Daniel 11:40-45 was not a matter of life and death at that time. Her main concern at the moment was to preserve the unity of the church. If Ellen White had quoted the verses of Daniel 11:40-45 and offered a view contradictory to Uriah Smith's, she would have been accused of nepotism so she commented on these verses without quoting them or alluding to the language knowing full well that someday someone would discover her view of the matter.

Significantly, in the eschatological portion of [The Great Controversy](#), Ellen White does not mention Islam, even once, as playing any role in the fulfillment of Bible prophecy in the end time. It appears that Ellen White **saw no prophetic significance** to the rise of radical Islam. The same is true of the great chain prophecies of Scripture. There is **no reference to Islam** in the prophecies of Daniel 2, Daniel 7, Daniel 8 and 9, Revelation 12, Revelation 13, Matthew 24 and Revelation 17 neither is there any reference to Islam in the series of the churches and the seals

Ellen White's silence on the role of Islam in Bible prophecy has puzzled some Seventh-day Adventist scholars who have concluded that Ellen White simply did not have all the light on end time events. At least one of these scholars has even reached the conclusion that Ellen White was wrong in her interpretation of the little horn as a symbol of the papacy and has reinterpreted it as Islam.

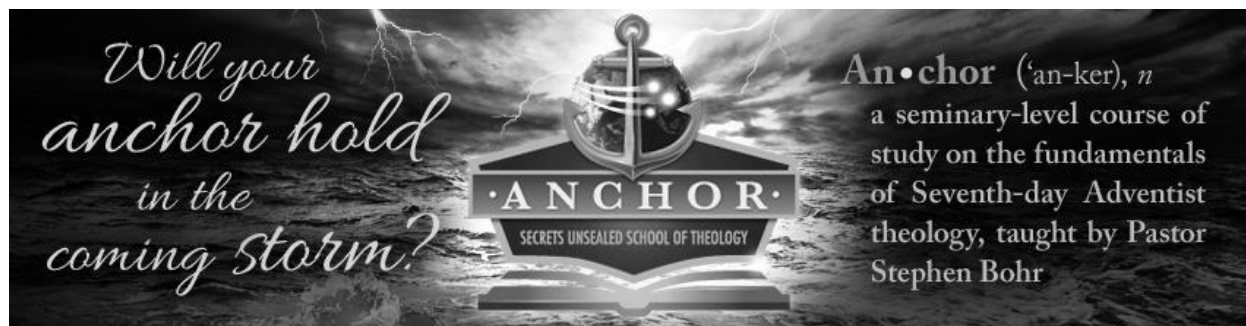
Don't get me wrong. I am not saying that Islam might not play a role in the **precipitation** of end time events as they are described in [The Great Controversy](#). It is true that Islam might serve as the catalyst for the fulfillment of Bible prophecies concerning the United States and the papacy, but I do not believe that the rising power of militant Islam is contemplated directly by prophecy itself.

That is to say, in the light of the Biblical evidence I do not believe that radical Islam fulfills any specific end time prophecy but very well could serve as the catalyst for the fulfillment

of prophecy. After all, radical Islam has brought the United States to prominence and has led it to flex its military muscles, it has made the curtailing of our civil and religious liberties easier and it has also misdirected the eyes of Christians (and even a few Seventh-day Adventists) to the Middle East for the fulfillment of prophecy thus hiding from view the powers that will play a role in end time events, the papacy and apostate Protestantism.

Time has proven that Uriah Smith's reinterpretation of the king of the north was wrong. Will we learn from his mistake? Will we ever learn that the best way to understand prophecy is not to read the newspapers or to watch CNN but rather to study our Bibles?





## **“The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”**

**by Pastor Stephen Bohr**

# **LESSON #15 – DECODING THE MYSTERIES OF REVELATION 17**

### **Introductory Matters**

The book of Revelation is saturated with exotic imagery. This imagery, known as apocalyptic, was part of the *lingua franca* of that day. In order to comprehend this bizarre imagery, we must walk in the shoes of the people of that time. That is, we must understand the symbols as they did and not as we would in the twenty-first century.

Revelation 17 is one of the most complex and intellectually challenging chapters in the book of Revelation. It contains vivid symbols, mysterious numbers and strange expressions. It is like a giant jigsaw puzzle with each symbol being a piece of the puzzle. Before we can put the puzzle together we must first carefully analyze the shape of each piece to see where it fits within the puzzle as a whole. Fortunately for us, the first part of the vision (verses 1-8) is explained in great detail by the interpreting angel in the second part (verses 9-18).

### **Signs and Wisdom**

We are told in Revelation 1:1 that the book of Revelation was signified to John. The root word behind the verb ‘signified’ is ‘sign’. This indicates that the book of Revelation was given to John in sign language and sign language is symbolic language. This means that the symbols must be decoded or deciphered in order to ascertain the book’s message.

In order to understand the symbolic language of Revelation 17, we must have wisdom (Revelation 17:9) and wisdom comes only from God (James 1:5). It is not enough to study Revelation 17. We must pray that God will give us supernatural wisdom from on high to understand it.

## **The Angel of Revelation 17**

Revelation 16 describes seven angels who pour out the seven last plagues upon the earth. The vision in Revelation 17 was given to John by one of those **seven** angels who had the seven **plagues** (Revelation 17:1; 16:12). The question that begs to be asked is: **Which** of the seven plague angels in Revelation 16 comes back to speak with John in Revelation 17?

The answer to this question is not hard to find. The harlot of Revelation 17 is described as a woman sitting upon **many waters** (17:1) and on her forehead is found the inscription: “MYSTERY: **BABYLON THE GREAT**” (17:5). She is also said to be that “**great city** which **reigns over** the kings of the earth.” (Revelation 17:18). That is to say, the ‘harlot’ and the ‘city’ are interchangeable terms.

What was the **name of the river** that ran through the ancient city of **Babylon**? The answer to this question is provided by a geographical study of the region as well as by Scripture. The ancient city of Babylon sat upon the many waters of the **river Euphrates** (Jeremiah 51:12, 13). This means that we must look for the **bowl angel** who refers to the river Euphrates and that bowl angel is the **sixth** (Revelation 16:12). In other words, the angel who poured out the sixth plague upon the **river Euphrates** in Revelation 16:12-16 **came back to John** in chapter 17 and further explained and expanded the meaning of that same plague in Revelation 17. In short, Revelation 17 is an explanation and amplification of **Revelation 16:12-16**.

### **The Harlot Woman (17:1)**

The harlot woman is the **main protagonist** in the story of Revelation 17. She **sits** on the waters, on the dragon beast and on the heads. She **fornicates** with the kings of the earth. She **gives wine** to the nations. She **sheds** the blood of the saints. She **has dominion** over the nations and she is eventually **hated** by the ten kings who are described as being on the seventh head of the dragon beast. So, what does this harlot woman represent?

In the Old Testament a harlot woman was a symbol of apostate **Israel** (Ezekiel 16:15, 16). Ellen White explains that the harlot of Revelation 17 symbolizes an apostate church—the **Roman Catholic papacy**.

*“In Revelation 17 Babylon is represented as a woman --a figure which is used in the Bible as the symbol of a church, a virtuous woman representing a pure church, a vile woman an apostate church.” GC, p. 381.*

The harlot woman of Revelation 17 represents **apostate religion** which has climbed on the **back of the civil powers** of the world with the purpose of using them to **persecute** God’s faithful people.

The harlot woman at the stage in which she appears in Revelation 17 represents the apostate **Roman Catholic system**. But the meaning of the symbol is **broader**. We shall find that apostate religion actually **allied itself** with **seven consecutive world civil powers**

beginning with Nebuchadnezzar's Babylon and ending with a resuscitated Papacy after the deadly wound is healed.

### **Her Fornication (17:2; 18:3)**

If the harlot represents apostate **religion**, then her fornication with the kings of the earth must mean that she joins church and **state**. As much is confirmed by Ellen White:

*"It was by departure from the Lord, and alliance with the heathen, that the Jewish church became a harlot; and Rome, corrupting herself in like manner by seeking the **support of worldly powers**, receives a like condemnation."* *GC*, p. 382

*"Whenever the church has obtained **secular power**, she has employed it to punish dissent from her doctrines. Protestant churches that have followed in the **steps of Rome** by forming alliance with **worldly powers** have manifested a similar desire to restrict liberty of conscience."* *GC*, p. 443

### **The Act of Sitting (17:1)**

The Babylonian harlot is said to sit on many **waters** (17:1, 15), on a **scarlet** beast (17:3) and on the **seven mountains** (17:9). How is it possible for the harlot to sit upon all three of these at the same time? We shall answer this very important question a little later on in our study.

This **act of sitting** means that the harlot not only **rules** over the kings of the earth (17:18) but also over every **tribe**, tongue and nation (13:7).

### **The Waters (17:1)**

The waters upon which the harlot sits are clearly identified as 'multitudes, **nations**, tongues and **peoples**' (17:15). Later on in this study we will find that **the body of the dragon** beast upon which the harlot sits is actually composed of waters over which she rules.

According to the prophet **Isaiah** the nations make a noise like the noise of the **seas** and a rushing like the rushing of many **waters** (Isaiah 17:12, 13).

### **Waters Dried up**

A careful comparison of Revelation 12, 13, and 17 reveals that the persecuting waters upon which the woman sits were **dried up once in the past** (when the fifth head was wounded in 1798) and they **will be dried up once again in the future** (when the seventh head is wounded at the time of the sixth plague). Let's take a look at these two occasions.

**The Perspective of Revelation 12: The waters were dried up** toward the **end** of the **1260 years** of persecution against the woman.

- In **Revelation 12:15** we are informed that the dragon spewed water out of its **mouth** (singular) for **1260 days/years** with the intention of drowning the woman.

But **Revelation 12:16** states that the persecuting waters were **dried up by the earth**.

- After a time of **respite** during which the waters are dry, persecution ceases. However, we are told that the dragon will be enraged with the woman once more and will **spew waters out** of its mouth against the **remnant** of the woman's Seed, that is, against the remnant of Jesus (Revelation 12:17).

**Note:** In **Joshua 24:2, 3, 14, 15** the Euphrates River is described under the euphemism of "**the Flood**." **Genesis 15:18** depicts the Euphrates as "**the great River**" (see also Isaiah 8:7, 8; 17:12, 13; 59:19). Thus in Revelation 12 we are to understand **the** River (with the definite article in the Greek) or **Flood** that the dragon spews out his mouth as the **River Euphrates**.

**The Perspective of Revelation 13:1-10: The Beast is wounded** at the **end** of the **42 months** of persecution against the woman.

- Revelation 13 depicts a similar scenario to the one that we found in Revelation 12. **Revelation 13:7** describes a sea beast that persecutes the saints for 42 months (the same period as the 1260 days/years). At the end of this period the beast received a **deadly** wound with the sword (**Revelation 13:10**) and persecution against the woman ceased for a season.
- According to **Romans 13:4**, the sword belongs to the **civil rulers**. After a period of convalescence, the deadly wound of the sea beast is **healed** (the waters flow again) and the whole world wonders after the beast (**Revelation 13:3, 11-18**).

**Note:** Some wonder whether the beast was actually killed or only mortally wounded. The expression "*as it were wounded to death*" (13:3) is identical to the description of Jesus as a Lamb "**as it had been slain**" (5:5). No one would sustain that Jesus was not killed! Revelation 13:10 leaves no doubt that the beast **was killed** with the sword (13:10). It is very important to remember that when the **head is dead**, the **beast is dead** but when the **head is alive**, the **beast is alive** (cf. Revelation 13:12, 14).

**Revelation 16: The final drying up** at the end of the Time of Trouble:

- As stated above, when the deadly wound is healed and the papacy is released from her prison, the persecuting waters of the symbolic Euphrates will **inundate once more** (Revelation 13:3) with the intention of drowning God's remnant people.
- We found a similar scenario in Revelation 12. After the earth helps the woman by drying up the persecuting waters, the dragon is **enraged with the remnant** of her seed and launches a deadly persecution against them (Revelation 12:17).
- But we are told in **Revelation 16:12** that the raging waters of the Euphrates will be **dried** up, that is, the beast will once again receive a **final deadly wound** when the seventh head is wounded.

- And Revelation 17 explains that the kings over whom the harlot ruled will **hate her** and make her **naked**, eat her **flesh** and **burn** her with fire (Revelation 17:16). Once again, the sword of civil power that the harlot used to kill God's people will turn against her **repeating events globally** that will be similar in character to the French Revolution.

### **The Perspective of Daniel 11:40-45**

Though this passage falls outside the immediate scope of our present study, a few remarks might be helpful.

- Daniel 11:31-39 describes the king of the north **persecuting** the saints and doing his will for [1260] 'days' (11:33).
- But when the 'days' are over (at the time of the end in 1798) the king of the south rises against him and **wounds** him (11:40).
- The king of the north then **recovers from his wound** and rises like a mighty **tempest** to **flood** and **overflow** the world (11:40-44).
- But at the apex of his power he comes **to his end** and has **no one to help** him (11:45). This is another way of saying that the waters which helped the king of the north will dry up on him!

It does not take much of an imagination to see the link between Daniel 11 and Revelation 12, 13 and 17. Notice the following comparison:

**The waters flowed during the 1260 days/42 months/time, times and dividing of time:**

- **Revelation 13:5, 7** depicts the **beast** [the **King of the North**] **persecuting** the saints and ruling for **42 months**.
- **Revelation 12:13-15** describes this same period of persecution but with different symbolism. The **dragon** spews flood waters out of his mouth to overflow the woman (the faithful church) for **3.5 times**.

**The waters were dried up at the end of the 1260 days, 42 months/time, times and dividing of time:**

- At the time of the end, the **beast** [the **King of the North**] received a **deadly wound** (Revelation 13:3).
- Toward the end of the 1260 days/years, the **dragon's** persecuting flood waters were **dried up** (Revelation 12:16). The drying up of the waters represents the same event as the deadly wound.

## The waters will flow again and will be dried up for the last time:

- After a period of **respite**, the beast's deadly wound is **healed** and the **floodwaters flow** once more thus threatening the very existence of God's remnant people (12:17; 13:11-18).
- Finally, when the **spiritual Euphrates is at flood stage**, God will **dry it up** and deliver his people (Revelation 16:12-16; see also Daniel 12:1).

In summary, the sequence in Daniel 11 and Revelation 12, 13 and 17 is as follows:

- **Flood** (1260 or 42 months of papal dominion: 538-1798)
- Waters **dried up** (Papacy loses the support of the state in 1798 and the wound is kept in place by the United States)
- **Flood** (deadly wound healed: The papacy gains the support of the state through the agency of the United States)
- Waters **dried up** (Papacy loses world support during the sixth plague)

## The Harlot's Name

The harlot's name is **Babylon** and she is the **mother** of harlots (17:5).

If the harlot is the **mother** of harlots, then she must have **daughters** that were **born from her** at some point in the past. Her daughters are also described as the **false prophet** or the **lamb-horned beast** (Revelation 13:11; 16:13. Compare with the story of Elijah in the Old Testament and the story of the martyrdom of John the Baptist).

The **Protestant churches** that were born from Roman Catholicism in the **sixteenth century** failed to fully sever their relationship with their harlot mother. Instead of completing the Reformation, they fell into an ever deeper apostasy, teaching many of their **mother's false doctrines**. The book of Revelation clearly teaches that the daughters will be as **anxious to join church and state** as did their mother.

*"Babylon is said to be "the mother of harlots." By her **daughters** must be symbolized churches that cling to her doctrines and traditions, and follow her example of sacrificing the truth and the approval of God, in order to form an unlawful alliance with the world." GC, pp. 382, 383*

At Vatican Council II **Pope John XXIII** and **Paul VI** referred to the Catholic Church as the **Mother** and the Protestant churches as her **alienated children**:

Words of **John XXIII** at the opening of **Vatican Council II** (1962-1965):

*"... She [the Roman Catholic Church] to be an affectionate, kind and patient **mother**, she is moved by compassion and goodness towards **her alienated children**." (Ernesto Balducci, *John: The Transitional Pope*, transl., Dorothy White [New York: Hill Book Company, 1964], p. 269.*

Words of **Pope Paul VI** during the council:

*“Because of their position, separated brethren are the object of deep and tender affection on the part of the **Mother Church**. . . It is a love that feels grief and sadness, the love of a heart wounded by estrangement, because the estrangement prevents our brethren from enjoying so many privileges and rights, and makes them lose so much grace. But perhaps for this very reason its love is all the deeper and more burning. . .”* Cardinal Augustin Bea, *The Unity of Christians*, ed., Bernard Leeming [New York: Herder and Herder, 1963], p. 140

Thus Revelation 17 describes a wicked **three-fold alliance** between the **harlot**, her **daughters** and the **kings of the earth**. This trilogy is described in **Revelation 16:13** as the dragon, the beast and the false prophet.

In another extremely significant statement Ellen White explains:

*“I saw that the two-horned beast had a dragon's mouth, and that his power was in his head, and that the decree would go out of his mouth [**very interesting in the light of Revelation 12:15**]. Then I saw the Mother of Harlots; that the mother was not the daughters, but separate and distinct from them [**this seems to indicate that Catholicism and Protestantism cover the period of two separate heads on the beast of Revelation 17**]. She has had her day, and it is past [**during the 1260 years**], and her daughters, the Protestant sects, were the next to come on the stage and act out the same mind [**notice the allusion to Revelation 17**] that the mother had when she persecuted the saints [**during the 1260 years**]. I saw that as the mother has been declining in power, the daughters had been growing, and soon they will exercise the power once exercised by the mother [**this can be seen clearly today**].*

*I saw the nominal church and nominal Adventists, like Judas, would betray us to the Catholics to obtain their influence to come against the truth. The saints then will be an obscure people, little known to the Catholics; but the churches and nominal Adventists who know of our faith and customs (for they hated us on account of the Sabbath, for they could not refute it) will betray the saints and report them to the Catholics as those who disregard the institutions of the people; that is, that they keep the Sabbath and disregard Sunday.*

*Then the Catholics bid the Protestants to go forward, and issue a decree that all who will not observe the first day of the week, instead of the seventh day, shall be slain. And the Catholics, whose numbers are large, will stand by the Protestants. The Catholics will give their power to the image of the beast. And the Protestants will work as their mother worked before them to destroy the saints.”* Ellen G. White, *Spaulding Magan Collection*, pp. 1, 2.

In this remarkable statement, Ellen White clearly affirms that **Protestants** will make overtures and seek to **gain the influence of the Catholics** and then the Catholics will tell Protestants to go ahead and proclaim a Sunday law. The present efforts of the religious right to enlist Catholics in the fight against abortion, gay marriage, pornography, poverty and other social evils will come back to haunt them. And the liberal fringe will fall into the

trap as well by seeing in Sunday observance a way to save the environment, the family and to help the poor.

In a related statement, Ellen White gives her understanding (actually, God's understanding) of Revelation 17:1-4:

*"In the seventeenth of Revelation is foretold the destruction of all the churches [these are the apostate Protestant churches] who corrupt themselves by idolatrous devotion to the service of the papacy, those who have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. [Rev. 17:1-4 quoted.]*

*Thus is represented the **papal power [the harlot]**, which with all deceivableness of unrighteousness, by outside attraction and gorgeous display, deceives all nations; promising them, as did Satan our first parents, all good to those who receive its mark, and all harm to those who oppose its fallacies. The power which has the deepest inward corruption will make the greatest display, and will clothe itself with the most elaborate signs of power. The Bible plainly declares that this covers a corrupt and deceiving wickedness. "Upon her forehead was a name written, Mystery, Babylon the Great, the Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the Earth."*

***What is it that gives its kingdom to this power? [Notice that the United States under the dominion of apostate Protestantism and Roman Catholicism are two separate powers and the United States will give its kingdom to the papacy] **Protestantism**, a power which while professing to have the temper and spirit of a lamb and to be allied to Heaven, speaks with the voice of a dragon. It is moved by a power from beneath." (Letter 232, 1899) Ellen G. White, The Seventh-day Adventist Bible Commentary, volume 7, p. 983***

### **Names of Blasphemy**

The harlot has names of **blasphemy** on her forehead (17:5). Blasphemy is defined as when a mere man claims to exercise the powers and prerogatives of **God** on earth (John 10:30-33) such as claiming to have the power to **forgive** sins (Mark 2:7)

### **The Harlot's Attire**

Purple and scarlet are the colors of **royalty** (John 19:5; Matthew 27:28) and the harlot sits or reigns as queen over multitudes, nations, tongues and people.

The harlot is attired with gold, silver, precious stones and pearls. This indicates that this is a very **rich** and ostentatious power. Notably, in the Old Testament, Israel clothed herself with all this paraphernalia to entice the kings of the surrounding nations to fornicate with her.

*"The purple and scarlet color, the gold and precious stones and pearls, vividly picture the magnificence and more than kingly pomp affected by the **haughty see of Rome**." GC, p. 382.*



It is significant that the Roman Catholic clergy's colors are **purple and scarlet**. It is also worthy of note that the garments that are used by the papal clergy do not include blue! In Scripture, blue is a symbol of God's holy Law (Numbers 15:37-41)

## **The Golden Cup with Wine**

The golden cup in the harlot's hand contains the **wine of Babylon**. The wine is identified as her **abominations** and the filthiness of her fornication (Revelation 17:4).

This wine is given to all **nations**, that is to say, to all the **inhabitants** of the earth (17:2; 18:3). It is not the choice of the nations to drink this wine. Drinking the wine is **not optional** because we are told that Babylon has **made** all nations drink of the wine and that all nations were **made** drunk with it (14:8; 17:2).

The wine is called 'the wine of **the wrath** of her fornication'. That is, drinking the wine causes **wrath** against those who are not willing to drink (14:8; 18:3).

The cup is full of wine but the wine is composed of the harlot's abominations. Thus the words 'wine' and 'abominations' are interchangeable. The harlot's abominations include several things:

- **Idol** worship (Deuteronomy 7:25, 26)
- Spiritualism or attempting to speak to and with the **dead** (Deuteronomy 18:9-13)
- Refusing to hear God's **law** (Proverbs 28:9)
- Spiritual **adultery** (Ezekiel 23:35-45)
- Eating unclean **meats** (Deuteronomy 14:3)
- Shedding innocent **blood** (Ezekiel 22:2)
- Sun **worship** (Ezekiel 8:16)

Ellen White clearly identified the meaning of the wine:

*"The fallen denominational churches are Babylon. Babylon has been fostering poisonous doctrines, the wine of error. This wine of error is made up of false doctrines, such as the natural immortality of the soul, the eternal torment of the wicked, the denial of the pre-existence of Christ prior to His birth in Bethlehem, and advocating and exalting the first day of the week above God's holy and sanctified day. These and kindred errors are presented to the world by the various churches, and thus the Scriptures are fulfilled that say, 'For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.' It is a wrath which is created by false doctrines, and when kings and presidents drink this wine of the wrath of her fornication, they are stirred with anger against those who will not come into harmony with the false and satanic heresies which exalt the false Sabbath, and lead men to trample underfoot God's memorial. Testimonies to Ministers, pp. 61, 62*

Later in this study we will see that these multitudes and rulers who have **swallowed the poisonous doctrines** of these apostate ministers will awaken from their drunkenness and **destroy them**.

In the above statement Ellen White blames, the churches for giving the rulers of the world the wine of Babylon. But in a statement in The Great Controversy, p. 389 she is more specific: It is **the ministers**, the men of learning of the apostate churches, who are guilty of the spiritual intoxication of the world:

*"When faithful teachers expound the word of God, there arise men of learning, ministers professing to understand the Scriptures, who denounce sound doctrine as heresy, and thus turn away inquirers after truth. Were it not that the world is hopelessly intoxicated with the wine of Babylon, multitudes would be convicted and converted by the plain, cutting truths of the word of God. But religious faith appears so confused and discordant that the people know not what to believe as truth. The sin of the world's impenitence lies at the door of the church."*

After quoting **Revelation 17:1-4** Ellen White clearly identifies this harlot as the Roman Catholic papacy:

*"In the seventeenth of Revelation is foretold the destruction of all the churches who corrupt themselves by idolatrous devotion to the service of the papacy, those who have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. [Rev. 17:1-4 quoted.]*

*Thus is represented the papal power, which with all deceivableness of unrighteousness, by outside attraction and gorgeous display, deceives all nations; promising them, as did Satan our first parents, all good to those who receive its mark, and all harm to those who oppose its fallacies." Ellen G. White, The Seventh-day Adventist Bible Commentary, volume 7, p. 983.*

### **God's Faithful People**

In all **three chapters** (12, 13, 17) where the seven-headed beasts are found, they are at war with the people of God.

- God's people in **Revelation 12:13, 15** are referred to as a **woman** whom the dragon **attempts to drown** with the waters it spews out of its mouth.
- In **Revelation 12:17** God's people are called the "**remnant** of her Seed." The dragon goes out to **make war** with them.
- In **Revelation 13:7** God's people are called the **saints**. The beast **persecutes** them.
- In **Revelation 17:6** God's people are called the **saints** and the **martyrs** of Jesus. The harlot, by **using the waters** upon which she sits, attempts to drown God's people.

Note that Ellen White applies Revelation 17:6 to the career of the Roman Catholic papacy:

*"The power that for so many centuries maintained despotic sway over the monarchs of Christendom is Rome. . . And no other power could be so truly declared "drunken with the blood of the saints" as that church which has so cruelly persecuted the followers of Christ. Babylon is also charged with the sin of unlawful connection with "the kings of the earth." GC, p. 382.*

## **The Seven Headed Scarlet Dragon**

**John N. Andrews**, perhaps the ablest scholar in the history of the Seventh-day Adventist Church, had this to say about the seven headed scarlet dragon of Revelation 17:

“The seven heads are **seven forms of civil power** which **successively** bear rule. These seven heads belong alike to the **dragon** of Revelation 12, the **beast** of chapter 13, and **that** of Revelation 17. This shows **conclusively** that the dragon and these two beasts are symbols of the **same power under different heads**; for there are not three sets of seven heads, but it is evident that the heads are successive forms of its power, **one of them bearing rule at a time**, and then giving place to another (Revelation 17:9, 10). The proper period of each seems to be this: The dragon **before** the 1260 years, the beast of chapter 13 **during** that period, and the beast of chapter 17 **since** the deadly wound and captivity at the close of that period.” (J. N. Andrews, *The Three Messages of Revelation XIV*, 6-12, pp. 77, 78.

It will be noticed that the **seven heads** of the dragon beast are also described as **seven mountains**. In Bible prophecy mountains represent **kingdoms, not individual kings** (Daniel 2:34, 35, 44; Jeremiah 51:25; Micah 4:1; Revelation 17:9 in the light of Daniel 2:38, 39; 7:17, 23). This means that the seven heads must represent **seven kingdoms** that have ruled upon the earth and have been **controlled by the harlot** or apostate religion.

## **The River Dragon**

In order to comprehend the meaning of the seven headed dragon upon which the harlot sits, we must first understand how the ancients perceived **river dragons**.

The ancients believed that **mountains were heads** of a great cosmic river serpent/dragon. According to their world view, the **mountains/heads would spew out waters (headwaters)** which would flow down into the valley. As river twisted and turned tortuously in the valley it looked like the **body of a great river serpent/dragon**. According to their view, when the river was at **flood stage** it overflowed its banks and sprouted wings (Isaiah 8:7, 8).

It is of the utmost importance to keep in mind that **Revelation 12:15-16 and 17:15, 9** is drawing on this ancient concept. But in Revelation the river dragon takes on a symbolic meaning. The mountains symbolize **kingdoms** and the waters represent **multitudes, nations, tongues and peoples**. It is important to understand that the nations, multitudes, tongues and peoples actually form the **body of the dragon beast**. This is the reason why the harlot is described as sitting on a **scarlet beast** as well as on the waters. In other words, the waters and the scarlet beast are **interchangeable**. And the waters/dragon are scarlet because it is filled with the **blood** of God’s people (17:6).

The reliability of this ancient view as it applies to Revelation 17 is seen in the fact that the seven heads are identified also as **seven mountains**. As we have already seen, in antiquity, the mountains were conceived as the heads of a dragon beast.

It is crucially important to realize that while the heads/mountains are spewing out waters, the dragon beast is alive. When the heads/mountains, however, cease to spew out waters, the dragon beast is dead. Thus the beast is **alive or dead depending on whether the harlot is able to use the head to persecute God's people**. That is to say, when the harlot commands the kings to order their multitudes to persecute God's people, the dragon beast is alive. When the civil powers uphold democratic principles and keep aloof from the church, the dragon beast is dead!

### **Three Seven-headed Beasts**

The three seven-headed beasts [**all representing successive stages of Rome**] originate in different places:

- When the seven headed dragon attempted to slay the man child, a sign was seen in **heaven** (Revelation 12:1).
- The seven headed beast of Revelation 13:1 arose from the **sea**.
- The seven headed scarlet beast of Revelation 17:8 will arise from the **abyss**.

### **Parallels between Revelation 12, 13 and 17**

Seven heads and ten horns (12:3; 13:1)	Seven heads and ten horns (17:3)
Names of blasphemy (13:1)	Names of blasphemy (17:3)
Woman (12:1)	Woman (17:1)
Call for wisdom (13:18)	Call for wisdom (17:9)
Nations, tongues, peoples (13:7)	Nations, tongues, peoples (17:15)
Persecution (12:6, 13-15)	Persecution (17:6)
Waters (12:15)	Waters (17:1)
Waters dried up (12:16)	Waters dried up (16:12)
Was (1260 years—12:6; 13:5)	'Was' (1260 years—17:8)
Is not (deadly wound—12:16; 13:3)	'Is not' (deadly wound—17:8)
Wound healed (12:17; 13:3)	'Shall be' (wound healed—17:8)
Beast & false prophet (13:1-18)	Harlot and daughters (17:5)

## **From the Abyss**

This dragon beast ascends from the **abyss** (Revelation 17:8). The abyss is the **abode of the dead**:

**Romans 10:7**: *“Or, who shall descend into the **deep** [abyss in Greek]? (that is, to bring up Christ again **from the dead**.)”*

In **Revelation 20:1** Satan is cast into the abyss when his **wicked followers are dead** and he is released once more when they are raised from the dead (Revelation 20:5, 7-9).

## **Seven Heads**

The seven heads represent seven **kings** (17:10), but the word ‘kings’ in Bible prophecy is interchangeable with ‘kingdoms’ (17:10; Dan. 7:17, 23; 2:37-39). The seven heads are actually **seven successive kingdoms**.

Some have thought that **Egypt and Assyria** are the first two heads of the scarlet beast. In this scenario the seven heads would be Egypt, Assyria, Babylon, Medes and Persians, Greece, Rome, Papal Rome and resurrected Papal Rome (the eighth kingdom). The problem with this concept is that Egypt and Assyria are not found in any of the lines of prophecy in Daniel or Revelation. Daniel 2, Daniel 7 and Revelation 13 all begin with **Babylon as the first kingdom** and Daniel 8 and 11 begin with the kingdom of **Persia**.

## **Are the Seven Heads Seven Popes?**

Others have thought that the seven heads represent **the successive popes** who have ruled **since 1929**.

In this scenario, as of 2005, the **five heads which had fallen** since 1929 were:

- **Pius XI (1922-1939)**
- **Pius XII (1939-1958)**
- **John XXIII (1958-1963)**
- **Paul VI (1963-1978)**
- **John Paul I (1978)**

The **head who is** (or sixth head) would be **John Paul II (1978-2005)** and the one **who is to come** and will rule a short time is **Benedict XVI** (the seventh head) who served as Pope from 2005-2013.

But Benedict resigned his post as of February 28, 2013 so the present Pope, **Francis I**, is # 8 in the series of popes since 1929. So, as the speculation goes, **Francis I** will be the last Pope because Revelation 17:11 refers to an eighth and Pope Francis I is the eighth Pope since 1929! But this view can be discarded because Pope **Francis I**, is **not one of the seven previous ones** as is required by the prophecy of Revelation 17:11.

In summary, this is what the list of popes would look like:

**#1: Pius XI (1922-1939)**

**#2: Pius XII (1939-1958)**

**#3: John XXIII (1958-1963)**

**#4: Paul VI (1963-1978)**

**#5: John Paul I (1978)**

**#6: John Paul II (1978-2005)**

**#7: Benedict XVI (2005-2013)**

**#8: Francis I (2013-?)**

A novel interpretation was put forth before the election of Benedict XVI. It was suggested that the eighth in the series would be a demon **disguised as John Paul II** because the prophecy states that the **eighth is of the seven**. This view can be discarded for two reasons: First, at this point a demon disguised as Pope John Paul II would be # 9 in the series. Second, it did not happen!! Francis I is already the eighth Pope since 1929, not a demon disguised as John Paul II.

Before the election of Francis I, evangelicals and even some Adventists had referred to a prophecy by **St. Malachy** to the effect that the next Pope would be the last, that **he would be black** (a euphemism for the head of the Jesuit Order who is called the 'black Pope') and his name would be **Petrus Romanus**. None of these things are true of **Francis I**. All of this speculation detracts from the power of this prophecy.

The fact is that this prophecy has nothing to do with **individual popes**. The seven heads are not seven individuals but rather seven kingdoms. All this speculation about the seven heads should be discarded for the following reasons:

**First of all**, it comes pretty close to setting specific dates for the final prophetic movements. In this scenario, the successor of Pope Benedict XVI would be the last Pope. Is this not setting a definite time frame for end time events?

**Second**, these speculative views sever Revelation 17 from the previous prophetic lines of Daniel 7 and Revelation 12 and 13. As we have seen above, Revelation 12, 13 and 17 are indissolubly linked! Ellen White understood the common thread between Revelation 12, 13 and 17:

*"God has warned His people of the perils before them. John beholds the things which will be in the last days and he sees a people working counter to God." Then she says: "Read Revelation 12:17; 14:10-13, and chapters 17 and 13." Manuscript Releases, volume 17, p. 18*

**Third**, although the seven heads of this dragon beast are said to be seven kings, the words 'kings' and 'kingdoms' are used interchangeably in prophecy (see Daniel 2:39; 7:17, 23). In prophecy 'mountains' represent kingdoms, not individual rulers. The popes on the list

above are actually not rulers of seven distinct kingdoms but rather leaders of the **same kingdom**.

**Finally**, there is little or no evidence that 1929 should be chosen as the beginning date for the sequence of the seven heads. As I have clearly shown in another place, the deadly wound was not healed in 1929 because in Revelation 13:11-18 we are explicitly told that **the United States** will be instrumental in the healing of the deadly wound, **not Italy**.

### **The Beast's Three Final Stages**

The beast (notice that it is not the harlot who has three stages but rather the beast) has three consecutive stages of existence:

- It “**was** [past] and is [present] **not** and shall **be** [future]” (17:8).
- It “was and is not and **yet is** [better translation is: “shall be present”] (17:8).
- These same time periods are described as “five are **fallen** [past], one **is** [present] and the other is not yet **come** [future]” (17:10).
- The time periods are also explained as the beast who “**was** [past], and **is not** [present], even he is the **eighth** [future]” (17:11).

**Note:** The beast “**was**” during the 1260 years of Papal dominion. It “**is not**” because the beast presently has a deadly wound. It “**shall be**” because the deadly wound will be healed and the whole world will wonder after the beast.

The heads of the dragon beast do not rule **simultaneously** but rather **consecutively**. The heads are wounded **one by one**. We know this for at least two reasons:

- First, archeological digs in ancient **Tell Amar**.  
**Note:** A cylinder seal from Tell Amar in Mesopotamia (ancient Iraq) depicts a seven-headed dragon engaged in **conflict with two deities**, one before him and the other behind. Four of the heads, pierced by a spear, are shown **drooping** and are no longer in conflict. But the other three heads are still **erect**, maintaining the struggle.
- Second, the testimony of Revelation 12:15 and 13:3, 5, 6 where we are told that **only one mouth** is spewing out waters at any given time.

### **The Meaning of the Seven Heads**

To the best of our **present knowledge**, the seven heads represent the following kingdoms:

- #1: Babylon
- #2: Medes and Persians
- #3: Greece
- #4: Roman Empire
- #5: Civil powers of Europe under the control of the Papacy
- #6: The civil power of the United States under apostate Protestantism
- #7: Resurrected Papal Rome allied with the kings of the whole world

It will be observed that in this scenario **three of the last four heads** of this scarlet beast are Roman (and even the United States will become an ally of the dragon or Rome because she will speak like a dragon; see the material on Matthew 24 for the connection between the United States and its fascination with Rome). The question that begs to be asked is: Why would three of the seven heads apply to Rome? Isn't one head enough to represent the various stages of Rome?

The answer to these questions is quite simple. The books of Daniel and Revelation themselves take up the **three stages of Rome separately**. In Daniel 2 the legs of iron [imperial Rome] are distinguished from the feet of iron and clay [divided Rome and papal Rome]. In Daniel 7:23, 24 we find a clear distinction between the dragon ruling by itself, and the dragon ruling with the ten horns and the dragon with the little horn.

Furthermore, Revelation 12 portrays a **dragon in heaven** as a symbol for Pagan Rome, Revelation 13 uses a **composite beast from the sea** to represent Papal Rome during the 1260 years and Revelation 17 employs yet a **third beast from the abyss** to represent the papacy when its deadly wound is healed. If three beasts which arise in three **different places** are used to represent the different stages of Rome, then it should not surprise us that **separate heads** are used to depict those same stages. It is important to underline that the **sixth head** (the United States under apostate Protestantism) is symbolized by a **separate beast** and is related to Rome because it speaks like a dragon and the dragon represents Satan working through Rome.

Ellen White clearly identifies the last three persecuting powers in their proper **historical sequence**:

*"Under the symbols of the **great red dragon**, a **leopard-like beast**, and a **beast with lamblike horns**, the **earthly governments** which would be especially engaged in trampling upon God's law and **persecuting His people** were presented to John. Their war is to be carried on till the close of time. The **people of God**, symbolized by a **holy woman and her children** [Revelation 12:6, 17], are represented as greatly in the minority. In the last days, only a remnant still exists. John speaks of them as those that 'keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.' Signs of the Times, February 8, 1910*

Regarding the **last head** in the sequence of seven, Ellen White has stated:

*"As we approach the last crisis, it is of vital moment that harmony and unity exist among the Lord's instrumentalities. The world is filled with storm and war and variance. Yet under **one head--the papal power**--the people will unite to oppose God in the person of His witnesses." Testimonies for the Church, volume 7, p. 182*

*"When the land which the Lord provided as an asylum for his people, that they might worship him according to the dictates of their own consciences, the land over which for long years the shield of Omnipotence has been spread, the land which God has favored by making it the depository of the pure religion of Christ,--when that land shall, through its legislators, abjure the principles of Protestantism, and give countenance to Romish apostasy in tampering with*



God's law,—it is then that the final work of the man of sin will be revealed. Protestants will throw their whole influence and strength on the side of the Papacy; by a national act enforcing the false Sabbath, they will give **life and vigor to the corrupt faith of Rome**, reviving **her** tyranny and oppression of conscience. Then it will be time for God to work in mighty power for the vindication of his truth." *Signs of the Times*, June 12, 1893.

Some have wondered about the **eighth head** of the dragon beast. The simple fact is that this beast **does not have eight heads**—it has only seven but the seventh head counts as an eighth; that is to say that head number 7 bears the number 8.

Time and again Revelation 17 tells us that there are **only seven heads** on the dragon beast (17:3, 7, 9, 10). Louis Were has shown in his book, *The Woman and the Resurrected Beast*, eight is the **number of the resurrection**.

### **Dragon Wings**

Though Revelation 17 **does not** use the symbolism of wings, it would be well to notice that in **Isaiah 8:7, 8** the invasion of King Sennacherib into the land of Judah is compared to the flooding of the mighty river Euphrates. The river at **flood stage** is compared to a dragon with wings:

*"Now therefore, behold, the Lord brings up over them the waters of **the River**, strong and mighty—the **king of Assyria** and all his glory; he will go up over all his channels and go over all his banks. 8 He will pass through Judah, he will **overflow and pass over**, he will reach up to the neck; and the stretching out of his wings will fill the breadth of Your land, O Immanuel."*

### **The Ten Horns**

The **ten horns** are found on the head of the dragon beast of Revelation 12, on the head of the sea beast of Revelation 13 and on the head of the scarlet beast of Revelation 17. Whereas the seven heads are **consecutive**, the ten horns are **contemporaneous**. This is made clear by the fact that all ten horns will rule (when they receive the kingdom) simultaneously on the **seventh head** when the beast resurrects from its death wound (Revelation 17:12)

The ten horns are symbolic of ten **kings** (17:12). The ten kings represent 'the **kings** of the earth and the whole **world**' (16:14; see also 17:18). During the 1260 days/years, the ten toes and the ten horns of Daniel 2 and 7 represented the nations of Western Europe but at the end the ten toes and ten horns represent the kings of the earth and the **whole world**.

These kings will have one **mind** until the words of God are fulfilled (16:17; 17:17). The kings represent the rulers of the Christian world who, under the leadership of apostate Protestantism and Roman Catholicism, will influence the state to enact and enforce a Sunday law. When this happens, they will all be on the same page.

Are we to understand that there will be just ten nations in this universal union? No. The number 10 is symbolic of 'all'. This can be seen in several Biblical texts:

- Genesis 24:10: Ten camels are symbolic of **all** of Abraham's goods
- Luke 19:13: Ten servants are symbolic of **all** of Christ's professed followers
- I Samuel 1:8: Ten sons
- Ecclesiastes 7:19: More than ten rulers of the city
- Daniel 1:14, 15: The young men were tested for **ten days**
- Daniel 1:20: The young men were **ten times better**
- Matthew 25:1: **Ten virgins** represent all of God's professed people
- When we return **10%** of our income we are confessing that all belongs to God
- The **Ten Commandments** express the whole duty of man. The **whole** law and prophets are summarized in the ten. God added no more to them (Deuteronomy 5:22; Ecclesiastes 12:13; Matthew 22:40)

They give their power, authority and kingdom to the **beast** (17:12, 13).

*"The **so-called Christian world** is to be the theater of great and decisive actions. **Men in authority** will enact laws controlling the conscience, after the example of the papacy. Babylon will make all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. Every nation will be involved. Of this time John the Revelator declares: [Rev. 18:3-7; 17:13, 14, quoted].*

*"These have one mind." There will be a **universal bond of union, one great harmony, a confederacy** of Satan's forces. "And shall give their power and strength unto the beast." Thus is manifested the same arbitrary, oppressive power against religious liberty--freedom to worship God according to the dictates of conscience--as was manifested by the papacy, when in the past it persecuted those who dared to refuse to conform with the religious rites and ceremonies of Romanism." 3SM, p. 392*

They will be kings with the beast for **one** hour (17:12).

They will make **war** with the lamb (19:19; 16:14) in the person of His witnesses:

*"As we approach the last crisis, it is of vital moment that harmony and unity exist among the Lord's instrumentalities. The world is filled with storm and war and variance. Yet under one head--the papal power--the people will unite to oppose God **in the person of His witnesses**. This union is cemented by the great apostate." 7T, p. 183*

In Matthew 25 Jesus said to His faithful followers: "In that you have done it unto one of these the least my brothers you have done it **unto me**." And when Jesus spoke to Saul of Tarsus He said: "Saul, Saul, why do you **persecute me**?"

Jesus will overcome the kings of the earth and the whole world because He is the King of kings and Lord of lords (17:14; 19:19-20).

Those who are allied with Jesus are called, chosen and **faithful** (17:14).

The ten kings will not always have a love affair with the harlot who controls them. The kings will **hate** the harlot and turn against her (17:15-16). Not only will the kings turn against the religious leaders but the multitudes which composed these kingdoms will turn

against the harlot. The **kings** will hate her and the **waters** will dry up on her. A scene similar to the French Revolution will be witnessed but on a global scale.

Ellen White describes the time when the waters of the great River **Euphrates** will dry up (16:12).

*“With shouts of triumph, jeering, and imprecation, throngs of evil men are about to rush upon their prey, when, lo, a dense blackness, deeper than the darkness of the night, falls upon the earth. Then a rainbow, shining with the glory from the throne of God, spans the heavens and seems to encircle each praying company. The angry multitudes are suddenly arrested. Their mocking cries die away. The objects of their murderous rage are forgotten. With fearful forebodings they gaze upon the symbol of God's covenant and long to be shielded from its overpowering brightness.” GC, pp. 635, 636*

*“The people see that they have been deluded. They accuse one another of having led them to destruction; but all unite in heaping their bitterest condemnation upon the ministers. Unfaithful pastors have prophesied smooth things; they have led their hearers to make void the law of God and to persecute those who would keep it holy. Now, in their despair, these teachers confess before the world their work of deception. The multitudes are filled with fury. “We are lost!” they cry, “and you are the cause of our ruin;” and they turn upon the false shepherds. The very ones that once admired them most will pronounce the most dreadful curses upon them. The very hands that once crowned them with laurels will be raised for their destruction. The swords which were to slay God's people are now employed to destroy their enemies. Everywhere there is strife and bloodshed. GC, p. 656.*

- We are told in Revelation 17:11 that the **beast** will go to **perdition**.
- In II Thessalonians 2:3 we are told that the **man of sin** will go to **perdition**.
- In John 17:12 **Judas Iscariot** is called the son of **perdition**.

## **The Final Drying Up of the Waters**

The seven headed dragon of Revelation 17 is reminiscent of Leviathan. There are **three key passages** in the Old Testament which depict this seven-headed monster: **Psalm 74:10-14; Job 41 and Isaiah 27:1**. We discover several interesting details about leviathan in these passages:

- Leviathan is a **sea creature** with **multiple heads**. He rules over the waters.
- Leviathan is also called the fleeting **serpent** and the **great dragon**. In fact, the Hebrew word “Leviathan” means “twisted, coiled.”
- Leviathan is at **enmity** with God and His people.
- Leviathan is the king of the **children of pride**.
- Ultimately God will pull out Leviathan from its natural habitat, **cast it onto dry land** and crush its heads.

Though the book of Revelation does not use the name “Leviathan” it is clear that the dragon beast of Revelation 12 and the scarlet beast of Revelation 17 is Leviathan. All of the details about Leviathan in the Old Testament coalesce in the portrait of Revelation.

After the millennium the **waters will revive once again**—because the wicked from **all the ages** will resurrect from the dead (Revelation 20:5, 7-9). Satan will reign **for a season** over the **multitudes**. Satan will entice them to surround the New Jerusalem and they will be like the river Euphrates at flood stage (this is the imagery behind **Psalm 46**). As they are about attempt to drown the city, the final drying up of the waters will take place. Notice how Ellen White describes this final drying up of the waters after the millennium:

*“He [Satan] rushes into the midst of his subjects and endeavors to inspire them with his own fury and arouse them to instant battle. But of all the countless millions whom he has allured into rebellion, there are none now to acknowledge his supremacy. His power is at an end. The wicked are filled with the same hatred of God that inspires Satan; but they see that their case is hopeless, that they cannot prevail against Jehovah. Their rage is kindled against Satan and those who have been his agents in deception, and with the fury of demons they turn upon them.” GC, p. 671.*

This portrayal by Ellen White is corroborated by the picture in **Ezekiel 28:2-10** where the nations will **unsheathe their swords** against the covering cherub, Lucifer.



## **“The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”**

by Pastor Stephen Bohr

# **LESSON #16 – THE LAST LINK IN THE PROPHETIC CHAIN**

### **Introduction**

In the course of Christian history, **many candidates** have proposed as the fulfillment of the **little horn** and **beast** prophecies of Daniel and Revelation: The **Kaiser**, Benito **Mussolini**, Adolph **Hitler**, Ayatollah **Khomeini**, Yasser **Arafat**, Henry **Kissinger**, Saddam **Hussein**, and most recently some have even suggested the name of President **Barack Obama**.

Obviously all of these were just **guesses**. But we do **not need** to guess. The Bible tells us exactly **when** the antichrist system would arise, **where** it would arise and **what** it would be like!

In this presentation we shall use a **disciplined, careful, contextual** approach. There will be no **guesswork**. I will use the **historical flow** method that gives us the **starting point**, the **ending point** and everything **in between**.

I will be speaking about **a system**, not the **individuals** who are in the system. I **implore you** to carefully **weigh** the evidence and then decide if what you have **seen is true!**

It is important to realize that in prophecy we are dealing with **symbols** that cannot be taken **literally**. Each symbol represents **something greater** than the mere symbol. Today we are going to study the prophecies of Daniel 7 and Revelation 13.

### **Winds and Sea**

**Daniel 7:1, 2:** Explanation of **winds** and **sea**

*“In the first year of Belshazzar king of Babylon, Daniel had a dream and visions of his head while on his bed. Then he wrote down the dream, telling the main facts. <sup>2</sup> Daniel spoke,*

saying, "I saw in my vision by night, and behold, the **four winds** of heaven were stirring up the **Great Sea.**"

**Note:** Winds represent wars among nations that that are struggling to ascend to power.

**Isaiah 17:12:** Waters represent multitudes of **nations and peoples.**

*"Woe to the multitude of **many people** who make a noise like the **roar of the seas**, and to the **rushing of nations** that make a rushing like the **rushing of mighty waters!**"*

## **Four Great Beasts**

**Daniel 7:3: Four Beasts**

*"And **four great beasts** came up from the sea, each different from the other."*

**Daniel 7:17:**

*"Those great beasts, which are four, are **four kings** which arise out of the earth."*

**NOTE:** These beasts represent **kings** that reign over a succession of **four kingdoms**. In the book of Daniel, the words 'kings' and 'kingdoms' are used interchangeably. This can be seen clearly in Daniel 2 where Nebuchadnezzar is told that he was the head of gold and after him another kingdom would arise. It is also seen in Daniel 7:23 where the fourth beast is called a 'fourth kingdom' that shall arise in the earth. Even today, each Nation has a **mascot**.

- The United States: **Eagle**
- Russia: **Bear**
- England: **Lion**
- China: **Dragon**

## **The Lion**

**Daniel 7:4: The LION**

*"The first was like a **lion**, and had **eagle's wings**. I watched till its **wings were plucked off**; and it was lifted up from the earth and made to stand on two feet like a man, and **a man's heart** was given to it."*

**NOTE:** The prophetic **chain begins** with Babylon, the kingdom in which Daniel lived. When King Nebuchadnezzar **built the ancient city** of Babylon he placed lion sphinxes at all of the main entrances to the city. In fact, **Jeremiah 51:38; 50:44** refers to Babylon as a lion. When Babylon ceased to be a conquering power, its wings were plucked and the lion's heart removed.

## **The Bear**

### **Daniel 7:5: The BEAR**

*"And suddenly another beast, a second, like a **bear**. It was raised up on **one side**, and had **three ribs** in its mouth between its teeth. And they said thus to it: 'Arise, devour much flesh!'"*

**NOTE:** The bear was higher on **one side** than the other because one of the two kingdoms was more prominent than the other.

In **Daniel 8** we are told that a ram had two horns, **one horn taller** than the other and the tallest one **came out last**. The two horns are identified as the kingdoms of the **Medes and Persians** (Daniel 8:20). History proves that the **first two kings** of the Medo-Persian dynasty were Medes but all the **rest were Persians**. The **three ribs** represent the three provinces that the Medes and Persians had to uproot to rise to power: **Lydia, Egypt and Babylon**. It bears noting that the book of Daniel itself identifies the second kingdom as Medo-Persia (Daniel 5).

## **The Leopard**

### **Daniel 7:6: The LEOPARD**

*"After this I looked, and there was another, like a **leopard**, which had on its back **four wings** of a bird. The beast also had **four heads**, and dominion was given to it.*

**NOTE:** The third empire is **Greece**. The **wings** represent speed of conquest. A leopard is swift but a leopard with four wings is even swifter! **Alexander the Great conquered** the world in only **9 years** and died in a drunken stupor when he was only 31 years old. When Alexander the Great died he left no successor so his kingdom **was divided** into four kingdoms: The **Antigonids**, the **Ptolomies**, **Seleucids**, and **Attalids**.

The parallel prophecy of Daniel 8 describes a he-goat that was **flying through the air** (as the leopard had wings) and defeated the ram. The he-goat had a **notable horn** that is identified as the first king (Alexander the Great). When the notable horn is broken, **four horns** come up in its place. The book of **Daniel itself** identifies the he-goat as the kingdom of Greece (Daniel 8:20).

## **The Dragon Beast**

### **Daniel 7:7: The DRAGON beast**

*"After this I saw in the night visions, and behold, a **fourth beast**, dreadful and terrible, exceedingly strong. It had **huge iron teeth**; it was devouring, breaking in pieces, and trampling the residue with its feet. It was different from all the beasts that were before it, and it had **ten horns**."*

**Note:** The ten horns are **not on the head** of the dragon beast when it rises to power. We will see in a moment that the horns **rise after the dragon** beast has ruled for a period of time.

## Ten Horns and Little Horn

**Daniel 7:8:** The little horn rises **after** the **ten horns** and **among them**.

*"I was considering the horns, and there was **another horn**, a little one, coming up **among them**, before whom **three of the first horns** were plucked out by the **roots**. And there, in this horn, were eyes like the eyes of a man, and **a mouth** speaking pompous words."*

## Three Stages

**Three stages:**

[1] The Dragon

[2] The Ten Horns

[3] The Little Horn

**Daniel 7:23, 24:** Three stages of the fourth beast so **ALL ARE ROMAN**

*"Thus he said: The fourth beast shall be a [1] **fourth kingdom** on earth, which shall be different from all other kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, trample it and break it in pieces. <sup>24</sup> The ten horns are ten kings who [2] **shall arise from this kingdom** and [3] **another shall rise after them**; he shall be different from the first ones, and shall subdue three kings.*

## Characteristics of the Little Horn

I want to share **seven characteristics** that will help us **identify the little horn**:

- Rises **after the ten** horns come up so it must rise **after the Roman Empire** was divided in the year **476 AD**.
- Being that it rises among the ten horns, it must have risen in western Europe. More specifically, it rises from the head of the **fourth beast** so it must be **Roman**.
- It **uproots three** of the ten kingdoms into which Europe was divided.

Daniel 7:25 gives us **four additional** characteristics:



## **Daniel 7:25:**

*“He shall speak **pompous words** against the Most High, shall **persecute the saints** of the Most High, and shall intend to **change times and law**. Then the saints shall be given into his hand for a **time and times and half a time**.”*

- It speaks **blasphemies** against the Most High
- It **persecutes** the saints of the Most High
- It had the audacity to attempt to **change God’s holy Law**
- It ruled for **time, times** and the dividing of time

There is **only one power** in the world that meets every single one of these specifications: The Roman Catholic Papacy.

Please **bear with me on this**. Don’t **shut off the DVD** player at this point no matter **how painful this might be**. My intention is **not to offend you**. I am speaking about a **system**, not the **individuals** who find themselves in the system. There are **millions of loving Christians** in the system that are unaware of what I am going to present.

#1 The papacy did rise to power in 538 AD **after** the Roman Empire **had been divided** into ten kingdoms

#2 The papacy did rise in **western Europe** and more specifically from the head of the fourth beast—**Rome**.

- Its official name is the **Roman Catholic** Church
- Its geographical location is in the ancient **city of Rome**
- Its official language is **Latin** and it uses **Roman numerals**
- It inherited its **organizational system** of the Roman Empire
- Its **architecture** is Roman
- It inherited many of its **religious beliefs and practices** from the pagan Roman empire including the observance of the **day of the Sun**.
- The name of its leader, ‘**supreme pontiff**’ was borrowed directly from the pagan Roman emperor.
- Scores of **historians** confirm that the Roman empire was **divided into ten kingdoms** and that the papacy **continued the legacy** of the Roman Empire.

#3 The papacy was instrumental in uprooting **three heretical kingdoms**: The Heruli (493), the Vandals (534), and the Ostrogoths (538)

#4 It did speak **blasphemies** against the Most High. WHAT IS **BLASPHEMY**? We must **allow the Bible** to explain what it means. It is not some **infidel atheist** who raises his **hand to heaven** and **openly defies** God. The Bible defines blasphemy in two ways:

**Mark 2:7**: One who claims to have the power to **forgive sins**.

*"Why does this Man speak **blasphemies** like this? Who can forgive sins but **God alone**?"*

In every Roman Catholic church there is a **confessional** where sinners come to confess their sins to the priest and to receive **absolution**. It is well known that Pope Francis I has declared that in the **year of mercy**, women who have **aborted children** can be forgiven by the priest as long as their **repentance is sincere**.

**John 10:30-33**: One who claims to be the **representative of God**

*"I and My Father are one." 31 Then the Jews took up stones again to stone Him. Jesus answered them, "Many good works I have shown you from My Father. For which of those works do you stone Me?" 33 The Jews answered Him, saying, "For a good work we do not stone You, but for **blasphemy**, and because You, being a Man, **make Yourself God**."*

# 5 The papacy **did persecute** the saints of the Most High.

What about the persecution of the faithful? During his pontificate, Pope **John Paul II** wrote a letter where he apologized to all of those who had been killed by misguided individuals in the church. Pope **Francis I** recently traveled to **Torre Pelici** and apologized to the Waldensians for the persecutions that the papacy launched against them. The story of the **Inquisition** is well known. **Juan Antonio Llorente** who himself was a member of the inquisition, minutely documented the atrocities that were committed by the papacy in the Spanish inquisition.

### **Inquisition in Lima, Peru**

A few years ago I had the privilege of visiting the city of **Lima, Peru**. There was one place I had always wanted to visit in Lima—the palace of the **Inquisition**. You see, Latin America had **three places** where the Inquisition functioned: **Colombia, Peru and Mexico**.

At the very entrance of the Palace there was a **large mural** that portrayed an **auto de Fe** in the **Plaza de Armas**. After our **tour guide** explained the various elements of the mural, we stepped into the **torture chamber**. I was amazed at how our young tour guide described **the methods** that were used to **torture and slay heretics** who disagreed with the teachings and practices of the Roman Catholic Church.

**As we entered the torture chamber on the right there was the Strappado:**

- The victim's **wrists were bound behind their back** with a rope and then the loose end of the rope was **tossed over a beam**.
- The victim would then be **slowly raised** with the rope with his arms behind his back. When the victim was high above the ground the rope was **abruptly released** and then **stopped** before the victim got to the ground thus **dislocating** his arms and shoulders.
- Sometimes weights of up to **25 pounds** were bound to the victim's feet to make the drop more precipitous and the dislocation more painful.

**Next there was the whipping post:**

- With **hands and feet** in the **stocks** the prisoner was beaten a minimum of **50 times** and a maximum of **200 times** on the back with a whip.

**A left-turn and on the left hand side there was the Rack:**

- The victim was **laid upon a table** face up with **arms and legs extended**. The victim's **ankles and wrists** were then tied with **ropes** that were attached to pulleys at the four ends of the table.
- **Wheels** at **either end** of the board were **turned** pulling the **legs downward** and the **arms upward**. As the ropes got **tighter and tighter** the body was stretched in **opposite directions**.
- As the victim was commanded to recant, the **shoulders, elbows, thighs and ankles** were **slowly** dislocated as the prisoner writhed in pain.

**On the right hand side was the Garrote**

- It was an instrument that **slowly strangled** the victim.
- The **hands and feet** were tied with rope to the arms and legs of the chair and a **noose was put around the neck**.
- In back of the chair was a **wheel** that worked as a **tourniquet**.
- The wheel was **slowly turned** and this **pulled the rope** tighter and tighter around the hands, feet and neck until the victim was **strangled**.

## Water boarding was next:

- Another left and we are at **a bench** where the victim was **laid down**, his **nostrils were pinched** shut and water was poured down **a funnel** into the **victim's throat**.
- Sometimes **a cloth** was forced down the throat while **pouring the water** causing the sensation of **suffocation by drowning**.

Then we went down deep into **underground tunnels** where **dungeons** had been hewn into the rock.

The **cubicles** were **barely larger than the person** who was placed in them.

For days they were shut in by the **cold** and in **absolute darkness** with barely enough room to **wiggle** without their **families even knowing** where they were.

As mentioned before, some more fortunate victims were taken to the **Plaza de Armas**, wood was placed **around their bodies**, they were chained to a **stake** and then they were **burned alive**.

#6 The papacy does claim to have **changed God Law**.

*“. . . the pope can **modify** divine law, since his power is not of man, **but of God**, and he acts **in the place of God upon earth**, with the fullest power of binding and losing his sheep.” (Lucius Ferraris, *Prompta Bibliotheca*, 8 volumes, vol. 2, article ‘Papa’).*

**Catechisms eliminate the Second** Commandment and divide the **tenth in two** parts.

Catechisms **present Sunday** as the day that we are supposed to **go to church** in honor of the resurrection of Jesus.

I have **pages and pages** of quotations from Roman Catholic **bishops, cardinals and popes** that Christ gave the Roman Catholic Church the right to change the day of worship from Sabbath to Sunday. **Available at SecretsUnsealed.org**.

#7 **Remember that we are dealing with symbols. The three and half** times are three and a half years. The word ‘times’ in **Daniel 4** is years.

## **Revelation 13: Four Beasts**

The beast represents the **same power** as the little horn for three reasons.

[1] It is in the **same location** in the **sequence** as the little horn in Daniel 7.

[2] It performs the **same activities** as the little horn.

[3].It rules for the **same period of time**.

**Revelation 13:1, 2:** The same sequence of powers. The beasts are in **reverse order**

*“Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads a blasphemous name. <sup>2</sup> Now the beast that I saw was like a [1] **leopard**, his feet were like the feet of a [2] **bear**, and his mouth like the mouth of a [3] **lion**. The [4] **dragon** gave him his power, his throne, and great authority.”*

**Revelation 13:7: Same actions:** War with **the saints**.

*“It was granted to him to make **war with the saints** and to overcome them. And authority was given him over every tribe, tongue, and nation.”*

**Revelation 13:5:** The **same actions** and **period of time**.

*“And he was given a mouth speaking great things and **blasphemies**, and he was given authority to continue for **forty-two months**.”*

### **End of the Third Stage: Captivity and Sword**

**Revelation 13:10:** The third stage ends when the beast is wounded by the **sword** and taken into **captivity**.

*“He who leads into **captivity** shall go into captivity; he who kills with the **sword** must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.”*

What is meant by the captivity of the beast?

It is **usually** explained as **Pope Pius VI** being taken captive to France in 1798 where he **died in exile**. But the meaning is much broader. Remember that the **beast does not represent any Pope** in particular but rather **the system** that ruled for 1260 years, from 538-1798 AD. The **entire system** was taken **captive** and thrown into prison in 1798. We will shortly have more to say about this.

What is represented by **the sword** that gave the deadly wound to the beast and what is the meaning of the deadly wound? Let’s speak first of all about the sword. The Bible describes **two swords**. The first is the word of God.

**Ephesians 6:17:** God has given the **church a sword**, the word of God. This is **not the sword** that gave the beast its deadly wound.

*“And take the helmet of salvation, and the **sword** of the Spirit, which is the **word of God**.”*

**Note:** This cannot be the sword that wounded the beast because the papacy did not use the Bible to slay the saints. The very sword that the papacy used to persecute the saints was used to give it the deadly wound. We must remember that symbols do not always mean the same thing—the context must be taken into account.

**Romans 13:1-4:** The sword represents the authority of the civil power to punish violations of civil law:

*“Let every soul be subject to the **governing authorities**. For there is no **authority** except from God and the authorities that exist are appointed by God. <sup>2</sup> Therefore whoever resists the authority resists the ordinance of God, and those who resist will bring judgment on themselves for **rulers** are not a terror to good works, but to evil. Do you want to be unafraid of the authority? Do what is good, and you will have praise from the same for he is God's minister to you for good. But if you do evil, be afraid; for he does not bear **the sword** in vain; for he is God's minister, an avenger to execute wrath on him who practices evil.”*

**Note:** The deadly wound **does not mean** that the Roman Catholic church **closed its doors** in 1798 and ceased to **function as a church**. The fact is that after Pope **Pius VI** was deposed the Roman Catholic church, as a church, **continued to function**. The faithful continued baptizing their **infants**, attending **mass** and **confessing their sins** to the priest. What was taken from the papacy was the power to use **the civil sword** to persecute as it had done in the past.

While the papacy is **permitted to use** the sword of the civil power to impose its doctrines and practices it is **free and alive**. But when it **loses the ability** to use the civil sword, it is **wounded and bound**.

The **best parallel** to this is found in the book of Revelation itself. Before the second coming of Jesus, Satan is **alive and free**, using the civil powers of the world to persecute the faithful. But when Jesus comes, all the kings of the earth are no longer alive to support Satan so Satan is **wounded and bound**. After the millennium the **kings resurrect** and Satan is released from his prison and is **alive and free** to attempt to take the **holy city**.

Cardinal Henry **Edward Manning** described very well what happened when the barbarians tore apart the Roman Empire:

*“Now the **abandonment of Rome** was the **liberation** of the pontiffs. Whatsoever claims to obedience the emperors may have made, and whatsoever compliance the Pontiff may have yielded, the whole previous relation, anomalous, and annulled again and again by the vices and outrages of the emperors, was finally dissolved by a **higher power**. The providence of God permitted a succession of **irruptions**, Gothic, Lombard, and Hungarian, to desolate Italy, and to **efface from it every remnant of the empire**. The pontiffs found themselves **alone**, the **sole fountains of order, peace, law, and safety**. And from the hour of this providential **liberation**, when, by a divine intervention, the **chains fell off** from the hands of the successor of St. Peter, as once before from his own, no sovereign has ever reigned in Rome except the Vicar of Jesus Christ.” Henry Edward Manning, The Temporal Power of the Vicar of Jesus Christ, Preface, pp. xxviii, xxix. London: Burns and Lambert, 1862*

“It [the papacy] waited until such a time as God should break its **bonds** asunder, and **should liberate it from subjection to civil powers**, and **enthroned it** in the possession of a temporal sovereignty of its own.” Henry Edward Manning, The Temporal Power of the Vicar of Jesus Christ (London: Burns & Lambert, second edition, 1862), pp. 11-13

### **The Fourth Stage: The Wound is Healed**

**Revelation 13:3:** After **ruling for 1260** years the papacy received a deadly wound and was led into **captivity** when the French government **took away the sword** of civil power. But prophecy affirms that the **wound will heal** and the papacy will be freed from her captivity to exercise global power. The **entire world** will wonder after the beast.

*“And I saw one of his heads as if it had been **mortally wounded**, and his deadly wound **was healed**. And all the world marveled and followed the beast.”*

### **The Beast from the Earth Heals the Wound**

**Revelation 13:11: Introductory verse.** Rises when the first beast is wounded and rises further west in a different place.

*“Then I saw another beast coming up out of **the earth**, and he had **two horns** like a **lamb** and spoke **like a dragon**.”*

- It arises when the first beast receives its **deadly wound**.
- It arises in a **different place** the first four beasts.
- It has to be a **political superpower** because it will lead the **whole world** to worship the first beast.
- It has to be an **economic superpower** because it will be able to forbid buying and selling.
- It will be a **global military power** because it will enforce a **global death decree** against those who do not worship the first beast.
- It is a contemporary of the first beast but is younger. It does not fight the previous beast to gain power but rather will end up helping the first beast recover its power.

**Revelation 13:12:** All the **authority of the first beast** on its behalf and makes **all worship** the first beast.

*“And he [1] **exercises all the authority** of the **first beast** [2] **in his presence**, and causes the earth and those who dwell in it to [3] **worship the first beast**, whose deadly wound was healed.”*

**Revelation 13:14:** **Makes an image** of and to the first beast. It will be a **reflection of the first beast**, a union of **church and state**.

*“And he deceives those who dwell on the earth by those signs which he was granted to do in the sight of the beast, telling those who dwell on the earth [4] **to make an image to the beast** who was **wounded by the sword** and lived.”*

**Revelation 13:16:** It will enforce the **mark of the beast**.

*“He **causes** all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, [5] **to receive a mark** on their right hand or on their foreheads.”*

### **The Two Horns like a Lamb**

The **closest parallel** to the beast that has two horns like a lamb is found in Daniel 8:3

**Daniel 8:3:** A **ram** with **two horns**.

*“Then I lifted my eyes and saw, and there, standing beside the river, was **a ram** which had **two horns**, and the two horns were high; but one was higher than the other, and the higher one came up last.”*

**Daniel 8:20:** The **two kingdoms** in **one nation** are the **Medes and Persians**.

*“The ram which you saw, having the two horns ó they are the **kings of Media and Persia**.”*

**Matthew 22:19-21:** **Which two** kingdoms did Jesus, **the Lamb**, recognize?

*“Show Me the tax money.” So they brought Him a denarius. **20** And He said to them, “Whose image and inscription is this?” **21** They said to Him, “Caesar’s.” And He said to them, “Render therefore to **Caesar** the things that are Caesar’s, and to **God** the things that are God’s.”*

**Matthew 4:8-10:** Jesus **rejected the kingdoms** of this world.

*“Again, the devil took Him up on an exceedingly high mountain, and showed Him all the **kingdoms of the world** [same expression as in **John 18:36**] and their glory. **9** And he said to Him, “All these things I will give You if You will fall down and worship me.” **10** Then Jesus said to him, “Away with you, Satan! For it is written, ‘You shall worship the **LORD** your God and Him only you shall serve.’”*

**John 18:36:** Jesus recognized **two separate kingdoms** in **one nation**. Pilate recognized the same when he told the Jews to judge Jesus **according to their law**.

*“Jesus answered, “**My kingdom** is not of **this world**. If My kingdom were **of this world**, My servants would fight, so that I should not be delivered to the Jews; but now **My kingdom is not from here**.”*

Jesus called His kingdom ‘the kingdom of heaven’ or the ‘kingdom of the church’. He **never appealed** to the **Roman state** to aid Him in the preaching of His message.



He **rebuked James and John** when they wished to destroy the Samaritan villages that refused to allow Jesus to pass through them.

He refused to be made king after He fed **the 5,000**.

He severely **rebuked Peter** for using his sword to defend Jesus when the temple guard came to arrest Him. Jesus did not come to take over the reins of the state, He came to implant the principles of His kingdom in the human heart:

**Luke 17:20-21:** Jesus **did not come** to take over the reins of civil power

*"Now when He was asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God would come, He answered them and said, "The kingdom of God does not come with observation [with an external display of power]; **21** nor will they say, 'See here!' or 'See there!' For indeed, the kingdom of God is **within you.**"*

So, clearly, Jesus the Lamb recognized the existence of **two kingdoms, separate** from one another. So the two lamblike horns on the head of the land beast represent **two kingdoms** in one nation. You might say: The United States is certainly **one nation** but does it have **two kingdoms**?

## **Constitutional Fathers and the Bible**

Even though the Founding Fathers were not churchgoers, they were well acquainted with the **Bible** and with **history**.

1. They had great admiration for Christ and knew all about His **trial, sentencing and execution** by a union of the **apostate Jewish Church** with the Roman State.
2. They were also well aware of the persecution that befell the **apostolic church** at the hands of the Roman State by the instigation of the apostate Jewish Church.
3. They knew about how the **papacy persecuted** those who disagreed with its doctrines and practices.
4. They knew all about the **Colonial period** where people who were not member of the established religion were deprived of their civil and religious liberty.

## **The Founding Documents**

The documents that founded the United States are remarkable indeed. Shortly before 1798, in **1776** the **Declaration of Independence** affirmed that all men are created equal and that they have certain inalienable rights among which are life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness.

In **1787** the **Constitution** of the United States was ratified that established a government of the people, by the people and for the people.

And in **1791** the **Bill of Rights** (the first Ten Amendments to the Constitution) was ratified which guarantees **religious and civil liberties**.

All of these documents were ratified **immediately before** the papacy received its deadly wound in **1798**. Just as prophecy predicted, God, in His providence, was preparing the **next world super power** to appear on the stage even as the previous power **was about to be** mortally wounded.

An examination of the writings of the constitutional fathers reveals that they firmly believed in the existence of **two kingdoms** in the **United States** that were to forever **remain separate**. According to their view the church was to use the **spiritual sword** of the Spirit to persuade through the preaching of the Word while the state was to use the **material sword** to preserve the civil order.

The **new nation** was established upon **two great principles**:

- **Republicanism** (representative civil government with the civil sword)
- **Protestantism** (representative religious government with the religious sword)

During the Middle Ages all civil matters were decided and imposed by the **king** and all religious matters were decided and enforced by the **Pope**. The power flowed from **top to bottom**. When the king spoke in civil matters and the Pope spoke in religious matters, the people were simply expected to **obey without question**.

The constitutional fathers established a **revolutionary system** of government that flowed from **the bottom up**—a government **of the people, by the people and for the people** in which citizens would enjoy full civil and religious liberty.

The **foundational idea** behind this concept was that of **two kingdoms in one nation**, each with its own sword and separate from one another. This was one of the most revolutionary experiments in the history of the world. Ellen White, who was born only 29 years after the deadly wound wrote:

*“The **founders** of the nation wisely sought to guard against the **employment of secular power** on the part of the church, with its inevitable result--intolerance and persecution.” GC, p. 442*

In this way the founding fathers **rejected the Roman Catholic view** that it is legitimate for the church to use the power of the state to enforce its beliefs and practices. Instead the Founding Fathers established a government that **returned to the view of church and state** that had characterized Jesus and the earliest church, one that separated church and state and guaranteed the freedom to worship God according to the dictates of conscience.

Let's take a look at several statements from the writings of the Founders of the Nation:

### **George Washington**

George Washington, who presided over the Constitutional Convention that ratified the Constitution stated:

*"If I could have entertained the slightest apprehension that the Constitution framed by the convention where I had the honor to preside might possibly endanger the religious rights of **any ecclesiastical society**, certainly I **would never have placed my signature on it**; and if I could now conceive that the general government might ever be so administered as to render the liberty of conscience insecure, I beg you will be persuaded that no one would be more zealous than myself to establish **effectual barriers against the horrors of spiritual tyranny and every species of religious persecution**. For, you doubtless remember, I have often expressed my sentiments that any man, conducting himself as a **good citizen** and being **accountable to God alone for his religious opinions**, ought to be **protected** in worshipping the Deity according to the dictates of his own conscience." George Washington to the Baptist Delegation, August 8, 1789.*

### **Benjamin Franklin**

*"When religion is good, I conceive that it will **support itself**; and when it does not support itself, and God does not take care to support it, so that its professors are obliged to call for the **help of the civil powers**, 'tis a sign, I apprehend, of it being **a bad one**." (Quoted in Clifford Goldstein, Day of the Dragon, p. 77)*

### **Thomas Jefferson**

I have had the privilege of visiting the **Jefferson Monument** in Washington D. C. several times. Etched on the Monument are the following words:

*"Almighty God hath created the **mind free**. All attempts to influence it by **temporal punishment or burdens**. . . are a departure from the plan of the Holy Author of our religion. . . No man shall be **compelled** to frequent or support any religious worship or ministry or shall otherwise suffer on account of his religious opinions or belief, but all men **shall be free** to profess and by argument to maintain, their opinions in matters of religion. I know but one code of morality for men whether acting singly or collectively."*

### **Jefferson once wrote:**

*"The legitimate powers of government extend to such acts only as are **injurious to others**. It does me no injury for my neighbor to say that there are twenty gods, or no gods. It neither picks my pocket nor breaks my leg." (Thomas Jefferson, Writings, p. 285)*

Jefferson wrote in **1782**:

*"It is error alone which needs the support of government. **Truth can stand by itself.**"*  
(Thomas Jefferson, Notes on Virginia, 1782; from George Seldes, ed., The Great Quotations, Secaucus, New Jersey: Citadel Press, 1983, p. 363)

Notice how Jefferson warned against the **clergy using the power of the state** to enforce religion:

*"The **clergy**, by getting themselves established by law and **ingrafted into the machine of government**, have been a very formidable engine against the **civil and religious** rights of man." (Letter to J. Moor, 1800)*

*"History, I believe, furnishes **no example** of a **priest-ridden people maintaining a free civil government.**" (Letter to von Humboldt, 1813)*

*"In every country and in every age, **the priest has been hostile to liberty.** He is always in alliance with the despot, abetting his abuses in return for protection to his own." (Letter to H. Spafford, 1814)*

## **Danbury Baptism Association**

In a letter addressed to the **Danbury Baptist Association in 1802**, Thomas Jefferson expressed his understanding of the **first two clauses** of the first amendment by using the **metaphor of the wall** which he most likely borrowed from Roger Williams:

*"Believing with you [**the Danbury Baptists**] that **religion** is a matter which lies solely between Man and his God, that he owes account to none other for **his faith** or **his worship**, that the legitimate powers of government reach actions only, and not opinions, I contemplate with sovereign reverence that act of the whole American people which declared that their legislature should "make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof," thus **building a wall of separation between Church and State.**"*

It will be noticed that the **third clause** of the first amendment guarantees full **civil rights**—freedom of speech, freedom of the press, freedom of assembly and freedom to petition the government for a redress of grievances.

## **James Madison Statements**

**James Madison**, who is called the '**Father of the Constitution,**' expressed his views on the relationship between religion and the government:

*"There is **not a shadow of right** in the general government to intermeddle with religion. Its **least interference** with it [religion] would be a most flagrant usurpation. I can appeal to my uniform conduct on this subject that I have warmly supported religious freedom."*

Madison affirmed in **1822** that the United States was teaching the world **two most important truths**:

*“We are teaching the world the great truth that Governments do better without Kings and Nobles than with them [**republicanism**]. The merit will be doubled by the **other lesson** that Religion flourishes in greater purity, **without** than with the aid of Government [**Protestantism**].”* [James Madison, Letter to Edward Livingston, July 10, 1822 The Writings of James Madison, Gaillard Hunt].

Sometimes when I am lecturing on this subject I ask the question: **To how many kingdoms** do Christians belong? They actually belong to **two**.

The fact is that Christians are **citizens of two kingdoms** in the **same country**. We are citizens of the United States **by birth** and we are citizens of the heavenly kingdom by the **new birth**. We have an **earthly passport** that identifies our earthly country of origin and we have a **heavenly passport**, the blood of the Lamb, which identifies us as citizens of Christ’s heavenly kingdom, the church.

### **John Adams and the Treaty of Tripoli**

On **June 10, 1797**, the **year before** the deadly wound was given to the Roman Catholic papacy, president **John Adams** signed into law the **Treaty of Tripoli** that unambiguously stated:

*“The Government of the United States is **not in any sense** founded upon the Christian religion.”*

Some have been **troubled** by the **wording** in this treaty strongly arguing that the United States was founded upon the **Christian religion**. However, if the constitutional fathers had founded the United States upon the Christian religion, this would have been an **establishment of religion** which is unconstitutional!! The United States is not a Christian Nation; it is a **nation of Christians**.

Notably, President Adams sent this treaty to the Senate in **May of 1797** where it was **read aloud** to all of the senators who were present and **printed copies** were also given to each Senator. The vote to ratify the treaty **was unanimous!** Notably, the treaty was printed in full in several **newspapers** in **Philadelphia and New York** City and there was not even a whimper of protest from the general public. None of the Senators paid a heavy price for signing the treaty.

### **The First Amendment**

Frequently Christian activists will also say that separation of church and state appears **nowhere in the Constitution**. This is true if we mean that the **actual expression**: *“separation of church and state”* is not in the Constitution. Although the specific expression

is not found in the Constitution, **the concept is clearly and explicitly contained** in the First Amendment to the Constitution:

*“Congress shall make no law respecting an **establishment of religion** [clause #1], or prohibiting the **free exercise thereof** [clause #2]; or abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press; or the right of the people peaceably to assemble, and to petition the Government for a redress of grievances [clause #3].”*

Notice that the **intent** of the First Amendment is not to forbid the establishment of **a church** or **a religion** over and above another church or another religion. The word ‘religion’ in the First Amendment is not preceded by a **definite or an indefinite** article.

Clearly, the First Amendment forbids Congress from drawing up laws that have anything to do with religion, period. In this sense the Constitution clearly contains the concept of the **separation of church and state** because the state is forbidden to **make laws** that **establish** religion or **prohibit** its free exercise. Thus the state can have **nothing to do with religion** except to protect everyone’s right to practice it freely according to the dictates of their own conscience.

Notably, the third clause of the First Amendment guarantees **full civil rights**. Thus the First Amendment contains the idea of **full civil and religious liberty!!**

## **The Supreme Court**

It seems preposterous that the United States could ever write into law a **Sunday law** and an **anti-Sabbath law** especially in light of the fact that the First Amendment **strictly forbids** congress from making any law that establishes religion and forbids its free exercise. How could this ever happen? The answer is found in our system of government. Our government is composed of three branches:

- **Legislative**: Writes the laws
- **Executive**: Enforces the laws
- **Judicial**: Interprets the laws

The **most powerful** branch of government is the **judicial branch**, particularly the Supreme Court. This tribunal has **nine justices** and it is their role to determine if a law is **constitutional**. **How will** a beast with lamblike horns speak like a dragon?

- The composition of the **Supreme Court**: Six Roman Catholics.
- The **2000 election**.
- The Supreme Court on June 26, 2015 legalized **gay marriage** on a federal level and there is **no court of appeal**.

- The fact that there are **6 Roman Catholics** on the Court.
- How **unconstitutional laws** will be declared constitutional and vice versa.
- **Daniel 3 and 6** as an illustration.

## **Worship, Sign and Authority**

The [1] **first angel** commands true [2] **worship to the creator** whose [3] **sign is the Sabbath**:

**Revelation 14:6, 7**: Command to **worship the Creator** whose **sign of allegiance** is the **Sabbath**

*“Then I saw another angel flying in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach to those who dwell on the earth ó to every nation, tribe, tongue, and people <sup>7</sup> saying with a loud voice, “Fear God and give glory to Him, for the hour of His judgment has come; and **worship Him** who **made** heaven and earth, the sea and springs of water.” [a reference to **creation and the fourth commandment**]*

On the other hand, the [1] **beast** commands [2] **false worship** whose sign is the [3] **change in the Law**. Thus at the heart of the final conflict is the **issue of authority**.

**Revelation 14:9-11**: Warning against worshipping **the beast** that we have identified as **the papacy** and receiving **his mark**, a sign of allegiance to him.

*“Then a third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, “If anyone **worships** the **beast** and his image, and receives **his mark** on his forehead or on his hand, <sup>10</sup> he himself shall also drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out full strength into the cup of His indignation. He shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb. <sup>11</sup> And the smoke of their torment ascends forever and ever; and they have no rest day or night, who **worship the beast** and his image, and whoever receives **the mark** of his name.”*

## **Claims to Divine Power**

**Roman Catholics** might say that the papacy does **not claim to be God** or **demand worship** and therefore the **third angel’s message** does not apply to it.

However, there are several **clear indications** that the papacy does claim the **prerogatives of God**. If the papacy claims to exercise the **prerogatives of God** it is claiming to be God!

- **2 Thessalonians 2:3, 4**: The papacy sits in the **temple of God** claiming to be God

- **Pope Leo XIII** stated in an Encyclical Letter dated June 20, 1894: “*We hold upon this earth the place of God Almighty.*” (The Great Encyclical Letters of Leo XIII, p. 304)
- Its leader is called ‘**holy father**’ when Jesus forbade us from calling any man on earth our Father (Matthew 23:9)
- Popes have since time immemorial allowed individuals to **bow before them** even to the point of **kissing their ring** and **feet!** In contrast, **Peter** refused to allow Cornelius to bow before him (Acts 10:25, 26)
- The papacy claims to have the power to **forgive sins**
- The papacy claims that it had authority to **change the day of worship** from Sabbath to Sunday
- At Vatican Council I in **1870** the dogma of **papal infallibility** was proclaimed
- The papacy has claimed to have power to **set up kings** and remove them
- Popes have claimed that they **can judge all** but can be judged by no one
- The papacy claims to have the power to **create the Creator** in the sacrifice of the Mass:

*“Thus the priest may, in a certain manner, be called **the creator of his Creator**, since by saying the words of consecration, he creates, as it were, Jesus in the sacrament, by giving him a sacramental existence, and produces him as a victim to be offered to the eternal Father. As in creating the world it was sufficient for God to have said, Let it be made, and it was create—He spoke, and they were made—so it is sufficient for the priest to say, ‘Hoc est corpus meum,’ and behold the bread is no longer bread, but the body of Jesus Christ. ‘The power of the priest,’ says St. Bernardine of Sienna, ‘is the power of the divine person; for the transubstantiation of the bread requires **as much power as the creation of the world.**” St. Alphonsus de Liguori, Dignity and Duties of the Priest or Selva, pp. 33-34.*

### **So what is the Sequence of Powers?**

Where are we right now in the course of prophetic history? We are in a **period of respite** from persecution just before the next to last stage:

- **Babylon** (605-539)
- **Medes and Persians** (539-331)
- **Greece** (331-168)



- **Roman Empire** (168-476)
- **Divided Roman Empire** (476-538)
- **Papal Rome** rules for **1260 years** (538-1798)
- **Deadly wound** by France (1798)
- The rise of the beast with **lamblike horns** (1798)
- **WE ARE HERE**: A **period of respite** from persecution (the last **200+ years**)
- The **last event** in the drama: THE LAND BEAST RETURNS POWER TO THE SEA BEAST.

## **We are in the Period of the Deadly Wound**

**Jesuit scholar, Malachi Martin stated in 1986:**

*“[For] **fifteen hundred years** and more, Rome had kept as strong a hand as possible in each local community around the wide world. By and large, and admitting some exceptions, that had been the Roman view until **two hundred years of inactivity** had been **imposed** upon the papacy **by the major secular powers of the world.**” Quoted in Christianity Today (November 21, 1986), p. 26.*

This is an **extraordinary statement**. If we move **200 years backwards** in time from 1986, we end up at the time of the **French Revolution** and the deadly wound when France **took away the power of the sword** from the papacy. Thus Martin is admitting that the papacy has been inactive for the past 200 years **because secular governments** have not given her the power of the sword.

## **The Healing of the Wound**

But **Ellen G. White**, who wrote **one hundred years before** Martin, predicted that the restraints now imposed by the secular governments of the world will be **removed** and the papacy will recover the civil sword:

*“Let the **restraints** now imposed by **secular governments** be removed and Rome be **reinstated** in her former power, and there would speedily be a **revival** of her tyranny and persecution.” GC, p. 564*

The **wound will be healed** when the **beast with lamblike horns** (the United States) helps the first beast recover its power. We are told that at that time **every country on the globe** will follow the example of the United States:

*“As America, the land of religious liberty, shall **unite with the papacy** in forcing the conscience and compelling men to honor the false sabbath, **the people of every country on the globe** will be led to follow her example.” 6T, p. 18*

Right now we are at the **very end of the prophetic chain**—the moment when the deadly wound will be healed! And there are clear signs that the United States is **cozying up with the papacy**.

## **A Troubling Scenario**

I was in **Philadelphia** for the pope’s recent visit to the United States. A million souls from **every religious persuasion** and **every country** on the globe made great financial sacrifices to come and see and hear him.

The **relationship** between the papacy and the government of the United States is getting **closer and closer**. From the [1] **Holy Alliance** between the United States and the Vatican to overthrow the Soviet Union, to the Pope [2] **helping President Obama** establish diplomatic relations with **Cuba**, to the speaking to a [3] **joint session** of Congress, to the Pope visiting the [4] **White House** to discuss policy matters. Should this concern us? Where are the voices to raise the alarm?

## **Protestants are no More**

Sadly, today most Christians are looking to the **Middle East** for the fulfillment of Bible prophecy and therefore the powers that will play a role in the fulfillment of prophecy are **hidden from sight** and practically all nations **marvel** after the papacy.

**Great Protestant leaders** have lined up to go to the Vatican: Tony Palmer, Joel Osteen, James Robison, Rick Warren and Kenneth Copland.

## **Fulton Sheen**

Think about what has happened in **Philadelphia** and then read the following two verses and a remark by Archbishop Fulton Sheen:

**John 17:14**: The **world hates** rather than loves those who are faithful.

*“I have given them Your word; and the world has **hated them** because they are **not of the world**, just as I am not of the world.”*

## **Revelation 13:3**

*“And I saw one of his heads as if it had been mortally wounded, and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world **marveled and followed the beast**.”*

In the decade of the **1950's** Protestants in the United States were extremely **suspicious** of the Roman Catholic papacy and **strongly disliked** it.

In **1955** (60 years ago) **Fulton Sheen, apologist** and **radio and television pioneer** of Roman Catholicism, came on the airwaves with the following message:

*"If I were **not** a Catholic, and were looking for the true Church in the world today, I would look for the one Church which **did not get along well with the world**; in other words, I would look for the Church which **the world hated**. My reason for doing this would be, that if Christ is in any one of the churches of the world today, He **must still be hated** as He was when He was on earth in the flesh. If you would find Christ today, then find the Church that **does not get along with the world**. Look for the Church that is **hated by the world** as Christ was hated by the world. Taken from Radio Replies, Vol. 1, p IX, Rumble & Carty, Tan Publishing*

The papacy is no longer disliked so we should ask: Is the papal system now a counterfeit church **because it is loved**? Would he say the same today or would he say that the **most popular** and loved church in the world **is the true church**?

### **Why do we Exist?**

*"In a special sense Seventh-day Adventists have been set in the world as **watchmen** and **light bearers**. To them has been entrusted the **last warning** for a perishing world. On them is shining wonderful light from the word of God. They have been given a work of the **most solemn import**--the proclamation of the first, second, and third angels' messages. There is no other work of **so great importance**. They are to allow **nothing else** to absorb their attention." *9T*, p. 19*





## **“The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”**

**by Pastor Stephen Bohr**

# **LESSON #17 – CHRIST AND ANTICHRIST**

### **A False Impression**

**1 Thessalonians 4:15-17**: The **second coming** of Jesus

*“For this we say to you by the word of the Lord, that **we who are alive and remain** until the coming of the Lord will by no means precede those who are asleep. **16** For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of God. And the dead in Christ will rise first. **17** Then **we who are alive and remain** shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Lord.”*

**2 Thessalonians 2:1, 2**: **The second coming is not imminent**

*“Now, brethren, concerning the coming [**parousia**] of our Lord Jesus Christ and our gathering together **to Him**, we ask you, **2** not to be soon shaken in mind or troubled, either by **spirit** [vision] or by **word** [**an oral report**] or by **letter**, as if from us, **as though the day of Christ had come.**”*

### **The Apostasy**

**2 Thessalonians 2:3**: Emphasis on the word ‘**apostasy**’

*“Let no one **deceive you** by any means; for **that Day** [**the parousia**] will not come unless **the** [**the definite article denotes a specific apostasy**] **falling away** [**the word is apostasia with the definite article**] comes **first**, and the man of sin is revealed, the son of perdition . . .”*

**Note**: The apostasy must take place before the *Parousia* of Jesus. The word ‘apostasy’ is used classical Greek to describe a boat that is not well anchored at port and is slowly drifting away. A boat cannot drift away from the port unless it was at the port. This verse is referring to a drifting away from the apostolic gospel.

## **The Man of Sin**

**2 Thessalonians 2:3**: Emphasis on the expression '**the man of sin**'.

*"Let no one deceive you by any means; for that Day will not come unless the falling away comes first, and **the man of sin** is revealed, the son of perdition . . ."*

**1 John 3:4**: Sin is the **transgression of the law** so the antichrist must in some way encourage people to sin. This is further confirmed by the fact that the apostasy is called 'the mystery of **lawlessness**'.

"Whoever commits sin also commits lawlessness, and sin is **lawlessness**."

**Daniel 7:25**: One is reminded of the **little horn** that would arise the fragmentation of the Roman Empire and would think to change God's Law:

*"He shall speak pompous words against the Most High, shall persecute\* the saints of the Most High, and **shall intend to change times and law**. Then the saints shall be given into his hand for a time and times and half a time."*

## **The Man of Sin is Revealed**

**2 Thessalonians 2:3**: Emphasis on the expression 'is revealed'. The antonym of the word 'revealed' is '**concealed**'. The man of sin concealed his ugly head until the time came for him to openly reveal himself.

*"Let no one deceive you by any means; for that Day will not come unless the falling away comes first, and the man of sin **is revealed**, the son of perdition . . ."*

## **The Son of Perdition**

**2 Thessalonians 2:3**: Emphasis on the expression '**son of perdition**'.

*"Let no one deceive you by any means; for that Day will not come unless the falling away comes first, and the man of sin is revealed, the **son of perdition** . . ."*

## **Judas Iscariot**

**John 17:12**: Jesus referred to Judas Iscariot with the **same name** so the character of the antichrist must bear a marked resemblance to the character of Judas.

*"While I was with them in the world, I kept them in Your name. Those whom You gave Me I have kept; and none of them is lost except **the son of perdition**, that the Scripture might be fulfilled."*

## The Nature of the Antichrist

There is a fundamental confusion in the Christian World about the nature of the antichrist. Most **conservative Protestants** teach that the antichrist will be an **evil individual** that will sit in a rebuilt **Jewish temple** for three and a half **literal years** and will **openly defy God** and blaspheme His name.

- Practically all Bible scholars agree that the man of sin, the little horn and the beast all represent **the same power**. It is noteworthy that in Prophecy a beast **represents a kingdom**, not an individual person.
- Prophecy informs us that the little horn would rule for a period of **1260 years**. It is rather obvious that no individual has lived that long!
- The man of sin already **existed in the days of the apostle Paul** but was being restrained. This same man of sin will be **destroyed by the brightness of Christ's coming**. There is not a person on planet earth who was alive in the days of Paul and will still be alive when Jesus comes.
- The expression 'the man of sin' (masculine/singular) would seem to refer to an individual. However, the masculine singular is used in **other contexts** for a succession of persons and not for lone individuals. For example, in **Hebrews 9:7** the expression 'the priest' (masculine/singular) describes a succession of priests. Likewise in **1 Samuel 8:11** the expression 'the king' (masculine/singular) is used of a succession of kings. Finally, **2 Timothy 3:17** uses the expression 'the man of God' to describe all Christians of all times.

The Scriptures teach that the antichrist will be **political/religious system** possessing the same character qualities as Judas. It will be ambitious, covetous, and desirous of an earthly kingdom. While overtly professing loyalty to Christ, the antichrist will work covertly to betray Him.

**Dave Hunt** captured well the character of the antichrist:

*"While the Greek prefix 'anti' generally means 'against' or 'opposed to,' it can also mean '**in the place of**' or '**a substitute for.**' The Antichrist will embody both meanings. He will **oppose Christ while pretending to be Christ**. Instead of a **frontal assault** against Christianity, the evil one will **pervert the church from within** by posing as its founder. He will cunningly misrepresent Christ while **pretending to be Christ**. And right here is where the plot thickens. If the Antichrist will indeed pretend to be the Christ, then his **followers must be 'Christians!'**"*  
Dave Hunt, Global Peace, p. 7-8.

The Greek word *antichristos* has the same basic meaning, as does *Vicarius Filii Dei* in Latin. Most people assume that the word antichrist means ‘one who is against Christ.’ It is true that in Greek the preposition *anti* can mean ‘against’ when it is used with a verb. But it is equally true that this preposition, when it is used as a **prefix to a noun** means ‘instead of,’ or ‘in place of.’ In classical Greek, for example, the word *antibasileus* means ‘one who occupies the place of the king.’ In the New Testament, the name Herod **Antipas** means that Herod ruled ‘in place of’ his father.’ (Revelation 2:13) The word **antitype** means ‘that which takes the place of the type.’ Christ is spoken of as having given His life as a ransom in place of (**antilitron**) all (I Timothy 2:6). Thus the word *antichristos* in Greek and *Vicarius Filii Dei* in Latin bear a very similar meaning!

So the antichrist will not be an **atheistic and blasphemous** individual **openly attacking** Christianity but rather a system that will claim to act **in the place and name** of Christ. One is reminded of the strategy that has characterized **Jesuit Pope Francis I** during his pontificate:

*“When appearing as members of their order, they wore a **garb of sanctity**, visiting **prisons and hospitals**, ministering to the **sick and the poor**, professing to have **renounced the world**, and bearing the sacred name of Jesus, who went about **doing good**. But **under this blameless exterior** the most criminal and deadly purposes were **concealed**.”* *GC*, pp. 234, 235

The **best description** of the character of the Papacy that I have ever read is in the book *The Great Controversy*:

*“It is a part of her policy to assume the character which will best accomplish her purpose; but **beneath** the variable **appearance** of the chameleon she **conceals** the invariable **venom** of the serpent.”* *GC*, p. 571

Let’s examine the character qualities of Judas Iscariot:

### **A Shrewd Administrator**

The gospels portray Judas as a **shrewd politician and a sharp businessman** who craved the praise of the world. He carried the moneybag. Ellen White describes this quality:

*“He had come more into contact with the world than they, he was a man of **good address**, of **discernment** and **executive ability**, and, having a **high estimate of his own qualifications**, he had led the disciples to hold him in the same regard. But the methods he desired to introduce into Christ’s work were based upon **worldly principles** and were controlled by **worldly policy**.”* *Education*, p. 93.

*“But Judas was a **speculator**. He thought that he could manage the **finances of the church**, and by his **sharpness in business** get gain. He was divided in heart. He **loved the praise of the world**. He refused **to give up the world** for Christ. He never committed his eternal interests to Christ. He had a **superficial religion**, and therefore he speculated upon his*



Master and betrayed Him to the priests, being fully persuaded that **Christ would not allow** Himself to be taken. Judas was a **religious fraud**. He held up a high standard for others, but he himself utterly failed to reach the Bible standard. He did not bring the religion of Christ into his life." 5BC, pp. 1101, 1102

"Judas summed up all the disciples, and flattered himself that the church would often be brought into **perplexity and embarrassment** if it were not for **his ability as a manager**. Judas regarded himself as the capable one, who could not be overreached. In his own estimation he was **an honor to the cause**, and as such he always represented himself." DA, p. 717

## **Judas Coveted an Earthly Kingdom**

It was Judas' strong desire that Jesus would establish an earthly kingdom. Contrary to what many think, Judas did not deliver Jesus so that He would die. He betrayed Jesus in the hopes that He would deliver Himself and establish an earthly kingdom.

"Judas was first to take advantage of the enthusiasm excited by the miracle of the loaves. **It was he** who set on foot the project to take Christ by force and make Him king. **His hopes were high**. His disappointment was bitter" DA, pp. 718, 719.

### **John 6:15:**

When Jesus fed the five thousand it was Judas who encouraged the crowd to take Jesus by force to make Him King. But Jesus would have none of it:

"Therefore when Jesus perceived that they were about to come and take Him **by force** to **make Him king**, He departed again to the mountain by Himself alone."

### **John 6:64, 70, 71**

"But there are some of you who do not believe." For Jesus knew **from the beginning** who they were who did not believe, and who would betray Him . . . 70 Jesus answered them, "Did I not choose you, the twelve, and one of you is **a devil**?" 71 He spoke of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon, for it was he who would betray Him, being **one of the twelve**."

'Notwithstanding the Savior's own teaching, Judas was **continually advancing** the idea that Christ would reign as **king in Jerusalem**. At the feeding of the five thousand he tried to bring this about . . . **It was he** who set on foot the project to take Christ by force and make Him king. His hopes were high. His disappointment was bitter." DA, pp. 718, 719

When Jesus washed the feet of the disciples, it was the straw that broke the camel's back:

If Jesus could so humble Himself, he thought, **He could not be Israel's king**. All hope of **worldly honor** in a **temporal kingdom** was destroyed. Judas was satisfied that there was nothing to be gained by following Christ. After seeing Him **degrade Himself**, as he thought, he

*was confirmed in his purpose to disown Him, and confess himself deceived. He was possessed by a demon, and he resolved to complete the work he had agreed to do in betraying his Lord.”* DA, p. 645

## **Judas Coveted Money and Feigned a Love for the Poor**

According to **Matthew 8:19-21** Judas **offered to become** one of Jesus’ disciples and Jesus informed him that there would be **no financial benefit** if he did:

*“Then a certain scribe came and said to Him, “Teacher, I will follow You wherever You go.” **20** And Jesus said to him, “Foxes have holes and birds of the air have nests, but the **Son of Man** has nowhere to lay His head.”*

**John 12:4-6:** Judas not only coveted earthly **political power** but he also **coveted money**. When Jesus **refused both**, Judas chose to betray Him:

*“But one of His disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon’s son, who would betray Him, said, **5** “Why was this fragrant oil not sold for three hundred denarii and **given to the poor?**” **6** This he said, **not that he cared for the poor**, but because he was **a thief**, and had the **money box**; and he used to take what was put in it.”*

**Luke 22:3-6:** He betrayed Jesus **for money**

*“Then **Satan entered Judas**, surnamed Iscariot, who was numbered among the twelve. **4** So he went his way and conferred with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray Him to them. **5** And they were glad, and **agreed to give him money**. **6** So he promised and sought opportunity to betray Him to them in the absence of the multitude.”*

*“Judas had naturally a strong love for money; but he had not always been corrupt enough to do such a deed as this. He had fostered the evil spirit of avarice until it had become the ruling motive of his life. The love of mammon overbalanced his love for Christ. Through becoming the slave of one vice he gave himself to Satan, to be driven to any lengths in sin.” DA, p. 716*

## **Became Satan’s Vicar**

After feeding the 5,000 Jesus referred to Judas as ‘a devil’. Jesus knew that Judas was the ringleader in the movement to force Him to take over the reins of the civil government to become King.

**John 6:70, 71:** Jesus referred to Judas as a devil:

*“Jesus answered them, “Did I not choose you, the twelve, and one of you is **a devil?**” **71** He spoke of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon, for it was he who **would betray Him**, being one of the twelve.”*

**John 13:2:** As Satan had done in heaven, Judas feigned support for Jesus while he was secretly undermining Him. At this point Judas had not yet passed the point of no return:

*"And supper being ended, **the devil** having already put it into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray Him . . ."*

### **John 13:27**

*"Now after the piece of bread, Satan entered him. Then Jesus said to him, "What you do, do quickly."*

*"Judas became **a representative** of the enemy of Christ." DA, p. 295*

## **His Hypocrisy Deceived Even the Disciples**

He was at the left of Jesus at the last supper. The parable of the sheep and the goats reveals the significance of the right and the left sides:

*"Judas pressed next to Christ on the **left side**; John was on the right. If there was a **highest place**, Judas was determined to have it, and that place was thought to be **next to Christ**. And Judas was a traitor." DA, p. 644*

**Judas was a chameleon.** He did not openly war against Jesus. Ellen White explains that he manifested a 'continuous, secret and subtle antagonism' Education, p. 92.

*"Judas possessed a **form of godliness**, while his character was **more satanic** than divine. He **professed** to be a disciple of Christ, but in words and in works **denied Him**." The Sanctified Life, p. 59*

**Matthew 26:25:** Judas had the other disciples deceived until the very end:

The word 'traitor' refers to a person who professes loyalty to someone and yet works by subterfuge to undermine him:

*"Then Judas, who was **betraying** Him, answered and said, "Rabbi, **is it I**?" He said to him, "You have said it."*

**John 13:26-29:** Judas had a form of godliness and deceived his own colleagues. He was the instrument in the hands of Satan to betray Jesus:

*"Jesus answered, "**It is he** to whom I shall give a piece of bread when I have dipped it." And having dipped the bread, He gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon. <sup>27</sup> Now after the piece of bread, **Satan entered him**. Then Jesus said to him, "**What you do, do quickly**." <sup>28</sup> But no one at the table **knew for what reason** He said this to him. <sup>29</sup> For **some thought**, because*

Judas had the money box, that Jesus had said to him, "Buy those things we need for the feast," or that he should give **something to the poor.**"

## **Betrayed Jesus with a Kiss**

**Luke 22:47, 48:** Jesus delivered Jesus with a kiss:

*"And while He was still speaking, behold, a multitude; and he who was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them and drew near to Jesus **to kiss Him.** <sup>48</sup> But Jesus said to him, "Judas, are you **betraying** the Son of Man **with a kiss?**"*

## **Judas went to Perdition (destruction)**

**Matthew 27:3-5:** Judas went to perdition.

*"Then Judas, His betrayer, seeing that He had been condemned, **was remorseful** and brought back the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, <sup>4</sup> saying, "I have sinned by betraying innocent blood." And they said, "What is that to us? You see to it!" <sup>5</sup> Then he threw down the pieces of silver in the temple and departed, and went and **hanged himself.**"*

## **Summary of Characteristics:**

- A shrewd **politician** and sharp **administrator.**
- Coveted **political power** and desired Christ to set up an **earthly kingdom.**
- Was **covetous of money** and **earthly display.**
- He feigned an interest in **the poor.**
- He became the **vicar** or representative of Satan.
- His hypocrisy deceived even those who were in the **inner circle.**
- He betrayed Jesus with **a kiss.**
- He was an **enemy from the inside** who feigned a love for Jesus.

## **Opposes God**

**2 Thessalonians 2:4:** Emphasis on '**opposes God**'

*"... who **opposes** and **exalts himself above** all that is called God or that is worshiped, so that he sits as God in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God."*

What does it mean to 'oppose God'? Most scholars see the antichrist as one who openly defies God. But the character of Judas clearly shows that the opposition is not overt but rather covert. Judas professed to love Jesus and support Him but stealthily opposed Him.

The greatest enemies of Jesus were those who professed to serve God. Saul of Tarsus claimed to defend God's cause but was actually betraying it. The system we are talking about claims to serve the true God but in its history it has persecuted and killed millions in

the name of God. The Roman Catholic Church would never admit that in killing the saints it was opposing God.

### **John 16:2:**

*“They will put you out of the synagogues; yes, the time is coming that whoever kills you will think that he offers God service [**when they are really opposing God**].”*

**Acts 5:38, 39:** While professing to serve God some actually oppose Him.

*“And now I say to you, keep away from these men and let them alone; for if this plan or this work is of men, it will come to nothing; <sup>39</sup> but if it is of God, you cannot overthrow it--lest you even be found to **fight against God**.”*

According to the book Education, p. 92, Judas manifested a ‘continuous, secret and subtle antagonism’ against Christ. He did not war **openly** but rather warred against Jesus in an **underhanded** way.

## **The Act of Sitting**

**2 Thessalonians 2:4:** Emphasis on ‘he sits’.

*“ . . . who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God or that is worshiped, so that he **sits [kathizo]** as God in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.”*

**Matthew 23:2:** The Scribes and Pharisees **sat (kathizo)** on Moses’ **seat (kathedra)**. They claimed that when they spoke **ex-cathedra (from the throne)** their teachings were infallible because they had received them in an unbroken line from Moses.

*“The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses’ seat.”*

*“The phrase [sit on Moses’ Seat] is most probably a metaphor for the authority of the scribes to teach. In rabbinical tradition the interpretation of the Law was carried on in a scribal tradition that theoretically went back through an **unbroken chain** of scribes to Moses. This view is, of course, entirely unhistorical.” (The Jerome Bible Commentary, volume 2 (New York: Prentice Hall, Inc., 1968), p. 102)*

## **In the Temple of God**

**2 Thessalonians 2:4:** Emphasis on the expression ‘temple of God’.

*“ . . . who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God or that is worshiped, so that he sits as God\* in **the temple of God**, showing himself that he is God.”*

**Matthew 21:12, 13:** When Jesus entered the Jewish temple at the **triumphal entry** He described the temple as ‘the temple of God’ and ‘My house’:

*“Then Jesus went into the **temple of God** and drove out all those who bought and sold in the temple, and overturned the tables of the money changers and the seats of those who sold doves. 13 And He said to them, “It is written, ‘**My house** shall be called a house of prayer,’ but you have made it a ‘den of thieves.”*

**Matthew 23:38:** But when Jesus **forsook** the temple He said to the Jewish leadership:

*“See! **Your house** is left to you desolate.”*

Clearly, the Jewish temple was **no longer God’s temple**.

The apostle Paul helps us understand which temple the antichrist would sit in. In the mind of the great apostle, the temple was a symbol of **the Christian church**. Paul **never** referred to the Jewish temple as ‘*the temple of God*.’ To the contrary, he always referred to the church as the **spiritual temple**.

**Ephesians 2:19-22** (see also, 1 Corinthians 3:16, 17; 6:19, 20; 2 Corinthians 6:16; cf. 1 Peter 2:4-10): The **spiritual temple** of God is the church.

*“Now, therefore, you are no longer strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints and members of the household of God, 20 having been built on the **foundation of the apostles and prophets**, Jesus Christ Himself being the **chief cornerstone**, 21 in whom the **whole building**, being fitted together, grows into a **holy temple** in the Lord, 22 in whom **you also** are being built together for a **dwelling place of God** [God is in the temple so the antichrist attempts to take His place] in the Spirit.”*

**Note:** There are two Greek words that are translated ‘temple’ in the New Testament. One is *hieron* and the other is *naos*. The apostle Paul **never** uses the word *naos* to refer to the Jewish temple. Without exception he uses the word *naos* as a reference to the spiritual temple, the Christian church. In the book of Acts the Jewish ‘temple’ is referred to 25 times and it is never called *naos*. Furthermore, no even once in any of the epistles is the word *naos* applied to the literal Jewish temple.

Pope **Benedict XVI** at the conclusion of the week for Christian unity in **St. Paul’s Outside the Wall** sat on a great **white throne** and on each side was a **cherub**. This reminds one of YHW who sits between the cherubim (Psalm 80:1).

### **Paul had warned them**

**2 Thessalonians 2:5** Paul had taught the Thessalonians these things:

*“Do you not remember that when I was still with you **I told you these things?**”*

## The Mysterious Restrainer

**2 Thessalonians 2:6, 7:** In the times of the apostle Paul something/someone was preventing the antichrist from openly rising to power. He was chomping at the bit but was restrained:

*“And now you know **what [neuter] is restraining**, that he may be revealed in his own time. <sup>7</sup> For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only **He [masculine]** who **now restrains** will do so until He **[masculine]** is **taken out of the way.**”*

**Romans 13:4:** In the times of the apostle Paul the Roman Empire/emperor ruled the world and had the power of the sword. The man of sin could not rise to power until the Roman Empire was taken out of the way.

Some have concluded that the continuous use of the masculine pronoun ‘he’ in **2 Thessalonians 2:6** indicates a single person rather than a succession of individuals. The problem with this argument is that Paul repeatedly uses the masculine pronoun ‘he’ in Romans 13:4 to refer to all of the rulers of the Roman Empire (as indicated by the words ‘governing authorities’ and ‘rulers’ in verses 1 and 3):

*“... porque **[el]** es servidor de Dios para tu bien. Pero si haces lo malo, teme; porque no en vano lleva **[el]** la espada, pues **[el]** es servidor de Dios, vengador para castigar al que hace lo malo.”*

*“For **he** is God's minister to you for good. But if you do evil, be afraid; for **he** does not bear **the sword** in vain; for **he** is God's minister, an avenger to execute wrath on him who practices evil.”*

**Daniel 7:23, 24:** The Roman Empire had to be divided into ten kingdoms before the antichrist could rise to power. The invasion of the barbarian tribes divided the Roman Empire into ten kingdoms and then the little horn rose to power. This is THE APOSTASY of which the apostle Paul wrote.

*“Thus he said: ‘The fourth beast shall be a **fourth kingdom** on earth, which shall be different from all other kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, trample it and break it in pieces. <sup>24</sup> The ten horns are ten kings who shall arise **from this kingdom** and another shall rise **after them**; he shall be different from the first ones, and shall subdue three kings.’”*

**Revelation 13:2:** The ten-horned dragon gave his throne and authority to the beast:

*“Now the beast [that ruled for 42 months] which I saw was like a leopard, his feet were like the feet of a bear, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion. The dragon **[the power that attempted to kill the male child]** gave him his power, his throne, and great authority.”*

*“In the **sixth century [538]** the papacy had become firmly established. Its seat of power was **fixed in the imperial city**, and the bishop of Rome was declared to be the **head over the**”*

**entire church.** Paganism had given place to the papacy. The dragon had given to the beast "his power, and his seat, and great authority" **Revelation 13:2.** And **now began** the 1260 years of papal oppression foretold in the prophecies of Daniel and the Revelation. Daniel 7:25; Revelation 13:5-7." GC, p. 54

Between the year **300 AD** and the year **476 AD** hordes of **barbarian tribes** from the north invaded and carved up the Roman Empire. In the year 330 AD emperor Constantine removed the see of the Roman Empire to Constantinople thus weakening the political power of Rome in the west. **Romulus Augustulus**, the last emperor of the western empire was deposed in the year **476 AD.** Without an emperor, the Empire was thrown into turmoil. The barbarian incursions into the Roman Empire turned it **upside down** and left it **without a civil ruler** who could preserve law and order. In the midst of this **chaotic situation**, the **Bishop of Rome** was **enticed** to take the reins of civil power and bring about order in the empire. As a result, the bishop of Rome was not only the **spiritual leader** of the church but also became the **temporal ruler** of the state. Thus the Roman Empire was taken out of the way to give way to the papacy.

Cardinal **Edward Manning** described **the manner** in which the Roman Pontiff originally gained his civil power in the Roman Empire. Manning explained what occurred when the Roman Empire was invaded and torn apart by the barbarian invasions:

*"Now the **abandonment of Rome** was the **liberation** of the pontiffs. Whatsoever claims to obedience the emperors may have made, and whatsoever compliance the Pontiff may have yielded, the whole previous relation, anomalous, and annulled again and again by the vices and outrages of the emperors, was finally dissolved by a **higher power.** The providence of God permitted a succession of **irruptions**, Gothic, Lombard, and Hungarian, to desolate Italy, and to **efface from it every remnant of the empire.** The pontiffs found themselves **alone**, the **sole fountains of order, peace, law, and safety.** And from the hour of this providential **liberation**, when, by a divine intervention, the **chains fell off** from the hands of the successor of St. Peter, as once before from his own, no sovereign has ever reigned in Rome except the Vicar of Jesus Christ." Henry Edward Manning, The Temporal Power of the Vicar of Jesus Christ, Preface, pp. xxviii, xxix. London: Burns and Lambert, 1862*

**Manning** further explains:

*"It [the papacy] waited until such a time as God should break its **bonds** asunder, and **should liberate it from subjection to civil powers**, and **enthroned it** in the possession of a **temporal sovereignty** of its own." Henry Edward Manning, The Temporal Power of the Vicar of Jesus Christ (London: Burns & Lambert, second edition, 1862), pp. 11-13*

Manning is saying that when the civil power of Rome was removed by the barbarians, and the emperor Constantine moved the see of the Empire to Constantinople, the **bishop of Rome filled the vacuum** and became the arbiter in **civil affairs** as well as in **religious.** Remarkably, Manning refers to this taking over of civil power by the bishop of Rome with



expressions such as “**breaking bonds asunder**”, and “**chains falling off**”, terminology that is reminiscent of 2 Thessalonians 2. The dragon had given the beast ‘his power, his throne and great authority’ (Revelation 13:2).

The noted Bible commentator, **Albert Barnes**, wrote about the meaning of 2 Thessalonians 2:7:

*“The supposition which will best suit this language is, that there was then some **civil restraint**, preventing the development of existing corruptions, but that there would be a **removal, or withdrawing of that restraint**; and that then the tendency of the existing corruptions would be seen. It is evident, as Oldshausen remarks, that this resisting or restraining power must be **something out of the church**, and distinguished from the anti-Christian tendency itself. . . . It is necessary, therefore, to understand this of the **restraints of civil power**. Was there, then, any fact in history which will accord with this interpretation? The belief among the primitive Christians was, that what hindered the rise of the man of sin was the **Roman Empire**, and therefore “they prayed for its peace and welfare, as knowing that when the **Roman Empire should be dissolved and broken in pieces**, the empire of the man of sin would be raised on its ruins” From Barnes' Notes, Electronic Database Copyright © 1997, 2003, 2005, 2006 by BibleSoft, Inc. All rights reserved.*

As we have seen, in cryptic language, the **apostle Paul** had already referred this moment when the civil power of the Roman Empire would be given over to papal Rome. In 2 Thessalonians 2:6, 7 the apostle referred to the removal of the mysterious **restrainer** of 2 Thessalonians 2:6, 7:

*“And now you know **what** is **restraining** [the civil power of the Roman Empire], that he may be revealed in his own time [once the restrainer was taken out of the way]. For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only **He** [the emperor] who **now restrains** will do so until He is **taken out of the way**.”*

The early church Fathers were practically unanimous in the opinion that the ‘restrainer’ was a reference to the Roman Empire in general and to the emperors in particular. In verse 5 the apostle refers to **what** was restraining (using the neuter article **to katechon**) but in verse 7 he refers to **who** was restraining (using the masculine article **ho katechon**). By his use of language, Paul indicates that the Church at Thessalonica knew **who** the restrainer was and **what** was restraining. And yet Paul wrote in veiled, cryptic language. Why didn’t Paul just come out and write openly that the Roman Empire was the restrainer that would be taken out of the way?

The answer is obvious. If Paul had said openly that the Roman Empire would be taken out of the way, the Roman government would have had grounds to accuse Paul of sedition. So Paul had to be cautious in the language that he used.

Dispensationalists (Evangelicals who believe in the Rapture of the church before the tribulation) generally agree that the restrainer is the **Holy Spirit** who will be removed before the tribulation. But if this were true, then why would there be any need for Paul to be so cautious? It is clear that Paul could not define the 'restrainer' openly. It was not necessary to do so because the Thessalonians knew what power he was writing about.

You will notice in the comment by Cardinal Manning that the fall of the Roman Empire led to the 'liberation' of the Roman Pontiff. In other words, before this he was **restrained**. You will also notice that the fall of the Roman Empire is described as **chains falling off** the hands of the successor of St. Peter. The inevitable conclusion we reach from Manning's words is that the fall of the empire removed or **took away** the restraint placed upon the Bishop of Rome.

## **The Ante-Nicene Fathers**

Now let us turn to the writings of the early church Fathers to see how they understood the 'restrainer'. It must be noted that church fathers were living in the very period when these things took place.

Let us begin with **Tertullian** (160-240 AD):

*"For the mystery of iniquity doth already work; only he who **now hinders** must hinder, until he be taken out of the way.' What **obstacle** is there but the **Roman state**, the falling away of which, by being scattered into **ten kingdoms**, shall introduce **Antichrist** upon (its own ruins)? 'And then shall be revealed the wicked one.'" 'On the Resurrection of the Flesh,' chapter 24; Ante-Nicene Fathers, vol. III, p. 563 [New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1908]*

**Tertullian** also wrote:

*"The very end of all things threatening dreadful woes is only **retarded** by the continued existence of the Roman Empire." ('Apology,' chapter 32; Ante-Nicene Fathers, Vol. III, p. 43)*

**Lactantius**, who lived in the early Fourth Century, wrote:

*"The subject itself declares that the fall and ruin of the world will shortly take place; except that **while the city of Rome remains**, it appears that nothing of this kind is to be feared. But when that capital of the world **shall have fallen**, and shall have begun to be a street, which the Sibyls say shall come to pass, who can doubt that the end has now arrived to the affairs of men and the whole world? It is that city, that only, which **still sustains all things**." ('The Divine Institutes,' book 7, chapter 25; Ante-Nicene Fathers, vol. VII, p. 220)*

**Cyril of Jerusalem** (318-386 AD) had this to write about the mysterious restrainer:

*"But this aforesaid Antichrist is to come when the **times of the Roman Empire shall have been fulfilled**, and the end of the world is drawing near. There shall rise up together **ten kings of the Romans**, reigning in different parts perhaps, but all **about the same time**; and*

after those an eleventh, the Antichrist, who by his magical craft shall **seize upon the Roman power**; and of the kings who reigned before him, 'three he shall humble,' and the remaining seven he shall keep in subjection to himself." ('Catechetical Lectures' Section 15, on II Thessalonians 2:4; Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, vol. VII, p. 108 [New York: The Christian Literature Company, 1895])

Next we present the testimony of **Ambrose** (died in 398 AD):

**"After the falling or decay of the Roman Empire, Antichrist shall appear."** (Quoted in, Bishop Thomas Newton, Dissertations on the Prophecies, p. 463 [London: B. Blake, 1840])

Next in line is **Chrysostom** (died in 407 AD):

**"When the Roman Empire is taken out of the way, then he [the Antichrist] shall come. And naturally. For as long as the fear of this empire lasts, no one will willingly exalt himself, but when that is dissolved, he will attack the anarchy, and endeavor to seize upon the government both of man and of God."** 'Homily IV on 2 Thessalonians 2:6-9,' Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, vol. XIII, p. 389 [New York: Charles Scribner's and Sons, 1905]

Finally we will quote from **Jerome** (died 420 AD):

**"He that letteth is taken out of the way, and yet we do not realize that Antichrist is near."** (Letter to Ageruchia, written about 409 A. D. Letter 123, section 16; Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, vol. VI, p. 236 [New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1912]).

## **Church Historians**

***Scores of church historians have said the same:***

***"Long ages ago, when Rome through the neglect of the Western emperors was left to the mercy of the barbarous hordes, the Romans turned to one figure for aid and protection, and asked him to rule them; and thus, in this simple manner, the best title of all to kingly right, commenced the temporal sovereignty of the popes. And meekly stepping to the throne of Caesar, the Vicar of Christ took up the scepter to which the emperors and kings of Europe were to bow in reverence through so many ages."*** James P. Conroy, American Catholic Quarterly Review, April, 1911.

***"Under the Roman Empire [stage #1] the popes had no temporal powers. But when the Roman Empire had disintegrated [stage#2] and its place had been taken by a number of rude, barbarous kingdoms, the Roman Catholic Church [stage #3] not only became independent of the states in religious affairs but dominated secular affairs as well."*** Carl Conrad Eckhardt, The Papacy and World Affairs (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1937), p. 1

Church historian, **R. W. Southern** further explains the relationship between the papacy and the state during the Middle Ages:

*“During the **whole medieval period** there was **in Rome a single spiritual and temporal authority** [the papacy] exercising powers which in the end exceeded those that had ever lain within the grasp of the Roman emperor.” (R. W. Southern, *Western Society and the Church in the Middle Ages*, volume 2), pp. 24-25*

Church historian **John N. Figgis** adds his testimony:

*“[In] the Middle Ages the church was not a State, **it was the State**; or rather, the civil authority (for a separate society was not recognized), was merely **the police department of the Church**.” John N. Figgis, *From Gerson to Grotius*, p. 4*

This idea of the church ruling in **temporal** as well as in **spiritual** affairs was fleshed out in **1302** when Pope **Boniface VIII** wrote a significant bull (personal letter) titled **Unam Sanctam**.

*“We are informed by the texts of the gospels that in this [Roman Catholic] Church and in its power are **two swords**; namely, the **spiritual** and the **temporal**. **Both, therefore, are in the power of the Church**, that is to say, the spiritual and the material sword, but the former [the spiritual] is to be administered for the Church but the latter [the temporal] by the Church; the former in the hands of the **priest**; the latter by the hands of **kings and soldiers**, but **at the will and sufferance of the priest**.”*

Notably, **Malachi Martin**, the Jesuit exorcist who wrote the groundbreaking book *The Keys of This Blood*, inadvertently agreed with Ellen White:

*“[For] fifteen hundred years and more, [papal] Rome had kept as strong a hand as possible in each local community around the wide world. . . . By and large, and admitting some exceptions, that had been the Roman view until two hundred years of **inactivity** had been **imposed** upon the papacy by the major **secular powers** of the world.” Quoted in *Christianity Today* (November 21, 1986), p. 26*

**Revelation 20** helps us understand what it means to be bound or restrained and unbound or unrestrained. When Satan is able to use the civil rulers of the world to accomplish his purposes he is unbound. But when the kings are dead, he is bound.

### **‘In His Time’**

**2 Thessalonians 2:6**: What is the meaning of the expression ‘in his time’? The reflexive pronoun (‘his own’) indicates that the man of sin would arise at a specific time. The little horn prophecy indicates that there was a set time for the little horn to rise to power: ‘time, times and the dividing of time.’

*“And now you know what is restraining, that he may be revealed **in his own time**.”*

## The Mystery of Iniquity

**2 Thessalonians 2:7:** The mystery of iniquity was **already at work** in the days of Paul. It must be remembered that sin is the transgression of the law. (1 John 3:4)

*“For the mystery of lawlessness is **already** at work; only He [**the emperor**] who now restrains will do so until he [**the emperor**] taken out of the way [**by the barbarian invasions**].”*

## 1798 not the End of the Story

**Ellen G. White** has some interesting statements regarding how the secular power was removed and the papacy was able to ascend to power:

*“The spirit of compromise and conformity [of the early Christian church] was **restrained** for a time by the fierce persecutions which the church endured under **paganism** [the Roman Empire]. But as **persecution ceased**, and Christianity **entered the courts and palaces of kings**, she laid aside the humble simplicity of Christ and His apostles for the pomp and pride of pagan priests and rulers; and in place of the requirements of God, she substituted human theories and traditions.” GC, p. 49.*

*“The vast empire of Rome **crumbled to pieces**, and **from its ruins** rose that mighty power, the Roman Catholic Church. This church boasts of her infallibility and her hereditary religion” 1MR, p. 50*

The late **Malachi Martin** the Jesuit exorcist of the Roman Catholic Church and author of the best-selling book, The Keys of this Blood, said in **1986**:

*“[For] **fifteen hundred years** and more, Rome had kept as strong a hand as possible in each local community around the wide world. . . . By and large, and admitting some exceptions, that had been the Roman view until **two hundred years of inactivity** had been **imposed** upon the papacy by the **major secular powers** of the world.”* Quoted in Christianity Today (November 21, 1986), p. 26.

If we move back 200 years from 1986 we arrive at the time of the French Revolution 1789-1799 at the end of which the papacy received the deadly wound at the hands of the French government. In this way, Malachi Martin is inadvertently admitted that the French Revolution brought the secular powers into existence that have kept the deadly wound in place and rendered the Papacy inactive.

And so, in **1798, the handcuffs** that had fallen off the hands of the papacy in 538 AD were once again slapped on the papacy by the major secular powers of the world. As a result, the papacy has been inactive for the last two hundred years. But when the **secular power is taken out of the way**, the papacy will once again exert its power. Ellen White predicted:

*“Let the **restraints** [similar terminology to 2 Thessalonians 2] now **imposed** by **secular governments** be **removed** [taken out of the way] and Rome be reinstated in her former power, and there would speedily be a **revival** of her tyranny and persecution.” Ellen G. White, *GC*, p. 564.*

## **The Issue in the End Time Conflict**

### **Revelation 12:17:**

*“And the dragon was enraged with the woman, and he went to make war with the rest of her offspring, who keep **the commandments of God** and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.”*

- The little horn thought that it could change God’s law
- The antichrist is called the man of sin
- The man of sin is called the mystery of lawlessness
- The final warfare against God’s people involves the commandments of God

## **A Powerful Miracle Worker**

**2 Thessalonians 2:8:** Jesus will destroy the man of lawlessness at the second coming.

*“And then the **lawless one** [the transgressor of the law] will be revealed, whom the Lord will consume with the breath of His mouth and destroy with the brightness of His **coming** [parousia].”*

**2 Thessalonians 2:9:** But before the second coming, the man of sin will counterfeit the second coming of Jesus:

*“The coming [parousia] of the lawless one is according to the **working** of Satan, with all **power, signs, and lying wonders** . . .”*

**Acts 2:22:** The identical Greek words, ‘power, signs and wonders’ are used in only one other verse in the New Testament to describe the miracles that Jesus performed. This means that the antichrist will counterfeit the miracles that Jesus performed while He was on earth.

*“Men of Israel, hear these words: Jesus of Nazareth, a Man attested by God to you by **miracles, wonders, and signs** which God did through Him in your midst, as you yourselves also know...”*

*“As the crowning act in the great drama of deception, Satan himself will personate Christ. The church has long professed to look to the Savior’s advent as the consummation of her hopes. Now the great deceiver will make it appear that Christ has come. In different parts of the earth, Satan will manifest himself among men as a majestic being of dazzling brightness, resembling the description of the Son of God given by John in the Revelation (Revelation 1:13-15). The glory that surrounds him is unsurpassed by anything that mortal eyes have yet*

beheld. The shout of triumph rings out upon the air: "Christ has come! Christ has come!" The people prostrate themselves in adoration before him, while he lifts up his hands and pronounces a blessing upon them, as Christ blessed His disciples when He was upon the earth. His voice is soft and subdued, yet full of melody. In gentle, compassionate tones he presents some of the same gracious, heavenly truths that the Savior uttered; **he heals the diseases** of the people, and then, in his assumed character of Christ, he claims to have changed the Sabbath to Sunday, and commands all to hallow the day which he has blessed. He declares that those who persist in keeping holy the seventh day are blaspheming his name by refusing to listen to his angels sent to them with light and truth. This is the strong, almost **overmastering delusion** [an allusion to II Thessalonians 2]." *GC*, p. 624

Our only protection at that time will be to know **how** Jesus will come and **what His word teaches** about the manner of his coming and the Sabbath/Sunday issue:

*"But the people of God will not be misled. The teachings of this false christ are not in accordance with the Scriptures. His blessing is pronounced upon the worshipers of the beast and his image, the very class upon whom the Bible declares that God's unmingled wrath shall be poured out.*

*And, furthermore, Satan is not permitted to counterfeit the manner of Christ's advent. The Saviour has warned His people against deception upon this point, and has clearly foretold the manner of His second coming. "There shall arise false christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect. . . . Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, He is in the desert; go not forth; behold, He is in the secret chambers; believe it not. For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be." Matthew 24:24-27, 31; 25:31; Revelation 1:7; 1 Thessalonians 4:16, 17. This coming there is no possibility of counterfeiting. It will be universally known--witnessed by the whole world.*

*Only those who have been diligent students of the Scriptures and who have received the love of the truth will be shielded from the powerful delusion that takes the world captive. By the Bible testimony these will detect the deceiver in his disguise." *GC*, p. 625*

### **Why People will Accept the Counterfeit**

**2 Thessalonians 2:10:** People will be lost because they **refused to receive the love of the truth:**

*". . .and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the **love of the truth** that they might be saved."*

**John 17:17:** God's **word is truth.**

*"Sanctify them by Your truth. **Your word is truth.**"*

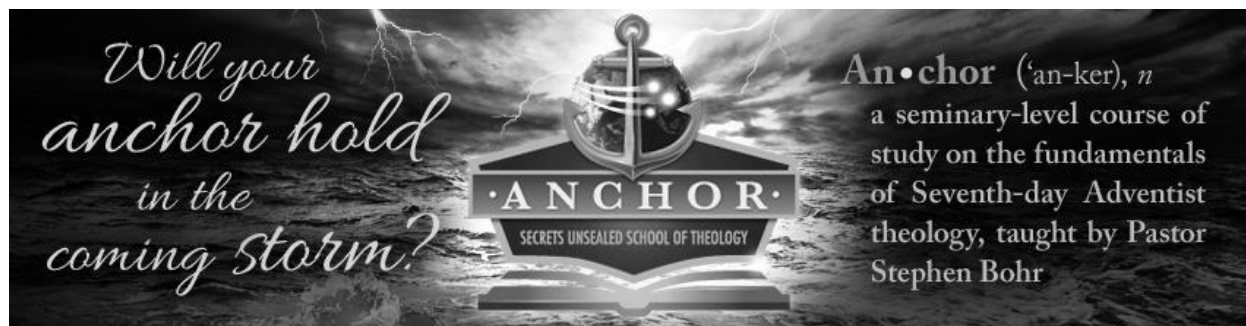
**Psalm 119:142:** The **law of God** is the truth.

*“Your righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, and Your **law is truth.**”*

**2 Thessalonians 2:11-13:** Counterfeit Christians will **refuse to believe the truth**

*“And for this reason God will send them **strong delusion**, that they should believe **the lie [pseudos: the counterfeit second coming]**, 12 that they all may be condemned who **did not believe the truth** but had pleasure in unrighteousness.”*





## **“The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”**

**by Pastor Stephen Bohr**

# **LESSON #18 – CATHOLICS, PROTESTANTS AND WORLDLINGS**

### **Introductory Statement**

“The agencies of evil are **combining** their forces and **consolidating**. They are **strengthening** for the last great crisis. **Great changes** are soon to take place in our world, and the final movements will be **rapid ones.**” 9T, p. 11

### **A Global Union**

**Revelation 16:13, 14:** A threefold union that will form a **worldwide confederacy**.

Identify the beast, the false prophet and the dragon.

*“And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs coming out of the mouth of the **dragon**, out of the mouth of the **beast**, and out of the mouth of the **false prophet**.<sup>14</sup> For they are spirits of demons, performing signs, which go out to the kings of the earth and of the **whole world**, to **gather them** to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.”*

**Ellen White** describes the union:

*“These have one mind.” There will be a **universal bond** of union, **one great harmony**, a **confederacy** of Satan's forces. “And shall give their power and strength unto the beast.” Thus is manifested the same arbitrary, **oppressive power** against religious liberty, freedom to worship God according to the dictates of conscience, as was manifested by the Papacy, when in the past it persecuted those who dared to refuse to conform with the religious rites and ceremonies of Romanism.” 1MR, p. 297*

## Identifying the Three Powers

We must identify who these powers are. They are identified earlier in the book:

**Revelation 12:** The dragon (is this spiritualism?)

**Revelation 13:1-10:** The Beast

**Revelation 13:11-18:** The False Prophet

- The **beast** represents the papacy
- The **false prophet** represents apostate Protestantism
- The **dragon**

But does the dragon represent?

In Revelation 12 it represents the secular civil power of Rome. Ellen White calls it the Roman element.

- Satan working through **Pagan Rome** to kill the child.
- Satan working through the **kings of Europe** to destroy the woman.
- Satan working through the **United States** and the kings of the world to destroy the remnant.

**Revelation 19:** The beast, false prophet and the kings.

Notice the following quotation from **Ellen White** on the identity of the dragon:

*“**Kings and rulers and governors [we call these the ‘secular power’]** have placed upon themselves the brand of antichrist, and are **represented as the dragon** who goes to make war with the saints--with those who keep the commandments of God and who have the faith of Jesus. In their enmity against the people of God, they show themselves guilty also of the choice of Barabbas instead of Christ.” TM, p. 38*

**The threefold union and why they unite:**

Miracles, no Bible standard to evaluate them by and the result is deception.

*“The line of distinction between **professed** Christians [**Catholics and Protestants**] and the **ungodly [same as world]** is now [**what would she say today?**] hardly distinguishable. Church **members love what the world loves [dress, money, houses, lands, entertainment, power, fame and position]** and are ready to **join** with them [**with worldlings**], and Satan determines to **unite them in one body** and thus strengthen his cause by sweeping all into the ranks of **spiritualism. Papists**, who [**1] boast of miracles** as a certain sign of the true church, will be readily deceived by this wonder-working power; and **Protestants**, having [**2] cast away the shield of truth**, will also be deluded. **Papists**,*

**Protestants**, and **worldlings** will alike accept the **form of godliness** without the **power** [1Timothy 3; pursue], and they will see in this **union** a grand movement for the **conversion of the world [evangelization]** and the ushering in of the long-expected **millennium**.” *GC*, pp. 588, 589

## **The Bible and Worldlings**

### **1 John 2:15, 16**

“Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. **16** For all that is in the world ó the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life ó is not of the Father but is of the world. **17** And the world is passing away, and the lust of it; but he who does the will of God abides forever.”

### **James 4:4**

“Adulterers and adulteresses! Do you not know that friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever therefore wants to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God.”

## **Ellen White and Worldlings**

A worldling is focused on the **here and now** and not on the **sweet by a by**. His life is centered in **this world**—its dress, its entertainment, its buildings, its money, its pleasures and its culture.

“God designs that His people shall fix their **eyes heavenward**, looking for the **glorious appearing** of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. While the **attention of worldlings** is turned to **various enterprises**, ours should be **to the heavens**; our faith should reach further and further into the glorious mysteries of the **heavenly treasure**, drawing the precious, divine rays of light from the heavenly sanctuary to shine in our hearts, as they shine upon the face of Jesus.” *2T*, pp. 194, 195

Worldlings are the **secular**, the **unchurched**, and the **irreligious**.

### **The secular ruling civil powers are included:**

“A profession of religion has become popular with the world. **Rulers, politicians, lawyers, doctors, merchants**, join the church as a means of securing the respect and confidence of society, and advancing their own worldly interests. Thus they seek to cover all their unrighteous transactions under a profession of Christianity. The various religious bodies, re-enforced by the wealth and influence of these baptized worldlings, make a still higher bid for popularity and patronage.” *GC*, p. 386

## Ellen White defines worldlings:

*“The principle illustrated in the lives of worldlings is **to get, get.**” AA, p. 339*

*“The desire for **excitement** and **pleasing entertainment** is a temptation and a snare to God's people and especially to the young. Satan is constantly preparing inducements to attract minds from the **solemn work of preparation** for scenes just in the future. Through the agency of worldlings he keeps up a **continual excitement** to induce the unwary **to join** in worldly pleasures. There are **shows, lectures, and an endless variety of entertainments** that are calculated to lead to a **love of the world**; and through this **union with the world**, faith is weakened.” AH, p. 522*

*“**Worldlings** spend **much on dress**. But the Lord has charged His people to **come out** from the world and be separate [1 Corinthians 6:14-18]. Gay or **expensive apparel** is not becoming to those who profess to believe that we are living in the last days.” CG, p. 420*

*“**Worldlings** are constantly striving to **exalt themselves** one above another; but Jesus, the Son of God, humbled himself in order to uplift man. The true disciple of Christ will follow his example.” CE, pp. 179, 180*

*“Christians seek to build as **worldlings build**, to **dress as worldlings dress**--to imitate the **customs and practices** of those who worship **only the god of this world.**” CC, p. 147*

*“Those who seek **the education that the world esteems so highly** are gradually led **farther and farther** from the principles of truth, until they become **educated worldlings**. At what a price have they gained their education! They have parted with the Holy Spirit of God. They have chosen to accept **what the world calls knowledge** in the place of the truths which God has committed to men through his ministers and **apostles and prophets [the Bible].**” CT, pp. 15, 16*

*“The accession of members who have not been **renewed in heart and reformed in life** is a source of weakness to the church. This fact is often ignored. Some ministers and churches are so desirous of securing an increase of numbers that they do not bear faithful testimony against **unchristian habits and practices**. Those who accept the truth are not taught that they cannot safely be **worldlings in conduct** while they are **Christians in name**. Heretofore they were Satan's subjects; henceforth they are to be subjects of Christ. The life must testify to the change of leaders.” Evangelism, p. 319*

*“The world's policy is to acquire money and advantages in any way that they can be obtained. An accumulation of **this world's treasure** is the ambition of **worldlings.**” HP, p. 300*

*“Says the great deceiver: “. . . The Sabbath is the great question which is to decide the destiny of souls. We must exalt the sabbath of our creating. We have caused it to be accepted by **both worldlings and church members**; now the church must be led to **unite with the world** in its*

support. We must work by signs and wonders to blind their eyes to the truth, and lead them to lay aside reason and the fear of God and follow custom and tradition.” Maranatha, p. 163

“God has called us to glory and virtue. We have no right to assimilate with the world—**dressing, talking, and living** as **worldlings** do.” Peter’s Counsel to Parents, p. 24

“In the last conflict the Sabbath will be the special point of controversy throughout all Christendom. **Secular rulers and religious leaders** [notice that the two are separate] will **unite** to enforce the observance of the Sunday; and as **milder measures** fail, the **most oppressive laws** will be enacted. It will be urged that the few who stand in opposition to an institution of **the church** and a **law of the land** ought not to be tolerated . . . **Romanism** in the Old World, and **apostate Protestantism** in the New, will pursue a similar course toward those who honor the divine precepts.” Mar 188

“The **principle of worldlings** is to **get all they can** of the perishable things of this life. **Selfish love** of gain is the ruling principle in their lives. But the purest joy is not found in riches nor where covetousness is always craving, but where **contentment reigns** and where **self-sacrificing love** is the ruling principle.” 3T, p. 382

“As a people, we are looked upon as **peculiar**. Our position and faith **distinguish us from every other denomination**. If we are in life and character no better than **worldlings**, they will point the finger of scorn at us and say: “These are Seventh-day Adventists.” 5T, p. 138

“We are living amidst the perils of the last days. Something decisive must be said to warn our people against the danger of permitting children who need parental care and instruction, to leave their homes to go to places where they will be brought into contact with pleasure-loving, **irreligious worldlings**.” 8T, p. 224.1

“The true follower of Christ will not do as the **wicked worldlings do**, because it is **fashionable to be sinful**.” RH October 25, 1881

### **One example that can unite Christians and worldlings: Climate Change as a uniting element:**

- Climate change and the common good. A document prepared by **the Pontifical Academy of Sciences and the Pontifical Academy of Social Sciences** (April 2015).
- The Pope to the **United States joint session** of Congress in **September of 2015**.
- Speech to the **United Nations**.

- Meeting in **Paris in December** of world leaders to discuss climate change. With a global economy, sanctions can be applied worldwide.
- **Sunday is an integral part** to save the planet and give time for family, personal spiritual renewal and church attendance. The pressure is already huge in the **European Union**.
- The **pretext** will be to **save the planet** and everyone will go along when the disasters get bad enough.
- ***Ban Ki-Moon***: *The secretary-general [Ban KI-Moon] welcomes the papal encyclical released today by His Holiness Pope Francis which highlights that climate change is one of the principal challenges facing humanity, and that it is a moral issue requiring respectful dialogue with all parts of society. The secretary-general notes the encyclical's findings that there is "a very solid scientific consensus" showing significant warming of the climate system and that most global warming in recent decades is "mainly a result of human activity".*

Ban called on governments to "place the global common good above national interests and to adopt an ambitious, universal climate agreement" at the UN climate summit in Paris this December.

There are shades of the Pope's own language there. In the encyclical, he says: "International [climate] negotiations cannot make significant progress due to positions taken by countries which place their national interests above the global common good".

### **Obama on the Pope's encyclical:**

I welcome His Holiness Pope Francis's encyclical, and deeply admire the Pope's decision to make the case - clearly, powerfully, and with the full moral authority of his position - for action on global climate change.

As Pope Francis so eloquently stated this morning, we have a profound responsibility to protect our children, and our children's children, from the damaging impacts of climate change. I believe the United States must be a leader in this effort, which is why I am committed to taking bold actions at home and abroad to cut carbon pollution, to increase clean energy and energy efficiency, to build resilience in vulnerable

communities, and to encourage responsible stewardship of our natural resources. We must also protect the world's poor, who have done the least to contribute to this looming crisis and stand to lose the most if we fail to avert it.

I look forward to discussing these issues with Pope Francis when he visits the White House in September. And as we prepare for global climate negotiations in Paris this December, it is my hope that all world leaders--and all God's children--will reflect on Pope Francis's call to come together to care for our common home.

No mention of the **second coming** as the hope of humanity. **What is it that causes** climate change?

Led by the Spirit, Ellen wrote:

*“The **restraining Spirit of God [the four angels at the four winds]** is even now being withdrawn from the world. Hurricanes, storms, tempests, fire and flood, disasters by sea and land, follow each other in quick succession. **Science seeks to explain all these.** The signs thickening around us, telling of the near approach of the Son of God, are attributed to **any other than the true cause.** Men cannot discern the sentinel angels restraining the four that they shall not blow **until** the servants of God are sealed; but when God shall bid His angels loose the winds, there will be **such a scene of strife as no pen can picture.**” 6T, p. 408*

Satan has an agenda behind all these disasters:

*“Satan works through **the elements** also to garner his harvest of unprepared souls. He has studied the secrets of the **laboratories of nature**, and he uses all his power to **control the elements** as far as God allows . . . In accidents and calamities by sea and by land, in great conflagrations, in fierce **tornadoes** and terrific **hailstorms**, in **tempests, floods, cyclones, tidal waves, and earthquakes**, in every place and in a thousand forms, Satan is exercising his power. He sweeps away the ripening harvest, and **famine and distress** follow. He imparts **to the air a deadly taint**, and thousands perish by the pestilence. These visitations are to become **more and more frequent and disastrous**. Destruction will be upon both man and beast. “The earth mourneth and fadeth away,” “the haughty people . . . do languish. The earth also is defiled under the inhabitants thereof; because they have transgressed the laws, changed the ordinance, broken the everlasting covenant” Isaiah 24:4, 5. **And then** the great deceiver will persuade men that **those who serve God** are causing these evils.” GC, p. 589*

## **Solidarity and the Common Good**

To begin with we must say that the papacy’s social theory has been proved to fail miserably for over one thousand years. The papacy has a very bad track record to be lecturing the capitalist nations of the Western Hemisphere. Europe was in ignorance, disease, and

poverty during this period. It was only when Protestantism came on the scene that these evils were to a great degree overcome. Capitalism promotes individualism, creativity, competition for excellence, productivity, a strong work ethic, and progress. The Roman Catholic ideal promotes just the opposite.

### **St. Thomas Aquinas:**

*"In cases of need, all things are common property, so that there would seem to be no sin in taking another's property, for need has made it common." Summa Theologiae, ii-ii, 7<sup>th</sup> article*

### **St. Augustine:**

It all began with St. Augustine's City of God. His idea was that the church should control the civil governments of the world and in this way establish God's universal kingdom of peace on earth.

St. Augustine interpreted the **stone of Daniel 2** as the church conquering the kingdoms of the world and bringing about the **kingdom of God on earth**. Anyone who objected to this scenario was **to be exterminated**. Augustine provided the theological basis for the Inquisition.

### Words of **Thomas Aquinas:**

*"In order that spiritual matters might be kept separate from temporal ones, the ministry of this [spiritual] kingdom was entrusted not to earthly kings but to priests and especially to the highest of them, the successor of St. Peter, Vicar of Christ, the Roman Pontiff, to whom **all kings must be subject** just as they are subject to our Lord Jesus. For those whom the care of an **intermediate end** pertains should be subject to him to whom the care of the **ultimate end** belongs and be directed by his rule." The Political Ideas of St. Thomas Aquinas, p. 100*

### **Bernard of Clairvaux (1090-1153)**

*"We can therefore conclude that both swords, namely the spiritual and the material, belong to the Church, and that although only the former is to wielded by her own hand, the two are to be employed in her service. It is for the priest to use the sword of the word, but to strike with the sword of steel belongs to the soldier, yet this must be by the authority and will of the priest and by the direct command of the emperor, as I have said elsewhere. For the two swords are Peter's, to be drawn whenever necessary, the one by his own hand, the other by his authority." Tierney, The Crisis of Church and State, 1050-1300, pp. 93, 94*

### **John of Salisbury (1120-1180)**

*"This sword (the material) then the prince receives from the hand of the church, for the church does not stain a sword with blood. Yet even this is her sword, but she uses it by the hand of the prince."*



Words of the **Council of Trent** regarding the power of the Pope:

*“All **temporal power is his**; the dominion, jurisdiction, and government of the whole Earth is **his by divine right**. All rulers of the Earth **are his subjects** and must submit to him.” John W. Robbins, *Ecclesiastical Megalomania*, p. 131*

### **Pius XI**

*“The doctrine of Rerum Novarum [which is nothing short of Marxism in religious garb] began little by little to penetrate among those who, being outside Catholic unity, do not recognize the authority of the Church; and these Catholic principles of sociology gradually became part of the intellectual heritage of the whole human race. Thus too, we rejoice that the Catholic truths proclaimed so vigorously by our illustrious Predecessor [Leo XIII], are advanced and advocated not merely in non-Catholic books and journals, but frequently also in legislative assemblies and in courts of justice.” Pius XI, Quadragesimo Anno (1931), 11.*

### **Pius IX**

*“That principle which Leo XIII so clearly established must be laid down at the outset here, namely, that there resides in Us [**the Papacy**] the right and duty to pronounce with **supreme authority** upon **social and economic matters**.” Pope Pius XI, Encyclical Quadragesimo Anno, May 15, 1931, paragraph 41*

### **John XXIII**

*“Because **all men are joined together** by reason of their common origin, their redemption by Christ and their supernatural destiny, and are called to form **one Christian family**. We appealed in the Encyclical Mater et Magistra to **economically developed nations to come to the aid** of those which were in the process of development.” John XXIII, Pacem in Terris, (1963), 121*

### **Vatican II (1963-1965)**

*“It is our clear duty, therefore, to strain every muscle in working for the time when all **war can be completely outlawed** by international consent. This goal undoubtedly requires the establishment of a **universal public authority** acknowledged as such **by all** and **endowed with the power** to safeguard on the behalf of all, security, regard for justice, and respect for rights.” Second Vatican II, Gaudium et Spes, (1965) 82*

*“Moreover, since in virtue of her mission and nature she is bound to no particular form of human culture, nor to any political, economic or social system, the [**Roman Catholic**] Church by **her very universality** can be a very close bond between diverse human communities and nations, provided these **trust her and truly acknowledge her right** to true freedom in fulfilling her mission.” Vatican Council II, Gaudium et Spes (1965), 42*

## Paul VI

*“This international **collaboration on a worldwide scale** requires institutions that will prepare, coordinate, and direct it until finally there is established an order of justice which is **universally recognized** . . . Who does not see the necessity of thus establishing progressively **a world authority**, capable of acting effectively in the **juridical and political** sectors?” Paul VI, *Populorum Progressio* (1967), 78*

## Definition of Capitalism

*“Capitalism, which is sometimes called the free enterprise system, the private property order or laissez-faire, is the economic system in which individuals and groups are free to own property of all sorts and to dispose of it as they see fit. It is the economic counterpart to the political system of limited government in which the only functions of government are the punishment of evildoers, that is, criminals, and the praise of the good.” John W. Robbins, *Ecclesiastical Megalomania*, p. 49*

## John Paul II

*“Private property, in fact, is under a ‘social mortgage,’ which means that it has an intrinsically social function, based upon and justified precisely by the principle of the universal destination of goods.” John Paul II, *Sollicitudo Rei Socialis* (1987), 42*

*“Christian tradition has never upheld this right [to private property] as absolute and untouchable. On the contrary, it has always understood this right within the broader context of the right common to all to use the goods of the whole creation; the right to private property is subordinated to the right to common use, to the fact that goods are meant for everyone.” John Paul II, *Laborem Exercens* (1981), 34, 35*

## Malachi Martin

*“He [John Paul] was himself the head of the most extensive and **deeply experienced** of the three global powers that would, within a short time, set about ending the nation system of world politics that has defined human society for over a thousand years. It is not too much to say, in fact, that the chosen purpose of John Paul’s pontificate—the engine that drives his papal grand policy and that determines his day-to-day, year-by-year strategies—is **to be victor in that competition**, now well under way.” Malachi Martin, *The Keys of this Blood*, p. 17*

*“In this timely and provocative new book, best-selling author Malachi Martin reveals the untold story behind the Vatican’s role in the collapse of the Iron Curtain, as well as Pope John Paul II’s far-reaching assessment of the **three-way contest** now unfolding among the global powers—the Soviet Union under Mikhail Gorbachev, the capitalist nations of the west, and the pope’s own universal Roman Church—a **winner-take-all** race against time and each other to*

**establish, maintain, and control** the first **one-world government** that has ever existed on the face of the earth.” Dust cover on *The Keys of this Blood* by Malachi Martin

“Clearly, the new agenda—Heaven’s agenda; the Grand Design of God for the **new world order**—had begun. And Pope John Paul would stride now in the arena of the millennium endgame as something more than a geopolitical giant of his age. He was, and remains, the serene and confident **Servant of the Grand Design**.” Malachi Martin, *The Keys of this Blood*, p. 50

“There is one great similarity shared by all three of these globalist competitors. Each one has in mind a particular grand design for **one world governance** . . . Their **geopolitical** competition is about which of the three will **form, dominate and run** the **world system** that will **replace** the decaying nation system.” Malachi Martin, *The Keys of this Blood*, p. 18

“No holds barred because, once the competition has been decided, the world and all that’s in it—our way of life as **individuals** and as **citizens** of the nations; our **families** and our jobs; our trade and commerce and money; our **educational systems** and our **religions** and our **cultures**; even the **badges of our national identity**, which most of us have always taken for granted—all will have been **powerfully and radically altered forever**. No one can be exempted from its effects. No sector of our lives will remain untouched . . . Nobody who is acquainted with the plans of these three rivals has any doubt but that **only one of them can win**.” Malachi Martin, *The Keys of This Blood*, p. 16

“As to the time factor involved, those of us who are **under seventy** will see at least the basic structures of the **new world government** installed. Those of us **under forty** will surely live under its **legislative, executive and judiciary authority and control**.” Malachi Martin, *The Keys of this Blood*, pp. 15-16.

## **Benedict XVI**

“Man’s earthly activity, when inspired and sustained by charity, contributes to the building of the **universal city of God**, which is the **goal of the history of the human family**. In an increasingly globalized society, the **common good** and the effort to obtain it cannot fail to assume the dimensions of the **whole human family**, that is to say, the community of peoples and nations, in such a way as to shape the **earthly city in unity and peace**, rendering it to some degree an anticipation and a prefiguration of the undivided city of God.” *Caritas in Veritate*, section 7

“ . . . There is urgent need of a true **world political authority**, as my predecessor Blessed John XXIII indicated some years ago. Such an authority would need to be **regulated by law**, to observe consistently the principles of **subsidiarity and solidarity**, to seek to establish the **common good**, and to make a commitment to securing authentic integral human development inspired by the values of charity in truth. Furthermore, such an authority would need to be **universally recognized** and to be vested with the **effective power** to ensure

security for all, regard for justice, and respect for rights." Benedict XVI in his encyclical, *Caritas in Veritate*

## **Compendium of Catholic Social Doctrine**

"The **common good** therefore involves all members of society, **no one is exempt from cooperating**, according to each one's possibilities, in attaining and developing it." *Compendium of Catholic Social Doctrine*, section 167.

On the universal destination of goods, the *Compendium of Catholic Social Doctrine* states:

"If it is true that everyone is born with the right to use the goods of the earth, it is likewise true that, in order to ensure that this right is exercised in an equitable and orderly fashion, **regulated interventions are necessary**, interventions that are the result of **national and international agreements**, and a **juridical order** that adjudicates and specifies the exercise of this right." *Compendium of Catholic Social Doctrine*, section 173

"Christian tradition has never recognized the **right to private property as absolute and untouchable**: 'On the contrary, it has always understood this right within the broader context of the **right common to all** to use the goods of the whole of creation. The right to private property is **subordinated** to the right to **common use**, to the fact that goods are meant **for everyone**." *Compendium of Catholic Social Doctrine*, section 177

"The Church's social teaching moreover calls for recognition of the social function of any form of private ownership that clearly refers to its necessary relation to the **common good** . . . The **universal destination of goods** entails obligations on how goods are to be used by their legitimate owners . . . From this arises the duty on the part of owners not to let goods in their possession go idle and to channel them to productive activity, even **entrusting them to others** who are desirous and capable of putting them to use in production." *Compendium of Catholic Social Doctrine*, section 178

"New technological and scientific knowledge must be placed at the service of mankind's primary needs, gradually increasing humanity's **common patrimony**. Putting the principle of the **universal destination of goods** into full effect therefore requires action at the **international level** and planned programs on the part of all countries." *Compendium of Catholic Social Doctrine*, section 179

"Insofar as it is part of the Church's moral teaching, the Church's social doctrine has the same dignity and authority as her moral teaching. It is **authentic Magisterium** which **obligates** the faithful to adhere to it." *Compendium of Catholic Social Doctrine*, section 80

## **Warning by Ayn Rand**

"The Catholic Church has never given up the hope to **re-establish** [she must have once had it and lost it] the medieval **union of church and state**, with a **global state** and a **global**

*theocracy* as its ultimate goal.' The **Roman Church-State** is a **hybrid—a monster** of **ecclesiastical and political** power. Its political thought is totalitarian, and whenever it has had the opportunity to apply its principles, the result has been **bloody repression**. If, during the last 30 years, it has softened its assertions of full, supreme, and irresponsible power, and has murdered fewer people than before, such changes in behavior are not due to a change in its ideas, but to **a change in its circumstances [the secular governments keep her at arms' length]** . . . The **Roman Church-State** in the twentieth century, however, is an institution **recovering from a mortal wound**. If and when it **regains [so it must have lost it]** its full power and authority, it will impose a regime more sinister than any the planet has yet seen **[the deadly wound will be healed]**." John W. Robbins, *Ecclesiastical Megalomania*, p. 195.

"I am convinced that Roman Babylon **will again regain** all of its **previous power** before the last judgment overtakes it. I fear that most of the nations, intimidated by its power and terrified by its brutality, will **allow the yoke shaken off some two hundred years ago to be lain upon them again**." Words of Ph. J. Spener in *Symposium on Revelation*, volume 2, p. 388

"What the Roman Catholic Church-State accomplished on a **small scale** during the Middle Ages is what it desires to achieve on a **global scale** in the coming millennium." John W. Robbins, *Ecclesiastical Megalomania*, p. 187 (1999)

### **Incremental Steps: Slavery, Gay Marriage and the Sabbath**

"The **greatest and most favored** nation upon the earth is the United States. A **gracious Providence** has shielded this country, and poured upon her the choicest of Heaven's blessings. Here the persecuted and oppressed have found refuge. Here the Christian faith in its purity has been taught. This people have been the recipients of great light and unrivaled mercies. But these gifts have been repaid by **ingratitude and forgetfulness** of God. The Infinite One keeps a **reckoning with the nations**, and their guilt is proportioned to the **light rejected**. A fearful record now stands in the register of heaven against our land; but the crime which shall **fill up the measure** of her iniquity is that of making void the law of God." ST, July 4, 1899

### **SDA'S will be Hated**

"There are many in the church who at **heart belong to the world**, but God calls upon those who claim to believe the **advanced truth**, to rise above the present attitude of the **popular churches** of today. Where is the self-denial, where is the cross-bearing that Christ has said should characterize his followers? The reason we have had **so little influence** upon unbelieving relatives and associates is that we have manifested **little decided difference in our practices** from those of the world. Parents need to awake, and purify their souls by practicing the truth in their home life. When we reach the standard that the Lord would have us reach, **worldlings** will regard Seventh-day Adventists as **odd, singular, straight-laced extremists**. "We are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men." RH, January 9, 1894

*“Heretofore those who presented the truths of the third angel’s message have often been regarded as **mere alarmists**. Their predictions that religious intolerance would gain control in the United States, that church and state would unite to persecute those who keep the commandments of God, have been **pronounced groundless and absurd**. It has been confidently declared that this land **could never become other than what it has been**--the defender of religious freedom. But as the question of enforcing Sunday observance is widely agitated, the event so long doubted and disbelieved is seen to be approaching, and the third message will produce an effect which it could not have had before.” GC, p. 605, 606*

*“The **whole world is to be stirred** with enmity against Seventh-day Adventists, because they will not yield homage to the papacy, by honoring Sunday, the institution of this antichristian power. It is the purpose of Satan to cause them to be **blotted from the earth**, in order that his supremacy of the world may not be disputed.” Maranatha, p. 217*

### **Revelation 13:3**

*“And I saw one of his heads as if it had been mortally wounded, and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world marveled and followed the beast.”*

### **John 17:14**

*“I have given them Your word; and the world has hated them because they are not of the world, just as I am not of the world.”*



## **“The Great Prophecies of Daniel & Revelation”**

**by Pastor Stephen Bohr**

# **LESSON #19 – REFLECTIONS ON THE POPE’S AGENDA**

### **The Final Triumvirate**

In 1990 Roman Catholic Jesuit priest, Malachi Martin, published the bestselling book: *The Keys Of This Blood: Pope John Paul II Versus Russia And The West For Control Of The New World Order*. Martin’s book describes the tooth and nail struggle for world dominion between the papacy, communism (Secularism), and western capitalism. On page 18 Martin described the aspirations of all three global competitors:

*“There is one great similarity shared by all three of these globalist competitors. Each one has in mind a particular **grand design** for **one world governance** . . . Their **geopolitical** competition is about which of the three will **form, dominate and run the world system** that will **replace** the decaying nation system.”* Malachi Martin, *The Keys of this Blood*, p. 18

And then Martin ominously predicted:

*“No holds barred because, once the competition has been decided, the world and all that’s in it--our way of life as **individuals** and as **citizens** of the nations; our **families** and our **jobs**; our **trade and commerce** and **money**; our **educational systems** and our **religions** and our **cultures**; even the **badges of our national identity**, which most of us have always taken for granted--all will have been **powerfully and radically altered forever**. **No one can be exempted** from its effects. No sector of our lives will remain untouched . . . Nobody who is acquainted with the plans of these three rivals has any doubt but that **only one of them can win**.”* Malachi Martin, *The Keys of This Blood*, p. 16

Over one hundred years earlier Ellen White, commenting on **Revelation 16:13, 14**, had made a similar prediction:

*“**Papists** [the beast from the sea: the Papacy], **Protestants** [the two-horned beast: The United States], and **worldlings** [the secular non-religious] will alike accept the **form of godliness***

*without the power, and they will see in this **union** [ecumenism] a grand movement for the **conversion** of the world [evangelization] and the ushering in of the long-expected millennium [the Omega Point of the Grand Design according to Roman Catholic eschatology].” GC, pp. 588, 589*

## **Social Conservatism**

For over forty years, Roman Catholics and conservative Protestants have worked together on common social causes. This alliance that included organizations such as the Moral Majority and the Christian Coalition condemned abortion, euthanasia, same sex marriage, government prohibitions of religious displays on public property and the Supreme Court banning of prayer in public schools. This common struggle for ‘traditional morality’ brought conservative Protestants and Catholics ever closer together in a common cause. The love affair was exhibited recently when several influential Protestant leaders were invited by Pope Francis to visit the Vatican, among which were Kenneth Copland, Tony Palmer, James Robison, Rick Warren and Joel Osteen. The Pope, who is considered by many to be the foremost moral voice in the world, wowed these Protestant leaders to such an extent that Rick Warren later exclaimed, ‘we are on the same team’.

With conservative Protestantism continually gravitating toward the papacy, the Vatican needed to focus on the third group in the triumvirate—the secular worldlings.

During the decades that Catholics and conservative Protestants were struggling for ‘traditional morality’, their cause resonated strongly with **social conservatives** but not with mainline liberal Protestant churches, the scientific community, liberal politicians, the liberal media and the secular minded populace.

But in just the last ten years, American society has changed drastically. The social issues that once galvanized conservative Protestants and Catholics are no longer in the forefront. Just consider how gay marriage has triumphed in the United States with just a whimper from social conservatives. Even Pope Francis I, has had little to say about gay marriage, abortion, and other social issues choosing to say rather, ‘Who am I to judge?’ In his recent visit to the White House, the United States Congress and the United Nations the Pope was virtually silent on the traditional social issues. Why? There is a carefully laid out Jesuit style strategy behind the change of papal talking points.

Having conservative Protestants increasingly in his camp and with traditional moral issues on the backburner, Francis had to find themes that could win over the worldlings (the secular minded) while not alienating the Protestants who sympathized with him. He needed to spearhead causes that would resonate with those of a secular mentality—with naturalist scientists, world politicians, and especially with the United Nations. After all, Ellen White did predict that worldlings would be the third link in the final union against the government of heaven. Jesuit Pope Francis I found three central themes that could captivate those of a secular mentality without alienating conservative Protestants: Climate



change, family values and world poverty that has led, among other things, to massive emigration and immigration. No one can fault the Pope for stressing the importance of these three talking points. However, what is deeply troubling is the Pope's *motivation* for bringing them to the fore at this time.

## **Climate Change**

Let's take up first the Pope's climate change campaign. In his recent encyclical *Laudato Si'* Pope Francis has claimed that global climate change—formerly called 'global warming'—is due to human abuse of the environment, particularly the market driven and consumer minded capitalist countries. He has claimed that if this problem is not urgently addressed, it could eventually lead to the extinction of the human race. Therefore, he has called upon world leaders to make climate change a top priority by signing and enforcing international environmental protection treaties with penalties for those who do not comply.

This environmental message has hit a chord with powerful politicians. Governor Jerry Brown of California, who was trained in Jesuit schools and presides over the sixth largest economy on the planet was recently invited to the Vatican to participate in a summit on climate change and he couldn't help but offer accolades to Francis for his moral leadership on this issue. And then there is Mayor Bill De Blasio of New York City, the financial capital of the world. At the same meeting, he couldn't help but gush about Francis as the 'strongest moral voice in the world [who] is calling political leaders to action'. Even many influential Protestant leaders have described Pope Francis with the same glowing terms. Times were when Protestants in the United States believed that the Bible was the greatest moral authority in the world, but times have changed!

It is interesting to note the words that Pope Francis I used in his recent encyclical on climate change, terminology that has been used by all popes in the last six decades and goes all the way back to the writings of St. Thomas Aquinas. Francis claimed that:

*"International [climate] negotiations cannot make significant progress due to positions taken by countries which place their **national interests** above the **global common good**" (Encyclical Letter *Laudato Si'* of the Holy Father Francis on the Care of our Common Home, paragraph # 169)*

Did you notice the expressions, 'national interests' and 'global common good'?

**Ban Ki-Moon**, the Secretary General of the United Nations echoed the Pope's very words in a recent news report. The report explained that Ban Ki-Moon called on governments to 'place the **global common good** above **national interests** and to adopt an ambitious, universal climate agreement' at the United Nations climate summit in Paris this December.

And no less a heavyweight than Barack Obama, president of the world's premier superpower, echoed the Pope's words as well:

*"I welcome His Holiness Pope Francis's encyclical, and deeply admire the Pope's decision to make the case—clearly, powerfully, and with the **full moral authority** of his position—for action on global climate change . . . We must also protect the **world's poor**, who have **done the least** to contribute to this looming crisis and stand to lose the most if we fail to avert it.*

*"I look forward to **discussing these issues with Pope Francis** when he visits the **White House** in September. And as we prepare for global climate negotiations in **Paris this December**, it is my hope that **all world leaders**—and all God's children—will reflect on **Pope Francis's call** to come together to care for our **common** home."*

It is significant that President Obama linked the issue of global climate change with the plight of the poor. As we shall soon see, in this he reflects the very strategy of the Jesuit Pope.

Of course, one of the Pope's provisions of the 'save the planet' crusade is making **Sunday** a day for the **environment to rest**, for **families** to strengthen their ties by attending Mass, and to give **the poor** a break from what he perceives as the endless and dehumanizing cycle of capitalist life. The not-too-subtle insertion of Sunday at the end of the encyclical appears innocuous at first sight but as Adventists we know what the papacy's ultimate purpose is in bringing global climate change to the forefront. Regarding Sunday, the encyclical states:

*"On **Sunday**, our participation in the Eucharist has special importance. **Sunday**, like the Jewish Sabbath, is meant to be **a day that heals** our relationships with **God**, with **ourselves**, with **others** and with the **world** . . . Rest opens our eyes to the larger picture and gives us renewed sensitivity to the rights of others. And so **the day of rest**, centered on the Eucharist, sheds it light on the whole week, and motivates us to greater concern for **nature** and the **poor**." (Laudato Si' 237)*

## **Pontifical Academy of Sciences**

On April 15, 2015, some two months before the Pope released his encyclical, the *Pontifical Academy of Sciences and the Pontifical Academy of Social Sciences* had released a statement titled:

*"Climate Change and the Common Good: A Statement of the Problem and the **Demand** for Transformation Solutions".*

This eye-opening document presents a doomsday scenario that is intended to scare the planet into doing something about climate change or run the risk of ceasing to exist! Among other things, the *Declaration* stated:

*"Climate change is a global problem whose solution will depend on our stepping beyond **national affiliations** and **coming together** for the **common good**."*

It further stated:

*“As early as 2100, there will be a non-negligible probability of irreversible and catastrophic climate impacts that may last over thousands of years, raising the existential question of whether civilization as we know it can be extended **beyond this century.**”*

The document states that the increase in temperature has not been seen in **‘tens of millions of years,’** one clear indication among many that the papacy has fully embraced the evolutionary theory of origins.

The Pope’s encyclical (released June 18, 2015), published about two months after the *Declaration*, suggested that the elimination of carbon gases, carpooling, planting trees, turning off unnecessary lights, restricting the use of air conditioning, recycling and boycotting certain products as well as giving the planet a Sunday rest will help solve the problem. The Pope also called for international treaties that would pressure the affluent countries to help poorer ones adapt, including a move to help them switch from fossil fuels to clean energies such as solar power. Thus he stated in *Laudato Si’* 53 that the “establishment of a **legal framework** which can set clear boundaries and ensure the protection of ecosystems has become indispensable.”

Like President Obama, the Pope links the issue of global climate change with the need for the rich nations to help poor ones. In the Pope’s words:

*“The people who have done the least to cause this [climate change] suffer the most. That should, if nothing else, give weight to the argument that the [Northern Hemisphere] **must shift serious resources** to the poor world.”*

## **The Pope Visits the White House**

On September 23, 2015, in the midst of a pomp, circumstance and fanfare such as had never been seen before in the welcome of any head of state, with flags of the United States and the Holy See waving side by side in the wind, President Obama referred to the Pope as ‘the holy father’ and warmly welcomed him to the White House.

After the welcoming ceremony, the Pope had a private audience with President Obama in the White House. The talking points were not a secret. President Obama had already notified the press that two of the main topics to be discussed would be global climate change and world poverty, themes that he passionately shares with the Pope. There is no indication that the Pope addressed the issues of abortion or gay marriage with president Obama for reasons that are quite obvious. The Pope did not want to wear out his welcome from the start by addressing topics on which he and President Obama might disagree!

Although the Pope was virtually mum on the social issues that have galvanized the papacy with conservative Protestants, there is persuasive evidence that he still believes in these

issues but did not want to alienate the secular minded. In good Jesuit fashion he straddled the fence on the controversial issues.

On the one hand the Pope met with and warmly received a long time gay friend and his partner. On the other hand, after the Pope left the United States it was discovered that he had also met secretly at the Vatican Embassy in Washington D. C., with Kim Davis, the Pentecostal county clerk from Kentucky who refused to perform a gay marriage and was jailed for five days. Miss Davis described the encounter:

*"I put my hand out and he reached and he grabbed it, and I hugged him and he hugged me . . . I had tears coming out of my eyes, I'm just a nobody, so it was really humbling to think he would want to meet or know me."*

According to Miss Davis' attorney, Pope Francis gave her rosaries and told her to 'stay strong.' The Pope also met with the Little Sisters of the Poor who have sued president Obama over the federal government's contraception mandate in the Affordable Care Act.

Conservative syndicated columnist George Will was correct when he explained the reason for the change in the papacy's **public** talking points:

*"As the **world spurns** his church's teachings about abortion, contraception, divorce, same-sex marriage and other matters, Francis jauntily makes his church **congruent** with the **secular religion** of 'sustainability.'*

### **Joint Session of Congress**

On September 24, for the first time in the history of the United States, a Roman Catholic Pope addressed a joint session of Congress, whose members are sworn to uphold the Constitution and Bill of Rights. What did the Pope say to Congress? The answer was there for all to see. As expected, he lectured politicians about their duty to serve for 'the common good', the dangers and woes of unrestrained capitalism, the need to address climate change and to redistribute the world's goods among all of God's creatures for the 'common good'.

By the way, how was this address to Congress not an infringement of the separation of church and state? On what constitutional basis can senators and congressmen be encouraged by the Pope to implement the moral teaching of the Roman Catholic papacy? And if the United States follows the counsel of the Pope and signs an international climate agreement in Paris, how would this not be an establishment of the religious and moral teaching of the Roman Catholic papacy, particularly considering that the Pope's encyclical is loaded with religious language?

### **Address to the United Nations**

On September 24, 2015 the Pope presented an address to the United Nations General Assembly where the greatest number of political leaders in the history of the world were

present. Among other things, the speech encouraged world leaders to establish legislation to address the problem of global climate change and world poverty. In fact, in his encyclical the Pope had already suggested that in order for these problems to be solved, ‘models of production and consumption’ and ‘established structures of power that today govern societies’ needed to change profoundly! (Laudato Si’ 5) Once again, Roman Catholic conservative flagship subjects such as gay marriage and abortion were summarily passed over for obvious reasons—no need to alienate those of a secular mentality before they are fully on board!

## **The Pope in Philadelphia**

On September 25-27 the Pope was in Philadelphia, the cradle of the founding documents of the United States—the *Declaration of Independence*, the *Constitution* and the *Bill of Rights*. The choice of location was **not coincidental**. In the **very place** where these founding documents were ratified, stood a man whose kingdom stands in direct and radical conflict with ‘every principle of our Constitution’!

The papacy’s sordid history clearly reveals that its foundation and source of power lies on the union of church and state. It matters not that the papacy is losing droves of members to the Protestant churches in Latin America or that only a sliver of the population in Western Europe regularly attend church. The power of the papacy resides not so much in the number of its members but rather in the maneuvering of its hierarchy in every country of the globe. What many fail to understand is that the word ‘papacy’ does not refer to the Roman Catholic Church as a religious entity. It is rather a code word for a system that unites church and state and whose leader, in union with the Council of Bishops, claims to have the divine right to global jurisdiction, in both religious and secular matters. Little does the world realize what the ultimate aspirations of the papacy really are—global dominion with an iron fist!

Ellen White warned long ago:

*“By the decree of enforcing the institution of the Papacy in violation of the law of God, our nation will disconnect herself fully from righteousness . . . [when] our country shall **repudiate every principle of its Constitution** as a Protestant and Republican government, and shall make provision for the propagation of **papal falsehoods and delusions**, then we may know that the time has come for the marvelous working of Satan, and that the end is near.”* Ellen G. White, *Testimonies for the Church*, volume 5, p. 451

It is estimated that some one million people attended an outdoor mass in Philadelphia on Sunday, September 27. As I watched the scene it reminded me of Daniel 3 where all of the great world leaders, in the midst of much fanfare and music, bowed before the image that king Nebuchadnezzar had set up. Revelation 13:3 describes the parallel scene at the end of time when ‘all the world marveled and followed the beast’ and worshiped his image (Revelation 13:3)

## Paris Climate Change Summit

The next step in the climate change and poverty strategy of the papacy will be when the Pope attends a meeting of world leaders in Paris in December to discuss global climate change and to make specific recommendations to address the problem. The 'save the planet' crusade will provide a perfect forum at that time to encourage the world to set aside Sunday as a means of giving the environment and the oppressed poor a rest and to allow families time to gather together for worship! Will it happen in Paris? No one knows but sooner or later it will happen!

## Redistributing the Wealth

This leads us to look more closely at the Pope's second talking point that has strongly resonated with world leaders. The Pope has continually lectured the capitalist nations of the northern hemisphere to redistribute the wealth of the world evenly in order to abolish poverty for 'the common good'. This ideal is socialism pure and simple, but not a socialism of the atheistic type but rather a religio-political socialism under the 'moral' leadership of the papacy. It is actually a not-too-subtle war on capitalism and the middle class, a call for opulent nations to spread the wealth. The end result, as the Cuban and Venezuelan experiment has shown, will not be that all nations will have equal riches but rather that all will share the same poverty with a small rich elite at the top! This papal strategy of 'spreading the wealth', that began slowly in modern times with Pope Leo XIII's encyclical, *Rerum Novarum* (a Christianized version of Marxism), has accelerated to blinding speed in our time, especially among liberal politicians.

The ideal of a classless society where all share equally in the world's goods is a great idea, but in a selfish world it is an unreachable goal. In fact, Jesus, who said that 'the poor you will always have with you', openly contradicted this socialistic ideal. And Ellen White categorically affirms that poverty tests the faith of the poor and the stewardship of the rich:

*"It was **not the purpose of God** that poverty should ever leave the world. The ranks of society were **never to be equalized**; for the diversity of conditions that characterizes our race is one of the means by which God has designed to **prove and develop character**. Many have urged with **great enthusiasm** that all men should have an **equal share** in the temporal blessings of God; but this was **not the purpose of the Creator** . . . It would be the **greatest misfortune** that has ever befallen mankind if all were to be placed upon an **equality in worldly possessions**." *Counsels on Health*, p. 230*

## The Reason for Ecological Care

The Pope's view on these matters leads us to ask: Is the Pope on target when he encourages humans to care for the environment, to help the poor and to focus on the family unit? Doesn't the Bible itself enjoin us to do such things? Of course it does! We can certainly agree with the Pope concerning the importance of prioritizing these matters.

But the question that should engage us is this: Why should these issues be a primary concern to all of us? Psalm 24:1, 2 provides the answer:

*"The earth **is the LORD's**, and all its fullness, the world and **those who dwell** therein, **for He has founded it** upon the seas, and established it upon the waters."*

The Bible explains that we are to care for the earth and those who dwell therein because they are not ours. The apostle Paul expressed the principle well when he reminded us that we are not our own (1 Corinthians 6:19). Human abuse of the environment and the poor who dwell therein is due to the fact that humanity has **forgotten** that the earth and its inhabitants belong to God, not to us. And what has caused this tragic amnesia? The answer is that humanity has cast aside God's weekly reminder of creation—the seventh day Sabbath. The fourth commandment, spoken by God in the midst of thunder and lightning on Mt. Sinai and written with God's own finger states:

*"**Remember** the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but **the seventh day is the Sabbath** of the LORD your God. In it you shall do no work: you, nor your son, nor your daughter, nor your male servant, nor your female servant, nor your cattle, nor your stranger who is within your gates. For in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, and rested **the seventh day**. Therefore, the LORD **blessed the Sabbath day and hallowed it**." Exodus 20:8-11*

In short, God created our earthly **environment**, its **inhabitants** (human and animal) and the **family unit** in six literal days and then left us a perpetual sign of His creative power by resting on the seventh day. Exodus 20:11, which echoes Genesis 2:2, 3, does not instruct us to rest **one day** in seven or **every** seventh day. The word 'seventh' in Hebrew is preceded by the definite article. It is **THE** seventh day that commemorates creation, not the first day or just any day!

Why should we care for our earthly home? Because God made it in six days and it is His! Why should the sanctity of marriage and the family be safeguarded? Because God created them on the sixth day! Why should we care for the less fortunate by taking them in and sharing 'our' goods with them? Because we all descend from the original pair and all have one blood (Acts 17:26). We are all members of the same family by creation and therefore we must care for one another.

## **The Days of Creation**

And here is another important question: What was the length of each day of creation? The book of Genesis indisputably affirms that each day consisted of 24 hours, just as we experience them today, and there is no evidence whatsoever that the weekly cycle has ever been broken. The Biblical testimony clearly reveals that our earthly home and its inhabitants did not come into existence over millions/billions of years for we are told that God 'spoke and it was done, He commanded and it stood fast' (Psalm 33:9) and that every

day had ‘an evening and a morning’ which would be absurd if the days lasted long periods of time.

After working six **literal** days, God looked upon what He had made and it was very good (Genesis 1:31). God then rested on the **literal** seventh day and made it holy, setting it apart as a perpetual memorial of creation. In this way, the seventh day Sabbath stands or falls on the literalness of the days of creation. If the days of creation were vast periods of time, the Sabbath institution evaporates in a mist.

The fourth commandment makes absolutely no sense if the days of creation lasted millions or billions of years. How could God ask man to work six days and rest on the seventh as He did at creation if the days were not literal just as we know them today? Clearly, the seventh day Sabbath is rooted in a literal creation and is part of God’s original plan for the human race before sin and death. It was neither Jewish nor temporary!

### **Bottom line:**

1. God created the **environment** and we should care for it.
2. God created the family unit of husband, wife and children and we should care for it.
3. God created all **human beings**—we are all of one blood—and we should care for one another.
4. The **sign** that reminds us of all this is the **seventh day** Sabbath.

### **Sin and Redemption**

But the seventh day Sabbath has another dimension. The book of Genesis describes a **literal** fall of **literal** Adam and **literal** Eve in a **literal** and perfect Garden of Eden. The fall infected the entire human race and made it necessary for Jesus, the Creator, to become flesh in order to **restore** the perfect creation that had been lost. Thus a literal creation, a literal fall and a literal redemption are indissolubly linked.

It was on the evening portion of Friday (our Thursday evening) the sixth day that Jesus, when He was about to finish His work of redemption, prayed to His father “I have **finished** the work that you gave me to do” (John 17:4). Later, in the afternoon of the same day, Jesus cried out on the cross ‘it is finished’. Thus the provision for redemption was finished **on the sixth** day just as He finished his creative work on the sixth day.

After crying out, ‘it is finished,’ Jesus was removed from the cross, placed in Joseph’s tomb and then **His body rested** on the Sabbath as a sign of the completion of His works of redemption (Acts 2:25-27). And, while Jesus rested in the tomb on the Sabbath (Acts 2:25-27), His followers outside the tomb ‘rested the Sabbath day according to the commandment’ (Luke 24:56). Thus the seventh day Sabbath, that was originally a sign of creation, now took on an **added dimension** and became a sign of **redemption**. According to the Apostle Paul, redemption is a new creation (2 Corinthians 5:17).



## **Caring for the Needy**

Pope Francis has underlined that Sunday, the first day of the week, should be the day on which to alleviate the suffering of the less fortunate. In contrast, Jesus chose the seventh day Sabbath to especially alleviate the suffering of the less fortunate—the weak, the poor, the maimed, the demon-possessed and the hungry. Why did Jesus choose the seventh-day Sabbath as the special day to help the needy? Was He breaking the Sabbath? No. The fact is that Jesus recognized that all creatures were made in His image and therefore the strong should help the weak. Thus the Sabbath was a sign of solidarity between the ‘haves’ and the ‘have nots’.

Helping the less fortunate on the seventh-day Sabbath was not an innovation by Jesus. Already in the Old Testament God had indicated that the Sabbath was a day to give rest to servants, strangers and even the beasts of burden! (Exodus 20:9, 10; Exodus 23:12) The prophet Isaiah described the Sabbath as a day to ‘loose the bonds of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, to let the oppressed go free’, and to ‘break every yoke’. It was a day to share ‘bread with the hungry’, bring into our house ‘the poor and the outcast,’ to cover the naked, and to not hide ourselves from our own flesh (Isaiah 58:6, 7). Thus what Jesus did on the seventh-day Sabbath was perfectly in line with the Old Testament!

## **The Bible View of the End**

The Bible does not present an evolutionary scenario of the beginning or of the end. It does not teach that through a process of macroevolution the world will get better and better and finally reach the ‘Omega Point’ of the ‘Grand Design’. Neither does it teach that the world will come to an end because of climate change that is caused by a systemic abuse of the ecosystem.

The Bible scenario of end time events on this planet is pessimistic rather than optimistic. At the very end of human history, just before the coming of Jesus, the planet will wax old and unravel at the seams (Isaiah 24:1-6). The world will be as it was in the days of Noah where ‘every intent of the heart of man was only evil continually’. (Genesis 6:5) It will be like Sodom where the men of the city wished to have homosexual relations with the angels (Genesis 19:5; Luke 17:28-30). Men’s hearts will fail them for fear as they see the calamities that are falling upon the earth (Luke 21:26). There will be wars and rumors of wars as nation rises against nation and kingdom against kingdom. There will be famines, pestilences, earthquakes and tumults (Matthew 24:6-8; Luke 21:9). Humans with the form of godliness will be lovers of themselves that will lead to a large catalog of sins (2 Timothy 3:1-5). The world will reach the degenerate condition that is described in Romans 1:18-32. All these things will occur, not because of climate change but because of the iniquity of humanity (Matthew 24:6-8; Isaiah 24:5).

We have been told that ‘Satan works through the elements’ and can cause ‘fierce tornadoes and terrific hailstorms, tempests, floods, cyclones, tidal waves, and earthquakes’ and that

these 'visitations are to become more and **more frequent and disastrous**' (GC 589, 590). The family unit will disintegrate and parents will hate children and children parents (Luke 21:16). The poor will be oppressed by the capitalist overlords and will cry out to God for justice (James 5:1-8; Revelation 18:6-24). Satan's agenda in these ever increasing calamities will be to finally blame the global meltdown on God's faithful people (Matthew 24:9). In fact, Ellen White explains that the final step in the process of the devil's end game will be to 'persuade men that those who serve God are causing these evils' GC pp. 589, 590.

As things get progressively worse and a time of trouble such as never has been seen ensues (Matthew 24:21, 22), the rebellious and disobedient world will be led by their religious and political leaders to believe that by enforcing Sunday observance and by rooting out those who keep the Sabbath, prosperity will return to the earth and there will be an era of peace and harmony. But instead, the Sunday law will bring about a global apostasy that will finally bring ruin upon creation rather than healing (Isaiah 24:6). The blame that Ahab cast upon Elijah for the ecological upheaval in Israel is a microcosm of what will occur on a global scale at the end. With regards to the United States, Ellen White has warned:

*"The people of the United States have been a favored people; but when they **restrict religious liberty, surrender Protestantism, and give countenance to popery**, the measure of their guilt will be full, and "national apostasy" will be registered in the books of heaven. The result of this apostasy will be **national ruin**." RH, May 2, 1893*

The papacy's call for the nations to address climate change, the disintegration of the family and world poverty (including immigration) is merely dealing with a **symptom**. Ellen White explained that the **primary cause** of global climate change and natural disasters is not things such as fossil fuels and cutting down forests but rather the wickedness of man in trampling upon God's Law:

*"The **restraining Spirit of God** is even now being withdrawn from the world. Hurricanes, storms, tempests, fire and flood, disasters by sea and land, follow each other in quick succession. **Science seeks to explain all these**. The signs thickening around us, telling of the near approach of the Son of God, are attributed to **any other than the true cause**. Men cannot discern the sentinel angels restraining the four that they shall not blow **until** the servants of God are sealed; but when God shall bid His angels loose the winds, there will be **such a scene of strife as no pen can picture**." 6T, p. 408*

But the Bible story of the end does not **ultimately** conclude on a pessimistic note. It teaches that history, as we presently know it, will end with the literal, glorious, personal, rapid, second coming of Jesus (Titus 2:11-14; Matthew 24:29, 30) to take His faithful children to heaven for a thousand years (John 14:1-3) during which the earth will return to the condition that it was in before creation week—without form and void and in darkness (Jeremiah 4:23-27).

After the millennium God will then recreate the earth in **six literal days** and rest the **seventh literal day** as He did at the beginning and then God's people will live securely and peacefully in a perfect sinless world forever where Jesus will reign forever and ever. As a weekly commemoration of God's creative power, His people will come to God's throne on the weekly seventh day Sabbath to worship Him:

*"For as the new heavens and the new earth which I will make shall remain before Me," says the LORD, "so shall your descendants and your name remain. And it shall come to pass that from one New Moon to another, and from **one Sabbath to another**, all flesh shall come **to worship** before Me," says the LORD." (Isaiah 66:22, 23)*

## **The Papacy's View of Beginnings**

The papacy's view of beginnings is radically different. According to recent popes (primarily after Pope Pius XII, 1939-1958), life on earth came into existence by a Big Bang and then evolved over millions of years. According to this view, at some point in the evolutionary process God gave a well-developed simian a human soul and this marked the beginning of the evolutionary development of *Homo sapiens*. Roman Catholic Popes and theologians, primarily after the time of Jesuit Paleontologist Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, teach that the story of creation cannot be taken literally; it is a symbolic myth. Thus the Pope in his encyclical refers to the language in the creation story as 'symbolic narrative'. In the papacy's view, **God used evolution** as the mechanism to bring into existence what we see in the world today. Pope John Paul II in a speech to the Pontifical Academy of Sciences in 1996 had already referred to evolution as 'more than a theory':

*"Today, almost half a century after the publication of the encyclical (Pope Pius XII, *Humane Generis*, 1950), **new knowledge** has led to the recognition of the theory of evolution as **more than a hypothesis**. It is indeed remarkable that this theory has been progressively accepted by researchers, following a series of discoveries in various fields of knowledge. The convergence, neither sought nor fabricated, of the results of work that was conducted independently is in itself **a significant argument in favor of the theory**."*

In typical Jesuit fashion, Pope Francis I has also attempted to **reconcile** the creation story with the evolutionary theory by synthesizing them. In this way he has attempted to please, both theologians and naturalist scientists, the secular and the religious. In his own words:

*"The **Big Bang**, which today we hold to be the origin of the world, **does not contradict** the intervention of the divine creator but, rather, **requires it** . . . Evolution in nature is **not inconsistent** with the notion of creation, because **evolution requires the creation** of beings that **evolve**. When we read about Creation in Genesis, we run the risk of imagining **God was a magician**, with a magic wand able to do everything. But that is not so . . . He created human beings and **let them develop** according to the **internal laws** that he gave to each one so they would **reach their fulfillment** . . . "*

The Pope's remark that we should not conceive of God as '*a magician, with a magic wand able to do everything*' is interesting, especially in light of the fact that the papacy teaches that the priest at each Mass is able to transubstantiate the bread and wine into the real body and blood of Jesus instantaneously!! In Roman Catholic theology it does not take millions or billions of years for this to happen, it occurs the instant the priest speaks the words '*hoc est corpus meum*'. In fact, St. Bernardine of Sienna affirmed that in the transubstantiation of the bread the priest can be regarded 'the creator of his Creator because the act 'requires as much power as the creation of the world" *St. Alphonsus de Liguori, Dignity and Duties of the Priest or Selva, pp. 33-34.*

What the Pope fails to describe in his statements is the cruel and disgusting mechanism of evolution. Scientist Frank L. Marsh explained it this way:

*"Evolution presents a **bloody, ruthless struggle** for existence from the very beginning, where there is **much waste** of living substance and many **false starts and blind alleys.**" Here I Stand p. 277*

The process of evolution functions on the basis of natural selection, the survival of the fittest. The strong survive and the weak pass away until all the errors of the evolutionary process are ironed out. Does this sound like a wise Creator? Is this the God who cares for the sparrow (Luke 12:6), dresses the lilies of the field in their beauty and has the hairs of our heads numbered (Matthew 10:30)?

This method of trial and error with suffering and death is a direct attack against the **omnipotence** of God and His wisdom. Are the power of God and His wisdom so limited that He could not get things right **the first time** but rather had to use a method of false starts to weed out the imperfections in the course of hundreds of millions or even billions of years? Evolution also strikes directly against God's **love and goodness**. How could a God of love witness the cruel suffering of His creation over millions of years even before sin entered the universe? What authority would God have to tell us to be kind to the lower life forms and the less fortunate if He Himself showed such a crass disregard for them in the supposed process of evolution?

The Bible describes a literal and **unbroken chain of events**. If one link is broken the entire chain falls apart:

1. Adam and Eve were **literal persons** whom God **created perfect** and placed in the literal Garden of Eden just like the Genesis says
2. Adam and Eve were **literally** tempted by a **literal** serpent and had a **literal fall** into sin
3. Once the virus of sin came in, it infected **every literal descendant** of Adam and Eve
4. Death **came in** upon all men as a **consequence** of sin

5. Because of sin and death, humanity needs **a Redeemer** who will make it possible to bring the **world** back to its original perfect condition where there is no sin and death.

Think about it: If there was death in the world long before sin, then the link between sin and death and redemption is broken—death would not come as a result of sin. Thus the **link** between **creation and redemption** is broken because the purpose of redemption in the Bible is deliverance from death.

Roman Catholic theologian, Karl Schmits-Moorman, was brutally honest when he wrote about the link between a literal fall into sin followed by death and making necessary redemption from sin and death:

*“The notion of the traditional view of redemption as reconciliation and ransom from the consequences of Adam’s fall **is nonsense** for anyone who knows about the evolutionary background to human existence in the modern world.” Creation, Catastrophe and Redemption, p. 112*

Further, he states that because in his view the story of Genesis is not literal, salvation *“cannot mean returning to an original state, but must be conceived as **perfecting through the process of evolution.**”*

The question that begs to be asked is this: In this scenario, how much longer must creation wait before the process of evolution reaches its ‘omega point’, to use the words of Chardin? Will it take millions of years? Billions? How many millions/billions of years must we wait for **lambs and wild beasts** to live together in harmony and for wars to cease? (Isaiah 11:6; 65:25). How much longer must creation cry out in pain for its deliverance? (Romans 8:22, 23) The evolutionary scenario certainly doesn’t offer us much hope for an imminent coming of Jesus to quickly make **all things new!** Will change take place over vast periods of time or will it be ‘in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye?’ (1 Corinthians 15:52) Clearly, our view of how things began will certainly impact our view of how things will end.

## **Evolution and the Sabbath**

It has become common for Roman Catholic theologians (and some Evangelical and Adventist ones as well!!) to refer to the stories of Genesis 1-11 as **non-historical legends**. What would happen with the Sabbath if the story of creation did not literally take place just as Genesis describes it? The answer is inescapable. If the days of creation were not literal twenty-four hour days then the seventh was not either, and the Sabbath as a perpetual weekly memorial of a loving, wise and omnipotent creator, evaporates!

Actually Francis’ concept of beginnings is incongruous with his expressed desire to address climate change, family values and the plight of the poor. Why should we respect creation if it has evolved over millions of years and is still in the process of evolving? If, by a process of natural selection or the survival of the fittest, the strong survive and the weak disappear,

why should we help the underdog? Why should the 'haves' be concerned about those who 'have not?' Is it not the mechanism of evolution that the strong thrive and the weak disappear? Only when we realize that all persons are God's creatures, created originally and literally in the image of God, will we feel the desire to care for them and provide for their needs. Further, if the creation story did not literally take place, how can we argue that families should have a father and a mother rather than two fathers or two mothers?

The papacy claims that climate change is caused by human activity and must be resolved by **mere** human methods such as conservation, recycling, eliminating fossil fuels and international laws and treaties adopted in response to the moral voice of the Roman Catholic papacy. We know that one of those international laws will eventually be mandatory Sunday rest. This law will presumably give a rest to the environment, provide family time for worship, help people connect with their spiritual roots and give the poor a rest from the endless capitalist cycle of work. This, in turn, will supposedly bring in the long expected millennium of peace and prosperity under the moral leadership of the papacy guiding the civil powers of the world. Thus, in this misguided scenario, the planet will have reached the ending point of the 'Grand Design'.

### **The Roman Catholic View of the End**

Can we expect a rapid, supernatural end to human history with an evolutionary model? Impossible! If the original creation was not supernatural, rapid, literal, and perfect could we expect that when God creates a new heaven and a new earth it will be so? The papacy's view of the end is compromised by its view of the beginning. How many more millions of years must we wait for the process of evolution to work out its quirks, wrinkles and flaws?

For Roman Catholic theologians and Popes, the Blessed Hope of the Church is not found in the second coming of Jesus. The goal is for the papacy to take over the kingdoms of this world by joining church and state in order to establish a theocratic kingdom where the church will control and provide moral guidance to the state. I ask: How many times did you hear John Paul II refer to the second coming as the Great Hope of the Church? And how about Francis I? The Reformed scholar Harold Robbins explains the objectives of the papacy:

*"What the Roman Catholic Church-State accomplished on a **small scale** during the Middle Ages is what it desires to achieve on a **global scale** in the coming millennium." John W. Robbins, *Ecclesiastical Megalomania*, p. 187 (1999)*

There is nothing new under the sun! This theocratic experiment has been tried once before during the 1260 years of papal dominion in Europe and failed miserably, bringing about misery, disease, suffering, poverty, civil war, squalor, strife and martyrdom that eventually culminated in the French Revolution. What makes us think that the papacy will do any better on a global scale?

Since the times of St. Augustine, the Roman Catholic Church has taught that the stone that hits the feet of the image in Daniel 2 does not represent the second coming of Jesus; it rather represents the papacy taking over the reins of the secular powers of the world to establish Christ's universal kingdom of peace on earth. It is a sobering fact that on the Mount of Temptation, Satan offered Jesus all the kingdoms of the world and he rejected them but Satan offered the papacy those same kingdoms and the papacy accepted the offer.

What is the papacy's ultimate goal in all of this discussion on climate change, family values and helping the poor? We can tell by the catchwords and expressions the papacy has used to address these issues. The key words and expressions that appear repeatedly are, '**the common good**' (individualism is an enemy to be dreaded), '**solidarity**' (we are all in this together so we must all unite in one ecumenical body: "*We require a new and **universal solidarity**.*" Laudato Si' 14), '**subsidiarity**' (our personal interests are subsidiary to the common good), and '**the common destination of goods**' (property is not personal but belongs to all of humanity according to need). Time and again, Popes, conciliar documents and theologians have used these words and expressions. Let's take a look at a few of them. Pope Benedict XVI in his 2009 encyclical, *Caritas in Veritate* made a chilling suggestion:

*"There is urgent need of a true **world political authority**, as my predecessor Blessed John XXIII indicated some years ago. Such an authority would need to be **regulated by law** to observe consistently the principles of **subsidiarity and solidarity**, to seek to establish the **common good**, and to make a commitment to securing authentic integral human development inspired by the values of charity in truth. Furthermore, such an authority would need to be **universally recognized** and to be vested with the **effective power** to ensure security for all, regard for justice, and respect for rights."*

Something similar is stated in *The Compendium of Catholic Social Doctrine*, section 173:

*"If it is true that everyone is born with the right to use the goods of the earth, it is likewise true that, in order to ensure that this right is exercised in an equitable and orderly fashion, **regulated interventions are necessary**, interventions that are the result of **national and international agreements**, and a **juridical order** that adjudicates and specifies the exercise of this right."*

The question is: Which 'world political authority' was Pope Benedict referring to? Pope Pius XI in his encyclical *Quadragesimo Anno* had already provided the answer:

*"That principle which Leo XIII so clearly established must be laid down at the outset here, namely, that there resides in Us [in the Papacy] the right and duty to pronounce with **supreme authority** upon **social and economic matters**." Pope Pius XI, *Encyclical Quadragesimo Anno*, May 15, 1931, paragraph 41*

The papacy's end time scenario is radically different than the Biblical one. As we have previously seen, the Bible portrays a pessimistic end time scenario. The earth will grow old (Isaiah 24:4, 5), and there will be earthquakes, famines, pestilence, social unrest and wars that will lead to a tribulation such as there has never been (Matthew 24:6-8). The abomination of desolation—a universal Sunday law—will be set up and God's people will be hated and persecuted by all nations. Toward the end of the Great Tribulation the seven last plagues will decimate the earth and second coming of Jesus will reduce the planet to the way it was before creation week—dark, empty, disorderly and uninhabitable (Matthew 24:29, 30; John 14:1-3; Titus 2:13; 2 Peter 3). The angels will then gather up God's elect and take them to heaven (Matthew 24:29, 30; John 14:1-3) for a thousand years after which He will create a New Heavens and a New Earth.

In contrast, the papacy sees a potentially brilliant future for the planet under its 'moral' leadership. In its view, human ingenuity and international laws will be able to solve the planet's problems and the kingdom of God will be established on earth with the papacy serving as the 'moral voice' for the nations of the world. Thus Pope Francis, in his speech to the United Nations stated:

*“Among other things, **human genius**, well applied, will surely help to meet the grave challenges of ecological deterioration and of exclusion [of the poor].”*

The papacy believes that this theocracy will bring about the long awaited millennium of peace and prosperity for all. You see, for the papacy, this world is our permanent home, an idea that contradicts the Bible. According to Scripture we are strangers and pilgrims on this earth. The heavenly city is our home (Hebrews 11:13-16). Our citizenship is in heaven from where we expect Jesus at His second coming (Philippians 3:20). Is it any coincidence that the wicked in Revelation are portrayed as the 'earth dwellers', which are glued to this planet?

The Pope has linked these three causes to captivate the world: Climate change, poverty and family. And he has linked all three with Sunday sacredness. According to the Pope, Capitalism has **enslaved the poor** and deprived them of necessary rest and therefore international governments should draw up laws that would pressure private enterprise to give them a Sunday rest. This has already been done in the Pope's native Argentina and there is great pressure to do the same in the European Union.

The Pope has further argued that Capitalist countries have **spoiled the environment** and the poor countries have suffered as a result and therefore the rich nations should financially compensate the poor ones. And the Pope has indicated that Sunday is a magnificent way to **let the environment rest** by stopping the exploitation of nature for one day of the seven. He has further stated that capitalism treats human beings like machines and deprives them of the opportunity to **gather with their families** for Sunday Mass and spiritual enrichment.



As a biblical foundation for his 'save the planet crusade', the Pope appeals in his encyclical to the pattern of the seven-day weekly cycle, the seven-year Sabbatical year and the forty-nine year of the Jubilee. This is all fine and dandy except for the fact that in all these cycles it was THE SEVENTH in the sequence, **not the first** when the people were to rest, the debts of the poor were to be forgiven, the captives were to be released and the fields left fallow to rest. The Bible clearly indicates that the seventh-day Sabbath is the day to let the environment rest, the day for work to cease so that man can spend time with God and family and a day to give the poor a break from the rat race of work. The Pope's idea is great but he has the wrong day!

On August 19, 2015 at his weekly general audience Pope Francis spoke about the need for days of rest, especially Sunday celebrations of Mass and time with the family, because they are important reminders that every human being is made in the image and likeness of God and is not a 'slave to work.' Even a superficial reader of the Genesis story will discern a serious disconnect between the Pope's counsel and the creation story. How can the Pope appeal for Sunday rest based on the creation story when the story clearly states that the **seventh day** Sabbath is the commemorative day of rest? On what authority could Pope John Paul II boldly state in paragraph 14 of his Pastoral Letter *Dies Domini* that Sunday should be kept because God blessed it and made it holy? In his own words:

*"**Sunday** is the day of rest because it is the day **'blessed'** by God and **'made holy'** by him, **set apart** from the other days to be, among all of them, **'the Lord's Day.'**"*

Where on earth do we find that God blessed the first day, made it holy, and set it apart as the Lord's Day? The answer is nowhere! It is simply a fabrication based on human tradition. Well did Jesus say: 'in vain do they worship me teaching as doctrines the commandments of men.' (Mark 7:7)

According to Francis, in a radio address on August 12, 2015:

*"The obsession with economic profit and technical efficiency puts the human rhythms of life at risk. Moments of rest, **especially on Sunday**, are **sacred** because in them **we find God**. The **Sunday Eucharist** brings to our celebrations every grace of Jesus Christ: his presence, his love and his sacrifice; his forming us into a community, and his way of being with us."*

There is no evidence in Scripture that Jesus established the Sunday Eucharist. Jesus did establish the Lord' Supper, but it was on a **Thursday evening**! If Jesus intended His followers to celebrate the Eucharist on Sunday, why did He institute the Lord's Supper on Thursday evening? Jesus certainly did not celebrate it with His disciples on resurrection Sunday because He had already told them on Thursday evening that he would not drink the cup again with them until He entered His kingdom. If Jesus had wanted his disciples to celebrate the Eucharist on Sunday, He could have celebrated it with His disciples on Sunday

night. After all, His blood had been shed and his body had been broken. But what Jesus ate was part of a honeycomb and a portion of a broiled fish (Luke 24:36-43).

In a somewhat pantheistic conclusion, Francis ends his encyclical by appealing to the Mass, Sunday, the Trinity and the intercession of Mary. There is much truth in the encyclical but it is laced with error. If you drink 100,000 parts of water mixed with one part of cyanide, it will kill you. A great degree of truth laced with a slender part of error can be spiritually deadly.

### **A Deceptive System:**

Why are so many clergymen and politicians in the Christian world wondering after the papal system? The reason is that they have chosen to cast aside the lurid history of the papacy, either because of ignorance or because they think that the system has changed. Many claim that the papacy of today is not the same papacy of the past. But in this they ignore the fact that the papacy itself claims that it does not change. Its motto is *Semper idem*, 'always the same'. But the simple fact is that the papacy cannot any more change its fundamental nature than a person can change his DNA. Persons may change their external appearance but their DNA remains the same. Likewise, the papacy may give itself a facelift but underneath the change of appearance is the same DNA.

Ellen White has well described the deceptive nature of the papacy in GC, p. 571:

*"The papacy is just what prophecy declared that she would be, the apostasy of the latter times. 2 Thessalonians 2:3, 4 It is a part of her policy to assume the character which will best accomplish her purpose; but beneath the variable appearance of the **chameleon** she conceals the invariable venom of the **serpent**."*

A chameleon is a lizard that is able to change colors depending on the environment where it is found. In this way it is able to camouflage itself from its potential enemies. But despite the change in external color, a chameleon is a chameleon still! This is the way in which the papacy operates. On the surface it appears innocuous and charitable but by its very nature, when it ascends to power, it is despotic, totalitarian and rules with an iron fist.

Many have pointed out that Jesuit Pope Francis I has exhibited great love for the destitute and outcasts of society. He washes the feet of prisoners, lives in humble quarters, drives an old beat up car, lays hands on children, hugs lepers, refuses to judge gays, speaks about love and peace and fights for the preservation of the environment. Above all, he defends the rights of the poor. This has led most of the world to have a positive image of the Roman Catholic system.

It is striking that what Francis does is quite similar to what Jesus did while He was on earth! This has led many to conclude that he is the representative of Christ on earth. But it is really a masterful counterfeit. He who claims to be *Vicarius Filii Dei*, or *Vicarius Christi*,

the one who claims to occupy the place of Jesus on earth, is actually the Man of Sin who 'sits in the temple of God [the church] claiming that he is God' (2 Thessalonians 2:3, 4)

It is sobering to realize that Judas Iscariot also manifested a seeming interest in the poor! And Judas, who is called 'the Son of Perdition', wanted a temporal earthly kingdom and had his own colleagues fooled until the very end. Is it any surprise that the papacy is presently able to deceive almost the entire world? Is it any coincidence that 2 Thessalonians 2 refers to the papacy with the same name as Judas, 'the son of perdition'?

And remember that Francis I is a member of the Jesuit Order. Regarding their mode of operation, Ellen White explains:

*"When appearing as members of their order, they wore a **garb of sanctity, visiting prisons and hospitals, ministering to the sick and the poor**, professing to have **renounced the world**, and bearing the sacred name of Jesus, who **went about doing good**. But under this blameless exterior the most criminal and deadly purposes were often **concealed**." P. 235*

The papacy has not yet overtly brought its Sunday agenda openly to the forefront for we are told that:

*"The Sunday movement is now making its way in **darkness**. The leaders are **concealing** the true issue, and many who unite in the movement do not themselves see whither the **undercurrent** is tending. Its professions are **mild and apparently Christian**, but when it shall speak it will reveal the spirit of the dragon." 5T, p. 452*

## **A Providential Name**

In the context of what I have written, the Seventh-day Adventist Church has special relevance for this time. Our very name was providentially chosen for a time such as this! Think of it. Our very name points us to a supernatural beginning and a supernatural end—creation in seven literal days and the second coming of Jesus!

The three angels' message has the same beginning and ending point. The first angel's message commands the entire world to worship the creator (Revelation 14:7) and this directs our attention to the literal seven-day beginning. And immediately after the third message, Jesus is seen sitting on a cloud and coming to the earth pointing us to the second coming (Revelation 14:14). While the first angel's message commands us to worship the Creator, the third warns us not to worship the beast. Thus, worshiping the Creator and worshiping the beast are opposites. If the Sabbath is the sign of the true Creator then the beast must have a day that is a counterfeit sign. Ellen White was correct when she wrote:

*"No name which we can take will be appropriate but that which **accords with our profession** and **expresses our faith** and **marks us a peculiar people**. The name Seventh-day Adventist is a **standing rebuke** to the Protestant world. Here is the line of distinction between the worshipers of God and those who worship the beast and receive his mark." Testimonies for the Church, pp. 223, 224*

And thus she warned:

*“The people need to be aroused to resist the advances of this [the papacy’s] most dangerous foe to civil and religious liberty.” GC, p. 566*

There is no other church in the world that claims that their mission is to reach the world with the three angels’ message. God knew that the remnant church needed to have a name that would distinguish it from the apostate triumvirate. Our very name is a witness and a rebuke to Catholicism, Protestantism and worldlings and stands in contrast to their view of the beginning and the end.

### **Secrets Unsealed’s Task**

From its very inception, Secrets Unsealed has committed itself to preaching the three angels’ message. We believe that our God-given duty is to call the world to worship the Creator and to shun the beast (the papacy), his image (the union of church and state in the United States), and his mark (enforced Sunday observance under the pretense of saving the planet). Pure and simple, this is the reason why we exist! Ellen White has written concerning the reason for our existence as a church:

*“There is **no other work** of so great importance. They are to allow **nothing else** to absorb their attention.” 9T, p. 19*

As we have traveled to different places, many have expressed appreciation that we have kept the three angels’ logo on our exhibition booth, our letterhead, our newsletter and our fund raising letters.

Recently someone asked me somewhat sarcastically: If Secrets Unsealed is all about the three angels’ message why did you waste three years on the women’s ordination issue? My answer was swift: The first angel’s message calls us to worship the creator and to return to His original Genesis plan. The Genesis plan includes the Sabbath, marriage, diet and the roles that God has assigned to men and women in the home and in the church. In fact, Paul directs us back to creation when he refers to the roles of men and women in the home and in the church (1 Timothy 2:12, 13; 1 Corinthians 11:1-11).

Further, the relationship between the Father and the Son in the Godhead is reflected in the relationship between Adam and Eve at creation (Genesis 1:26, 27). Thus the roles that God established at the beginning go to the very heart of the gospel. A son equal with the Father and yet subject to his authority is reflected in the woman equal to the man but subject to his authority!

Ellen White has warned about the dangers that face the United States when it dabbles with the papacy:

*“God’s word has given warning of the impending danger; let this be unheeded, and the Protestant world will learn what the purposes of Rome really are, only when it is too late to*

*escape the snare [the USA is presently nibbling at the entrance to the snare smelling the delicious food inside. A snare is meant to deceive the victim into thinking that it is safe to eat the food]. GC, p. 581*

## **Flaws of Francis's Arguments**

Although the Pope's speeches, tweets and encyclical have much with which we can agree, there are several areas where we would disagree, here are some of them:

First, how can Pope Francis encourage us to care for God's created order when he does not even believe that the creation story is literal?

Second, even if the Pope believed in a literal seven-day creation week (which he does not!) he has chosen the wrong day to commemorate it. The Bible is unambiguously clear that the day to allow the created order to rest is on the seventh-day Sabbath, not on Sunday!

Third, the motivation behind Francis' call for his reforms is open to question. It seems like the ultimate objective of his climate change/family/poverty crusade is global control.

Fourth, even though climate change, family and poverty are directly related to explosive population growth, the Pope simply brushes this factor aside because his church is opposed to birth control. In paragraph 50 of his encyclical he reprimands those who claim that population growth is a significant factor in the crisis the world presently faces:

*"Instead of resolving the problems of the poor and thinking of how the world can be different, some can only propose a reduction in the birth rate . . . demographic growth is fully compatible with an integral and shared development". To blame population growth instead of extreme and selective consumerism on the part of some, is one way of refusing to face the issues."*

Fifth, Pope Francis fails to address the impact of animal husbandry upon the environment. Some scientists esteem that more than 50% of the methane gas in the atmosphere comes from animal dung rather than fossil fuels. Furthermore, animal husbandry not only defiles the air we breathe but also the rivers and the oceans. If Francis is so concerned about the God's creation plan, why not encourage everyone to become a vegan? What good is it to tell everyone in the Vatican to turn off lights and turn down the air conditioners and then be a voracious meat eater that keeps the meat-producers mass-producing animals that will defile the environment?

Finally, Francis lacks a clear concept of how things began and how they will end. The Bible states that things will wax worse and worse and the second coming will be the only solution to the problem. The Pope, however, sees a great future for the planet under the 'moral' leadership of the papacy.

## True Motivations

What then can be done about the serious problems the world faces today? It all boils down to selfishness. Selfish people do not wish to care for the environment or share with the less fortunate. Until the root problem of selfishness is solved, the problems will not disappear. The socialistic ideal of Pope Francis would only work in a world of people who are other-centered.

After the outpouring of the Holy Spirit on the Day of Pentecost 3,000 souls were converted and baptized. In consequence we are told that *'all who believed were **together**, and had **all things in common**, and sold their possessions and goods, and divided them among all, **as anyone had need**'* (Acts 2:44, 45).

Did the church encourage the Roman government to confiscate the goods of the wealthy to help the poor? Did the church encourage the Roman state to expropriate the lands of the rich to give to the poor? No! The common destination of goods for the common good flowed spontaneously from the hearts of converted people. It is not by legislative enactments of the United Nations that change will come in the world but rather by a change of human hearts. Ellen White explains:

*'The government under which Jesus lived was corrupt and oppressive; on every hand were crying abuses—extortion, intolerance, and grinding cruelty. Yet the Saviour attempted no civil reforms. He attacked no national abuses, nor condemned the national enemies. He did not interfere with the authority or administration of those in power. He who was our example kept aloof from earthly governments. Not because He was indifferent to the woes of men, but because the remedy did not lie in merely **human and external measures**. To be efficient, the cure must reach men individually, and **must regenerate the heart.**'* DA, p. 509

What is the cause of climate change and poverty? Francis affirms that it is due, to a great degree, to human abuse of the environment. But is this the real cause or is he merely seeking to heal a symptom rather than the disease? Let's take an analogy. If someone has a stroke someone might ask: What caused that stroke? The most likely answer is that it was caused by high blood pressure. But is that really the cause of the stroke? A better question would be: What caused the high blood pressure? Would it not be stress or the wrong diet?

The real problems that afflict the world are not poverty or climate change or the disintegration of the family. These are merely symptoms of the problem and the problem is human selfishness!

International treaties and laws will not solve the root problem. Uttering nice slogans and giving speeches won't do it either; neither will it do any good to scare people with doomsday scenarios. To truly address the problem, the heart must be changed. And what changes the heart? A view of a wonderful, loving, good, generous Creator! A view of a Creator Who was willing to come down and take our flesh to redeem our failure! And that

God has given us a reminder of his creative and redemptive love—the Sabbath. The God who rested from His creative works on the Sabbath also rested from His redemptive works on the same day. And the observance of the same Sabbath is a prolepsis of the day when God will make a new heaven and a new earth and we will go to bow down before Him on a weekly basis as our marvelous Creator, Redeemer and Restorer.

## **SEVENTH-DAY ADVENTISTS REAFFIRM COMMITMENT TO PRESERVING THE ENVIRONMENT.**

---

*ENCOURAGE ALL MEMBERS TO BE GOOD STEWARDS.*

December 03, 2015 | Silver Spring, Maryland USA | ANN Staff

As world leaders gather in Paris for the 21<sup>st</sup> United Nations Climate Change Conference, the Seventh-day Adventist Church supports and applauds the efforts of these leaders to come to an agreement to stem the deterioration of our earth due to climate change.

The Seventh-day Adventist Church has long supported responsible stewardship of all God has created and reinforces its belief that we all need to be responsible for the resources He has given us. As early as 1995 the Church issued an official statement on the Environment. The statement reads as follows:

“Seventh-day Adventists believe that humankind was created in the image of God, thus representing God as His stewards, to rule the natural environment in a faithful and fruitful way.

Unfortunately, corruption and exploitation have been brought into the management of the human domain of responsibility. Increasingly men and women have been involved in a megalomaniacal destruction of the earth's resources, resulting in widespread suffering, environmental disarray, and the threat of climate change. While scientific research needs to continue, it is clear from the accumulated evidence that the increasing emission of destructive gasses, the depletion of the protective mantle of ozone, the massive destruction of the American forests, and the so-called greenhouse effect, are all threatening the earth's eco-system.

These problems are largely due to human selfishness and the egocentric pursuit of getting more and more through ever-increasing production, unlimited consumption and depletion of nonrenewable resources. The ecological crisis is rooted in humankind's greed and refusal to practice good and faithful stewardship within the divine boundaries of creation.

Seventh-day Adventists advocate a simple, wholesome lifestyle, where people do not step on the treadmill of unbridled consumerism, goods-getting, and production of waste. We call

for respect of creation, restraint in the use of the world's resources, reevaluation of one's needs, and reaffirmation of the dignity of created life.”

We support the efforts of world leaders and all humankind to protect and respect that which has been created by God and entrusted to us.





# SECRETS UNSEALED

*Secrets Unsealed is a non-profit ministry  
Your prayers and financial support are greatly appreciated*

## **SECRETS UNSEALED**

5949 E. Clinton Ave.

Fresno, CA 93727

559-264-2300 (USA & Int'l)

888-REV-1412 (USA Only) | 888-738-1412 (USA Only)

SecretsUnsealed.org | info@secretsunsealed.org



[Youtube.com/secretsunsealed](https://www.youtube.com/secretsunsealed) | [Facebook.com/secretsunsealed](https://www.facebook.com/secretsunsealed)

